

# **This book contains multiple books with multiple titles!**

**According to Islam the statements of the Torah and Bible which do not contradict but rather matches with Quran Hadith and Islam are accurate but other statements which goes against the teachings of Quran Sunnah prophet Muhammad pbuh and Islam are errors made by humans. So those are not from God. Muslims believe prophet Muhammad is mentioned in the OT and NT = Torah and Bible. But Jews and Christians deny it .So they follow the teachings of the Church and synagogue and do not follow what is written in their holy books.**

**Quran is 100% words God. So if anything and whatever would contradict with Holy Quran is not accurate because Quran is 100% accurate and both Shia and Sunni follow the same 1 Arabic Quran.(Faisal Fahim)**

**AHMED DEEDAT**

*WHO  
MOVED  
THE  
STONE?*

## Who Moved the Stone? OPEN ORDER

We grant you an open licence to reproduce or translate\* into any language this booklet as well as every other publication of ours.

You may publish them for sale or for free distribution without any prior permission.

We ask for no royalties or "copyrights".

Wallah! If we had the means we would have flooded the world with our free literature.

It will be appreciated if a few copies of the reproduction be posted to us for our records.

1st Print	30 000 Copies	November 1977
2nd Print	10 000 Copies	April 1980
3rd Print	20 000 Copies	June 1982
4th Print	50 000 Copies	November 1983
5th Print	10 000 Copies	October 1987
6th Print	100 000 Copies	March 1988
7th Print	100 000 Copies	April 1990
8th Print	12 500 Copies	May 1994
9th Print	12 500 Copies	July 1995

\* When translating into any language please obtain a Bible in that language for the Biblical quotations and do not try a free hand translation on your own.

WHO MOVED THE STONE?

"WHO MOVED THE STONE?" or "who ROLLED away the stone?" (Mark 16:3) is a question which has worried theologians for the past two thousand years. Mr Frank Morison, a prominent Bible scholar, tried to nail down this ghost(s) in a book bearing the same title as this tract. Between 1930 and 1975 his book has gone through ELEVEN editions. Through all his 192 pages of conjectures he failed to answer, "WHO MOVED THE STONE?" (Faber and Faber, London).

On page 89 of his book, he writes, "We are left, therefore, with the problem of the vacant tomb unsolved" and proceeds to advance SIX hypotheses, very nearly knocking the proverbial nail on the head with his FIRST supposition, i.e. "THAT JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA SECRETLY REMOVED THE BODY TO A MORE SUITABLE RESTING PLACE". After confessing that this Joseph "might himself have removed it for private reasons to another place, is one which seems to carry considerable weight" (*italics mine*), he hurriedly disposes this hypothesis on the flimsiest ground.

As you read on, dear reader, I trust that you as well as Mr Morison will have a satisfactory answer to this problem.

Let us begin at the beginning of this problem.

It was Sunday morning, according to the Bible, the first day of the week, when Mary Magdalene went to the tomb of Jesus (John 20:1). The first question that bedevils the mind is:-

Q1: WHY DID SHE GO TO THE TOMB?

Ans: The Gospel writers say that she went to "anoint" him. The Hebrew word for anoint is "masaha", which means - 'to rub', 'to massage', 'to anoint'. The word and its meaning are the same in the Arabic language also. From this root word "masaha" we get the Arabic word "MASEEH" and the Hebrew "MESSIAH" both meaning the same thing - "the anointed one" which is translated into Greek as "Christos" from which we derive the word Christ.

Q2: DO JEWS MASSAGE DEAD BODIES AFTER THREE DAYS?

Ans: "No!"

Q3: DO MUSLIMS MASSAGE DEAD BODIES AFTER THREE DAYS?

Ans: "No!"

Q4: DO CHRISTIANS MASSAGE DEAD BODIES AFTER THREE DAYS?

Ans: "No!"

It is common knowledge that within three hours after death, rigor mortis sets in - the breaking up of the body cells - the hardening of

the body. In three days the corpse starts rotting from within. If we massage such a rotting body, it will fall to pieces.

Q5: DOES IT MAKE SENSE THAT MARY MAGDALENE WANTS TO MASSAGE A ROTTING DEAD BODY AFTER THREE DAYS?

Ans: It makes no sense, unless we confess that she was looking for a L-I-V-E Jesus, not a dead one. You will recognise this fact for yourself on analysing her reactions towards Jesus when she eventually saw through his disguise. You see, she had seen signs of life in that limp body when it was taken down from the cross. She was about the only woman beside Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus who had given the final (?) rites to the body of Jesus. This man NICODEMUS, somehow, has been deliberately blotted out by the synoptists. The Gospel writers of Matthew, Mark and Luke are totally ignorant of this devoted and self-sacrificing disciple of Jesus. His name is NOT even mentioned in the first three Gospels in ANY context. "It is difficult to avoid concluding that the omission in the synoptic tradition of the mysterious disciple was intentional", says Dr Hugh J Schonfield, one of the world's leading Biblical scholars.

When Mary of Magdala reached the tomb, she found that the stone had already been rolled

away, and the winding sheets bundled on the ledge within the sepulchre. The question now arises:

**Q6: WHY WAS THE STONE REMOVED, AND WHY WERE THE WINDING SHEETS FOUND UNWOUND?**

Ans: Because it would be impossible for any tangible material body to come out with the stone blocking the opening, and the same physical body could not walk out with the winding sheets encasing the body. For a resurrected body, it would have been unnecessary to remove the stone or to unwind the winding sheets. Probably having the resurrected, immortalised body, or the spirit of man in mind, a poet said: "STONE WALLS DO NOT A PRISON MAKE, NOR IRON BARS A CAGE".

While the poor, dejected Mary was investigating the sepulchre, Jesus was watching her from the vicinity. Not from heaven, but from terra firma, from mother earth. We must remember that this tomb was a privately owned property belonging to his "secret disciple" Joseph of Arimathea - who was a very rich, influential Jew, and one who could afford to have carved a big roomy chamber, out of a rock which according to Jim Bishop (a Christian scholar of note) was 5 feet wide by 7 feet high by 15 feet deep with a ledge or ledges inside. Around this

tomb was this "secret disciple's" own vegetable garden. It is hardly expected of any Jew or Gentile to grow vegetables 5 miles out of town for other peoples' sheep and goats to graze upon! Surely, this husbandman must have provided his labourers with the gardeners' quarters to protect his own interests, and perhaps he also had his 'country home' around the place where he could relax with his family during the weekends.

Jesus was watching his lady disciple out of whom he had cast out seven devils. He comes up to her. He finds her crying. He questions her, "Woman, why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou?" (John 20:15).

**Q7: DOSEN'T HE KNOW? WHY DOES HE ASK SUCH A SEEMINGLY SILLY QUESTION?**

Ans: He knew why she was crying, and he knew who she was looking for and he was not asking any silly questions. Actually, he was pulling her leg, figuratively of course! He knew that she was looking for him in the tomb, and not finding him there, was crying in her disappointment. He also knew that she would not be able to see through his disguise. Though he had been through an ordeal, he still had that sense of humour to ask her, "Woman, why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou?" "SHE SUPPOSING HIM TO BE THE GARDENER, SAITH UNTO HIM" (John 20:15).



Q8: WHY DID SHE THINK THAT HE (JESUS) WAS A GARDENER? DO RESURRECTED BODIES LOOK LIKE GARDENERS?

Ans: Can you imagine the scene on the RESURRECTION DAY, that you, dear reader, will be made to look like a "gardener" and your father-in-law will also be transformed into a "gardener" and your son-in-law will also be made to look like a "gardener" and your beloved wife will be left in confusion to find her husband! Does this make sense? No! The resurrected body will be you, yourself! Everyone will readily recognise you. It will be the REAL you and not your camouflage. Never mind at what age or under what condition one dies, everyone will know one another. Then why did Mary think that Jesus was a "gardener"?

Ans: Because Jesus was DISGUISED as a gardener.

Q9: WHY WAS HE DISGUISED AS A GARDENER?

Ans: Because he was AFRAID of the Jews.

Q10: WHY WAS HE AFRAID OF THE JEWS?

Ans: Because he had not DIED and was not RESURRECTED. If he had DIED and if he was RESURRECTED, he would not have any reason to be AFRAID. Why? Because the resurrected body can't DIE twice. Who says so? The Bible says so: ". . . it is ordained unto all men ONCE to die, and after that the judgement." -

(Hebrew 9:27). The idea that the resurrected person cannot die TWICE is further supported by what Jesus Christ had most authoritatively pronounced regarding the resurrection.

The learned men of the Jews came to Jesus with a poser, a riddle. They said that there was a woman who had seven husbands in turn. "In the resurrection therefore whose wife shall she be of the seven? For they all had her." (Matthew 22:28). Jesus could have brushed off the Jews with some curt retort because here was another of their tricks to catch him out. Instead, he has enshrined for us the clearest statement in the Bible regarding the resurrected soul. He said, "Neither shall they die any more, for they are equal unto the angels, and the children of God, for such are the children of the resurrection" (Luke 20:36).

"NEITHER SHALL THEY DIE ANYMORE" - that they will be immortalised\*. They will not be subjected to death a SECOND time. No more hunger and thirst. No more fatigue or physical dangers. Because the resurrected body will be 'angelised' - spiritualised - they will become like spirit creatures, they will become SPIRITS.

Mary Magdalene was not looking for a spirit. She, taking the disguised Jesus to be a

\* For further enlightenment on this aspect please read "RESURRECTION OR RESUSCITATION?" available free from the "Centre".

gardener, says, "Sir, if you have taken HIM hence, tell me where have you LAID him . . ." (John 20:15). Note, she is searching for HIM and not IT - a dead body. Further, she wants to know as to where they had LAID him, not as to where they had BURIED him? So that, "I might take HIM away." (John 20:15).

Q11: WHAT DOES SHE WANT TO DO WITH A DECOMPOSING CORPSE?

Ans: She wants to put it under her bed? Absurd! She wants to embalm him? Nonsense! She wants to bury him? If so, who dug the grave? No! No! 'she wants to take him away'.

Q12: HOW CAN SHE ALONE CARRY A DEAD BODY?

Ans: She is not thinking of a dead, rotting corpse. She is looking for the L-I-V-E Jesus. She is not a "super-woman" of the American comics, who could with ease carry a corpse of at least a hundred and sixty pounds, wrapped with another 'hundred pounds weight of aloes and myrrh' (John 19:39) making a neat bundle of 260 pounds. This frail Jewess was not expected to carry this decaying parcel like a bundle of straws. Even if she could carry it, how was she to bury it ALONE? She might have had to dump it in some hole like a heap of rubbish. But dumping and burying are poles apart.

She was looking for a Jesus who was very

much alive, a Jesus she could hold by the hand and take him home for rest, relaxation and recuperation, "so that, I might take him away".

The joke that Jesus was playing on this woman had gone too far. During the whole course of the dialogue between Mary and Jesus, she did not suspect in the least that she was actually talking to her Master. She had failed to see through the gardener's DISGUISE. Jesus must have been laughing under his breath. He could suppress it no longer. "M-A-R-Y!" he uttered. Only one word, but it was enough. This one word "Mary!" did, all that the exchange of words failed to do. It enabled Mary to recognise Jesus. Everyone has his own unique and peculiar way of calling his or her near one or dear one. It was not the mere sound of the name, but the way he must have deliberately intoned it that made Mary to respond - "Master!, Master!" She lunged forward to grab her spiritual master, to pay her respects and to give reverence.

The Muslims, when they meet their learned men, or respected elders or saintly people, hold such person's right hand in the palm of their own hands and fondly kiss the back of the respected one's hand. The Frenchman kisses the cheeks to show respect and the Arab kisses the neck. Mary the Jewess would have done what any Muslim might have done under similar circumstances.

When Mary makes the effort, Jesus shies back

a step or two, saying, "TOUCH me not," (John 20:17).

Q13: I SAY - WHY NOT?

Is he a current of electricity or a dynamo, that if she touches him, she will get electrocuted?

Ans: No! Don't touch me, because it will hurt. Though he had given no indication of any physical pain or injury he might have suffered, it would be excruciatingly painful if he now allowed her to touch him with love and affection. Can another reason be advanced for this "Touch me not"? Jesus continues, "For I am not yet ASCENDED unto my Father;" (John 20:17).

Q14: IS SHE BLIND?

Could she not see that the man she was talking to all the time was standing before her? Does it make any sense when he (Jesus) says that - 'HE IS NOT GONE UP', when he is DOWN right here?

Ans: What Jesus is telling Mary in so many different words is that 'HE IS NOT RESURRECTED FROM THE DEAD', for in the colloquial language and idiom of the Jew, the expression, "For I am not yet ASCENDED unto my Father" means - 'I AM NOT DEAD YET'.

It is a sad fact of history that though the Christian Bible is an Eastern Book, full of eastern metaphors and similes, like - "Let the dead

bury their dead" (Matthew 8:22) or "Seeing they see not and hearing they hear not" (Matthew 13:13), all the commentators of the Bible have come from the West. The Western World is made to see a Jewish Book, written by the Jews for a Jewish audience, through Greek and Western glasses. An Eastern book ought to be read as an Easterner would read and understand it. All the problems would then be solved.

The difficulty lies not only in apprehending the correct meaning of the Jewish expressions, but Christendom is so programmed that Christians of every race and language group are made to understand the passages differently or opposite to their literal connotations. I will give examples of this anomaly in Lesson No. 3 under the heading "RESURRECTION OR RESUSCITATION?" In that booklet, I will also endeavour to answer the problem as to why one woman - Mary Magdalene - was not AFRAID when she recognised the DISGUISED Jesus yet ten brave men (the Disciples of Jesus) were PETRIFIED on recognising their Master in that 'upper-room', after his alleged passion.

#### SIMPLE ANSWER

As to the original question of this pamphlet - "WHO MOVED THE STONE?" the answer is so simple and so natural that one is at a loss to understand how this problem has eluded

Christian scholars of the highest eminence.

The answer to the question, "WHO ROLLED THE STONE INTO PLACE?" is the answer to the title of this tract. ". . . and HE (Joseph of Arimathea) rolled a stone against the door of the tomb" (Mark 15:46). St. Mark is here supported word by word by St. Matthew who in Chapter 27 and verse 60 states that ". . . HE (Joseph of Arimathea) rolled a great stone to the door of the tomb and departed". If this ONE man alone could move the stone into place as witnessed by Matthew and Mark, then let me be more generous in adding the name of the other faithful 'secret disciple' - NICODEMUS. It was JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA and NICODEMUS, the two stalwarts who did not leave the Master in the lurch when he was most in need. These two had given to Jesus a Jewish burial (?) bath, and wound the sheets with the "aloes and myrrh", and temporarily moved the stone into place, if at all; they were the same two real friends who REMOVED THE STONE, and took their shocked Master soon after dark, that same Friday night to a more congenial place in the immediate vicinity for treatment. Reasoning even on the Biblical narration, Jesus was A-L-I-V-E! He had escaped death by the skin of his teeth, as he himself had foretold. Write for your FREE copy of "WHAT WAS THE SIGN OF JONAH?", as well as for a detailed account of the alleged "crucifixion",

under the heading, "CHRIST CRUCIFIED - Hoax or History?" Those of you who have already mastered Lesson No. 1 from the booklet "WHAT WAS THE SIGN OF JONAH?" will now do well to memorise the following verses for your Lesson No. 2.

"Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou hast taken him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

"Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

"Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my father: . . . ."

(John 20:15-17)

#### APPENDIX

The Muslim reader of this and other allied tracts may be tempted to ask, "Do we Muslims need to use the Bible to get at the Truth of God?"

The answer is an emphatic NO!

The Muslim position is very clear:

- 1) Sin is not inherited.
- 2) The "Trinity" is a fabrication.
- 3) Jesus is not God.
- 4) God does not beget sons or daughters.
- 5) Christ was neither killed nor crucified.



These doctrines are expounded in the most unambiguous terms in the Holy Qur'an. Why, then, must the Muslim adduce the Christian Scriptures to prove his point of view? This is because we are dealing with a mind which has been programmed from childhood to accept dogmas without reasoning. Today, the Christian is groping for the Truth. He is asking questions which he did not dare to ask a few centuries ago. Questions like:-

- a) IS JESUS GOD?
- b) WHAT WAS THE SIGN OF JONAH?
- c) IS THE BIBLE GOD'S WORD?
- d) WHO MOVED THE STONE?
- e) WAS JESUS CHRIST AN IMPOSTER? (A Christian Magazine "Plain Truth" - April '77), etc., etc.

It is the duty of the Muslim to help his Christian brethren, "The Ahle-Kitab", i.e. "THE PEOPLE OF THE BOOK" - as they are respectfully addressed in the pages of the Holy Qur'an, in freeing them from the shackles that bind their thinking for the past two thousand years. It instructs us:

۱۱۰- كُنْتُمْ خَيْرَ أُمَّةٍ أُخْرِجَتْ لِلنَّاسِ  
تَأْمُرُونَ بِالْمَعْرُوفِ وَتَنْهَوْنَ عَنِ الْمُنْكَرِ  
وَتُؤْمِنُونَ بِاللَّهِ

وَلَوْ أَمَّنْ أَهْلُ الْكِتَابِ لَكَانَ خَيْرًا لَهُمْ  
مِنْهُمْ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ  
وَأَكْثَرُهُمُ الْفَاسِقُونَ ۝

110. Ye are the best  
Of Peoples, evolved  
For mankind,  
Enjoining what is right,  
Forbidding what is wrong,  
And believing in God,

If only the People of the Book  
Had faith, it were best  
For them: among them  
Are some who have faith,  
But most of them  
Are perverted transgressors.

Holy Qur'an 3:110

In this treatise and others, we have used the Christians' own book of authority, the BIBLE, and his own logic, to refute his claims. This is the system which Allah\* Subha nahu Wa Ta'aala uses when reasoning with His creatures.

The Holy Qur'an commands the Muslim to

---

\*Allah: The proper noun for God Almighty in the Semitic languages. Write for your copy of the book "WHAT IS HIS NAME?" - available free on request from the "Centre".

demand from the Jews and the Christians their authority for their fanciful claims that "SALVATION" is exclusively their right.

هَاتُوا بُرْهَانَكُمْ إِن كُنْتُمْ صَادِقِينَ ۝

It says: "Produce your proof if ye are truthful."

Holy Qur'an 2:111

The Christian has already reproduced the Bible in over a thousand languages and broadcasts it to the four corners of the globe, terrifying the nations of the world to accept the "BLOOD OF THE LAMB", that Christ died for the sins of mankind, that he (Jesus) is the only saviour. All this is against the clear evidence of his own Holy Book.

We must free him (the Christian) from his illusions, and there is no better way than to use his own evidence, his own logic, to refute his claims.

We give below an excerpt from

Who Moved the Stone?

**THE  
FUTURE WORLD  
CONSTITUTION**

and what it says about:

**The Origin of Man**

O mankind! ①

We created you ②

From a single (pair)

Of a male and a female.

And made you into

Nations and tribes. ③

That ye may recognise

One another

(Not that ye may

Despise each other).

Verily, the most

Honoured of you

In the sight of God

Is (he who is) the

Best in conduct. ④

Holy Quran 16:1-14

## Was Jesus Sent to be Crucified

{by Ahmed Deedat}

One of the fundamental beliefs of Christianity is that Jesus had died and allowed for the shedding of his blood for the sake of granting forgiveness to people. In other words Jesus had died on the cross as a sacrifice for our sins. Let us investigate this topic from the Bible, and find out whether Jesus was sent to be crucified or that he was crucified.

Willingness of Jesus Christ to Die for Our Sins

1 Peter and the two sons of Zebedee were with Jesus Christ before the elders of the people and the chief priests came to take him to crucify him. Jesus at this point talked to Peter and the two sons of Zebedee as in Matthew 26:38 "Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me." Then Jesus went a little further way from them and prayed to God as in Matthew 26:39 "And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt." It is very clear from the above verse in Matthew 26:39 that Jesus had no intention of dying. In this verse it is shown that Jesus was praying strongly (Matthew mentions that Jesus repeated these prayer three time) to have this death removed from him. Had Jesus Christ been sent to be crucified he would not have hesitated to be killed at all. When I relate this to my Christian brothers, they tell me that this hesitation comes from the flesh side of him (in other words he was tempted), and that his soul which is godly does not have this hesitation at all. When we look at Matthew 26:38 we see that Jesus is contradicting this idea by saying, "My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death." (Matthew 26:38). He himself says that it really his soul that is hesitating and not his body. These are Jesus' own words.

God Answered the prayers of Jesus Christ

2 After Jesus made the above mentioned prayer he was answered by God according to Hebrews 5:7 "Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared." These words clearly show that when Jesus was praying strongly to God, God would grant him his request. The word "heard in that he feared" (Hebrews 5:7) mean that God granted him what he requested. So the above verse shows that when Jesus asked of God to "let this cup pass .from" (Matthew 26:39) him, God respond to his prayer and saved him from death or crucifixion.

The Post Crucifixion Propheesied Events never happened

3 When the people were asking Jesus Christ if he was going to show them a sign, He replied by saying that the only sign that they should expect is the sign of Jonas. Jesus also made sure to specify what exactly this sign was. The details are shown in the following verses

Matthew 12:38 Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee

Matthew 12:39 But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas

Matthew 12:40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth

Jesus here emphasized what will happen to him by specifically saying that he will be like Jonas in terms of the number of days and nights he will be in the heart of the earth, " For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth." (Matthew 12:40). Now let us see if this prophecy came to pass

Jesus was crucified on Friday, this is certainly known among all Christians, and that is the reason for calling that Friday by "Good Friday". Jesus was buried on Friday night. Now let us start counting

Friday night Jesus was buried. This is night number 1.1

Saturday day Jesus was still in the grave. This is day number 1.2

Saturday night Jesus was still in the grave. This is night number 2.3

Mary Magdalene, very early in the morning before sun rise and after the Sabbath (Saturday), went to the see Jesus, and he was not there. The following verses relate this event

Mark 16:1 And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him

Mark 16:2 And very early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun

Mark 16:3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre

Mark 16:4 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great

Mark 16:5 And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted

Mark 16:6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him

The number of days and nights that Jesus had spent in the heart of the earth is 1 day and 2 nights. This clearly challenges what Jesus had prophesied. When I tell this to my Christian brothers, some of them responded by saying that what Jesus wanted to really say was that he will be gone for a while, and not that he will be in the heart of the earth for three days and three nights. This is clearly not the case. Had Jesus meant that, he would have said it, but it is clear that he wanted the people to know that this was a sign (miracle) and that it will be like Joans' sign, and that he will be in the heart of the earth for three days and three nights. These were his own words

Why Would Jesus Have to Die

on the Cross According to the Christian doctrine, Jesus died on the cross as a sacrifice for our sins. The idea here is that every human is born with sins, or that all humans will sin, and therefore it was necessary that someone as pure as Jesus would be the crucified to nullify these sins. The question is; why does anyone have to die for our sins when God, the All-Merciful, could as easily give us forgiveness if we ask for it? Isn't God the one who makes the rules? Why does He have to make someone suffer for our sins or for someone else's sins? Isn't that unjust of Him? According to the Bible the way to redemption could be obtained without the need for sacrifice. The Bible says Ezekiel 18:20 The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him Ezekiel 18:21 But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die Clearly the soul that sins shall die. Clearly that no one shall bear the iniquity (sins) of others. So Jesus cannot bear the sins of others either. If one is righteous then it shall be upon him, and if one commits a sin then it shall be upon him, and not on Jesus. Finally, the way to repentance and forgiveness is by turning from all sins, doing what is right, and keeping the commandments Also we see the same message given by Solomon. He says in the book of Ecclesiastes 12:13 "Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man." This is the whole message, and this is the conclusion of messages. It is that one should fear God, and keep the commandments, and nothing else Again in 2 Chronicles 7:14 "If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land." This clearly states that to seek forgiveness from God we have to humble ourselves, pray and seek God, and turn away from wickedness Finally the Bible says in Samuel 15:22 "And Samuel said, Hath the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the LORD? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams." This clearly states that obeying God is better than sacrifice whether this sacrifice is of objects, animals, or humans, or any other type. What God likes is for us to heed and obey Him, and if that is what God likes then it is not of Him to come later and change his mind, and change his ways. God says in the Holy Quran, "Verily God is All-Knowing, All-Wise" (Ch 9: Vr 28 Now that we have seen this, Christians say that Jesus has changed some of these laws. Let's look at what Jesus says. In Matthew 5:17 "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil." Jesus clearly states that he was not sent to abolish the law, the law of which had already existed. So what is mentioned above cannot be discounted. Then Jesus continues to say, in Matthew 5:18 and 19 "For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven." Jesus here states that not even as much as a dot (tittle) shall not pass from the law. Every thing is kept the way it was. That is why the previous laws cannot be removed or discarded, and those who willfully change these laws "he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven.

# The Torah

## The Bible The Quran and Science

### PART-1A

#### **The Quran and Modern Science**

On Faith, The Holy Quran | by Dr. Maurice Bucaille (Edited by Dr. A. A. Bilal Philips)

#### **EDITOR'S FOREWORD**

This booklet by Dr. Maurice Bucaille has been in circulation for the past nineteen years and has been a very effective tool in presenting Islam to non-Muslims as well as introducing Muslims to aspects of the scientific miracle of the Qur'an. It is based on a transcription of a lecture given by Dr. Bucaille in French. In this reprint, I decided to improve its presentation by simplifying the language and editing the text from an oral format to a pamphlet format. There were also passing references made by the author to material in his book, The Bible, the Qur'an and Science, which needed explanation. I took the liberty of including explanatory portions from his book where more detail was necessary. A few footnotes were also added for clarity and a hadeeth which the author mentioned was replaced due to its inauthenticity. There were also some corrections made to the historical material on the compilation of the Qur'an.

It is my hope that these slight improvements will make this excellent work even more effective in presenting the final revelation of God to mankind.

Dr. Abu Ameenah Bilal Philips

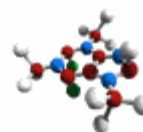
Director/Islamic Information Center Dubai

U.A.E.

May, 1995

#### **INTRODUCTION**

On the 9th of November, 1976, an unusual lecture was given at the French Academy of Medicine. Its title was "Physiological and Embryological data in the Qur'an". I presented the study based on the existence of certain statements concerning physiology and reproduction in the Qur'an. My reason for presenting this lecture was because it is impossible to explain how a text produced in the seventh century could have contained ideas that have only been discovered in modern times.



For the first time, I spoke to members of a learned medical society on subjects whose basic concepts they all knew well, but I could, just as easily, have pointed out statements of a scientific nature contained in the Qur'an and other subjects to specialists from other disciplines. Astronomers, zoologists, geologists and specialists in the history of the earth would all have been struck, just as forcibly as medical doctors, by the presence in the Qur'an of highly accurate reflections on natural phenomena. These reflections are particularly astonishing

when we consider the history of science, and can only lead us to the conclusion that they are a challenge to human explanation.

There is no human work in existence that contains statements as far beyond the level of knowledge of its time as the Qur'an. Scientific opinions comparable to those in the Qur'an are the result of modern knowledge. In the commentaries to translations of the Qur'an that have appeared in European languages, I have only been able to find scattered and vague references to them. Nor do commentators writing in Arabic provide a complete study of the aspects of the Qur'an that deal with scientific matters. This is why the idea of a comprehensive study of the problem appealed to me. In addition to this, a comparative study of similar data contained in the Bible (Old Testament and Gospels) seemed desirable. Thus, a research project was developed from the comparison of certain passages in the Holy Scriptures of each monotheistic religion with modern scientific knowledge. The project resulted in the publication of a book entitled, *The Bible, the Qur'an and Science*. The first French edition appeared in May 1976. English and Arabic editions have since been published.

### **RELIGION AND SCIENCE**

There is, perhaps, no better illustration of the close links between Islam and science than the Prophet Muhammad's often-quoted statements:

“Seeking knowledge is compulsory on every Muslim.”

“wisdom is the lost property of the believer.”

“whoever follows a path seeking knowledge, Allah will make his path to paradise easy.”

These statements and many others are veritable invitations to humanity to enrich their knowledge from all sources. It comes as no surprise, therefore, to learn that in Islam religion and science have always been considered as twin sisters and that today, at a time when science has taken such great strides, they still continue to be associated. Nor is it a surprise to learn that certain scientific data are used for the better understanding of the Qur'anic text. What is more, in a century where, for many people, scientific truth has dealt a deathblow to religious belief, it is precisely the discoveries of science that, in an objective examination of the Islamic scripture, have highlighted the supernatural nature of revelation and the authenticity of the religion which it taught.

When all is said and done, scientific knowledge seems, in spite of what many people may say or think, to be highly conducive to reflection on the existence of God. Once we begin to ask ourselves, in an unbiased or unprejudiced way, about the metaphysical lessons to be derived

from some of today's knowledge, (for example our evolving knowledge of the smallest components of matter or the questions surrounding the origin of life within inanimate matter), we indeed discover many reasons for thinking about God. When we think about the remarkable organization presiding over the birth and maintenance of life, it becomes clear that the likelihood of it being the result of chance lessens quite considerably.

As our knowledge of science in the various fields expands, certain concepts must seem increasingly unacceptable. For example, the idea enthusiastically expressed by the recent French winner of the Nobel prize for medicine, that living matter was self-created from simple chemical elements due to chance circumstances. Then from this point it is claimed that living organisms evolved, leading to the remarkably complex being called man. To me, it would seem that the scientific advancements made in understand the fantastic complexity of higher beings provides stronger arguments in favor of the opposite theory: that the existence of an extraordinarily

methodical organization presiding over the remarkable arrangement of the phenomena of life necessitates the existence of a Creator.

In many parts of the Book, the Qur'an, encourages this kind of general reflection but also contains infinitely more precise data which are directly related to facts discovered by modern science. It is precisely this data which exercise a magnetic attraction for today's scientists.

### **The Qur'an and Science**

For many centuries, humankind was unable to study certain data contained in the verses of the Qur'an because they did not possess sufficient scientific means. It is only today that numerous verses of the Qur'an dealing with natural phenomena have become comprehensible. A reading of old commentaries on the Qur'an, however knowledgeable their authors may have been in their day, bears solemn witness to a total inability to grasp the depth of meaning in such verses. I could even go so far as to say that, in the 20th century, with its compartmentalization of ever-increasing knowledge, it is still not easy for the average scientist to understand everything he reads in the Qur'an on such subjects, without having recourse to specialized research. This means that to understand all such verses of the Qur'an, one is nowadays required to have an absolutely encyclopedic knowledge embracing many scientific disciplines.

I should like to stress, that I use the word science to mean knowledge which has been soundly established. It does not include the theories which, for a time, help to explain a phenomenon or a series of phenomena, only to be abandoned later on in favor of other explanations. These newer explanations have become more plausible thanks to



scientific progress. I only intend to deal with comparisons between statements in the Qur'an and scientific knowledge which are not likely to be subject to further discussion. Wherever I introduce scientific facts which are not yet 100% established, I will make it quite clear.

There are also some very rare examples of statements in the Qur'an which have not, as yet, been confirmed by modern science. I shall refer to these by pointing out that all the evidence available today leads scientists to regard them as being highly probable. An example of this is the statement in the Qur'an that life has an aquatic origin ( "And I created every living thing out of water" Qur'an, 21:30 ).

These scientific considerations should not, however, make us forget that the Qur'an remains a religious book par excellence and that it cannot be expected to have a scientific purpose per se. In the Qur'an, whenever humans are invited to reflect upon the wonders of creation and the numerous natural phenomena, they can easily see that the obvious intention is to stress Divine Omnipotence. The fact that, in these reflections, we can find allusions to data connected with scientific knowledge is surely another of God's gifts whose value must shine out in an age where scientifically based atheism seeks to gain control of society at the expense of the belief in God. But the Qur'an does not need unusual characteristics like this to make its supernatural nature felt. Scientific statements such as these are only one specific aspect of the Islamic revelation which the Bible does not share.

Throughout my research I have constantly tried to remain totally objective. I believe I have succeeded in approaching the study of the Qur'an with the same objectivity that a doctor has when opening a file on a patient. In other words, only by carefully analyzing all the symptoms can one arrive at an accurate diagnosis. I must admit that it was certainly not faith in Islam that first guided my steps, but simply a desire to search for the truth. This is how I see it today. It was mainly the facts which, by the time I had finished my study, led me to see the Qur'an as the divinely-revealed text it really is.

#### **AUTHENTICITY OF QUR'AN**

Before getting to the essence of the subject, there is a very important point which must be considered: the authenticity of the Qur'anic text.

It is known that the text of the Qur'an was both recited from memory, during the time it was revealed, by the Prophet and the believers who surrounded him, and written down by designated scribes among his followers. This process lasted for roughly twenty-three years during which many unofficial copies were made. An official copy was made within one year after the Prophet's death at the instruction of Caliph Abu Bakr.

Here we must note a highly important point. The present text of the Qur'an benefited in its original preparation from the advantage of having its authenticity cross-checked by the text recited from memory as well as the unofficial written texts. The memorized text was of paramount importance at a time when not everyone could read and write, but everybody could memorize. Moreover, the need for a written record was included in the text of the Qur'an itself. The first five verses of chapter al-'Alaq, which happen to constitute the first revelation made to the Prophet (S), express this quite clearly:

"Read: In the name of your Lord who created. Who created man from a clinging entity. Read! Your Lord is the most Noble, Who taught by the pen. Who taught man what he did not know." Qur'an, 96:1-5

These are surely words in "praise of the pen as a means of human knowledge", to use Professor Hamidullah's expression.

Then came the Caliphate of 'Uthman (which lasted from the twelfth to the twenty-fourth year following Muhammad's death). Within the first two years of Caliph 'Uthman's rule, seven official copies were reproduced from the official text and distributed throughout a large area of the world which had already come under Islamic rule. All unofficial copies existing at that time were destroyed and all future copies were made from the official seven copies.

In my book, *The Bible, the Qur'an and Science*, I have quoted passages from the Qur'an which came from the period prior to the Hijrah (the Prophet's emigration from Makkah to Madeenah in the year 622) and which allude to the writing of the Qur'an before the Prophet's departure from Makkah.

There were, moreover, many witnesses to the immediate transcription of the Qur'anic revelation.

Professor Jacques Berque has told me of the great importance he attaches to it in comparison with the long gap separating the writing down of the Judeo-Christian revelation from the facts and events which it relates. Let us not forget that today we also have a number of manuscripts of the first written versions of the Qur'an which were from a time period very close to the time of revelation.

I shall also mention another fact of great importance. We shall examine statements in the Qur'an which today appear to merely record scientific truth, but of which men in former times were only able to grasp the apparent meaning. In some cases, these statements were totally incomprehensible. It is impossible to imagine that, if there were any alterations to the texts, these obscure passages scattered throughout the text of the Qur'an, were all

able to escape human manipulation. The slightest alteration to the text would have automatically destroyed the remarkable coherence which is characteristic to them. Change in any text would have prevented us from establishing their total conformity with modern knowledge. The presence of these statements spread throughout the Qur'an looks (to the impartial observer) like an obvious hallmark of its authenticity.

The Qur'an is a revelation made known to humans in the course of twenty-three years. It spanned two periods of almost equal length on either side of the Hijrah. In view of this, it was natural for reflections having a scientific aspect to be scattered throughout the Book. In a study, such as the one we have made, we had to regroup the verses according to subject matter, collecting them chapter by chapter.

How should they be classified? I could not find any indications in the Qur'an suggesting any particular classification, so I decided present them according to my own personal one.

It would seem to me, that the first subject to deal with is Creation. Here it is possible to compare the verses referring to this topic with the general ideas prevalent today on the formation of the Universe. Next, I divided up verses under the following general headings: Astronomy, the Earth, the Animal and Vegetable Kingdoms, Humans, and Human Reproduction in particular. Furthermore, I thought it useful to make a comparison between Qur'anic and Biblical narrations on the same topics from the point of view of modern knowledge. This has been done in the cases of Creation, the Flood and the Exodus. The reason that these topics were chosen is that knowledge acquired today can be used in the interpretation of the texts.

### **CREATION OF THE UNIVERSE**

From an examination of creation as described in the Qur'an, an extremely important general concept emerges: The Qur'anic narration is quite different from the Biblical narration. This idea contradicts the parallels which are often wrongly drawn by Western authors to emphasize the resemblance between the two texts. To stress only the similarities, while silently ignoring the obvious dissimilarities, is to distort reality. There is, perhaps, a reason for this.

When talking about creation, there is a strong tendency in the West to claim that Muhammad copied the general outlines mentioned in the Qur'an from the Bible.

Certainly it is possible to compare the six days of creation as described in the Bible, plus an extra day for rest on God's Sabbath, with this verse from chapter al-A'raaf.

"Your Lord is God who created the heavens and the earth in six days." Qur'an, 7:54

However, it must be pointed out that modern commentators stress the interpretation of the Arabic word *ayyaam*, (one translation of which is 'days'), as meaning 'long periods' or 'ages' rather than periods of twenty-four hours.

What appears to be of fundamental importance to me is that, in contrast to the narration contained in the Bible, the Qur'an does not lay down a sequence for creation of the earth and heavens. It refers both to the heavens before the earth and the earth before the heavens, when it talks of creation in general, as in this verse of chapter Taa Haa:

"(God) who created the earth and heavens above." Qur'an, 20:4

In fact, the notion derived from the Qur'an is one of a parallelism in the celestial and terrestrial evolutions. There are also basic pieces of information concerning the existence of an initial gaseous mass (*dukhaan*) which are unique to the Qur'an. As well as descriptions of the elements which, although at first were fused together (*ratq*), they subsequently became separated (*fatq*). These ideas are expressed in chapters Fussilat and al-Anbiyaa:

"God then rose turning towards the heaven when it was smoke" Qur'an, 41:11

"Do the disbelievers not see that the heavens and the earth were joined together, then I split them apart?" Qur'an, 21:30

According to modern science, the separation process resulted in the formation of multiple worlds, a concept which appears dozens of times in the Qur'an. For example, look at the first chapter of the Qur'an, al-Faatihah: ("Praise be to God, the Lord of the Worlds." Qur'an, 1:1). These Qur'anic references are all in perfect agreement with modern ideas on the existence of primary nebula (galactic dust), followed by the separation of the elements which resulted in the formation of galaxies and then stars from which the planets were born. Reference is also made in the Qur'an to an intermediary creation between the heavens and the earth, as seen in chapter al-Furqaan:

"God is the one who created the heavens, the earth and what is between them..." Qur'an, 25:59

It would seem that this intermediary creation corresponds to the modern discovery of bridges of matter which are present outside organized astronomical systems.

This brief survey of Qur'anic references to creation clearly shows us how modern scientific data and statements in the Qur'an consistently agree on a large number of points. In contrast, the successive phases of creation mentioned in the Biblical text are totally unacceptable. For

example, in Genesis 1:9-19 the creation of the earth (on the 3rd day) is placed before that of the heavens (on the 4th day). It is a well known fact that our planet came from its own star, the sun. In such circumstances, how could

anyone claim that Muhammad, the supposed author of the Qur'an, drew his inspiration from the Bible. Such a claim would mean that, of his own accord, he corrected the Biblical text to arrive at the correct concept concerning the formation of the Universe. Yet the correct concept was reached by scientists many centuries after his death.

### **ASTRONOMY**

Whenever I describe to Westerners the details the Qur'an contains on certain points of astronomy, it is common for someone to reply that there is nothing unusual in this since the Arabs made important discoveries in the field of astronomy long before the Europeans. But, this is a mistaken idea resulting from an ignorance of history. In the first place, science developed in the Arab World at a considerable time after the Qur'anic revelation had occurred. Secondly, the scientific knowledge prevalent at the highpoint of Islamic civilization would have made it impossible for any human being to have written statements on the heavens comparable to those in the Qur'an. The material on this subject is so vast that I can only provide a brief outline of it here.

#### **The Sun and Moon.**

Whereas the Bible talks of the sun and the moon as two lights differing only in size, the Qur'an distinguishes between them by the use of different terms: light (noor) for the moon, and lamp (siraaj) for the sun.

"Did you see how Allah created seven heavens, one above the other, and made in them the moon a light and the sun a lamp?" Qur'an, 78:12-13

The moon is an inert body which reflects light, whereas the sun is a celestial body in a state of permanent combustion producing both light and heat.

#### **Stars and Planets**

The word 'star' (najm) in the Qur'an ( 86:3 ) is accompanied by the adjective thaaqib which indicates that it burns and consumes itself as it pierces through the shadows of the night. It was much later discovered that stars are heavenly bodies producing their own light like the sun.

In the Qur'an, a different word, kawkab, is used to refer to the planets which are celestial bodies that reflect light and do not produce their own light like the sun.

"We have adorned the lowest heaven with ornaments, the planets." Qur'an, 37:6

**Orbits** Today, the laws governing the celestial systems are well known. Galaxies are balanced by the position of stars and planets in well-defined orbits, as well as the interplay of gravitational forces produced by their masses and the speed of their movements. But is this not what the Qur'an describes in terms which have only become comprehensible in modern times. In chapter al-Ambiyaa we find:

"(God is) the one who created the night, the day, the sun and the moon. Each one is traveling in an orbit with its own motion." Qur'an, 21:33

The Arabic word which expresses this movement is the verb yasbahoon which implies the idea of motion produced by a moving body, whether it is the movement of one's legs running on the ground, or the action of swimming in water. In the case of a celestial body, one is forced to translate it, according to its original meaning, as 'to travel with its own motion.'

In my book, The Bible, The Qur'an and Science, I have given the precise scientific data corresponding to the motion of celestial bodies. They are well known for the moon, but less widely known for the sun.

#### **The Day and Night**

The Qur'anic description of the sequence of day and night would, in itself, be rather commonplace were it not for the fact that it is expressed in terms that are today highly appropriate. The Qur'an uses the verb kawwara in chapter az-Zumar to describe the way the night 'winds' or 'coils' itself around the day and the day around the night.

"He coils the night upon the day and the day upon the night." Qur'an, 39:5

The original meaning of the verb kis to coil a turban around the head. This is a totally valid comparison; yet at the time the Qur'an was revealed, the astronomical data necessary to make this comparison were unknown. It is not until man landed on the moon and observed the earth spinning on its axis, that the dark half of the globe appeared to wind itself around the light and the light half appeared to wind itself around the dark.

#### **The Solar Apex**

The notion of a settled place for the sun is vividly described in chapter Yaa Seen of the Qur'an:

"The sun runs its course to a settled place That is the decree of the Almighty, the All Knowing." Qur'an, 36:38

"Settled place" is the translation of the word mustaqarr which indicates an exact appointed place and time. Modern astronomy confirms that the solar system is indeed moving in space at a rate of 12 miles per second towards a point situated in the constellation of Hercules ( alpha lyrae ) whose exact location has been precisely calculated.

Astronomers have even give it a name, the solar apex.

**Expansion of the Universe** Chapter ath-Thaariyaat of the Qur'an also seems to allude to one of the most imposing discoveries of modern science, the expansion of the Universe.

"I built the heaven with power and it is I, who am expanding it." Qur'an, 51:47

The expansion of the universe was first suggested by the general theory of relativity and is supported by the calculations of astrophysics. The regular movement of the galactic light towards the red section of the spectrum is explained by the distancing of one galaxy from another. Thus, the size of the universe appears to be progressively increasing.

### **Conquest of Space**

Among the achievements of modern science is the “conquest” of space which has resulted in man's journey to the moon. The prediction of this event surely springs to mind when we read the chapter ar-Rahmaan in the Qur'an: “O assembly of Jinns and men, if you can penetrate the regions of the heavens and the earth, then penetrate them! You will not penetrate them except with authority.”

Qur'an, 55:33

Authority to travel in space can only come from the Creator of the laws which govern movement and space. The whole of this Qur'anic chapter invites humankind to recognize God's beneficence.

### **GEOLOGY**

Let us now return to earth to discover some of the many amazing statements contained in Qur'anic reflections about our own planet. They deal, not only with the physical phenomena observed here on earth, but also with details concerning the living organisms that inhabit it .

As in the case of everything we have discussed so far, we shall see that the Qur'an also expresses concepts in the field of geology that were way ahead of those current at the time of its revelation.

At this point, we must ask ourselves the following question: How could an uneducated man in the middle of the desert accurately tackle so many and such varied subjects at a time when mythology and superstition reigned supreme? How could he so skillfully avoid every belief that was proven to be totally inaccurate many centuries later?

### **Water Cycle**

The verses dealing with the earthly systems are a case in point. I have quoted a large number of them in my book, *The Bible, The Qur'an and Science*, and have paid special attention to those that deal with the water cycle in nature. This is a topic which is well known today. Consequently, the verses in the Qur'an that refer to the water cycle seem to express ideas that are now totally self-evident. But if we consider the ideas prevalent at that time, they appear to be based more on myth and philosophical speculation than on observed fact, even though useful practical knowledge on soil irrigation was current at that period.

Let us examine, for example, the following verse in chapter az-Zumar:

“Have you not seen that Allah sent rain down from the sky and caused it to penetrate the ground and come forth as springs, then He caused crops of different colors to grow...” Qur'an, 39:21

Such notions seem quite natural to us today, but we should not forget that, not so long ago, they were not prevalent. It was not until the sixteenth century, with Bernard Palissy, that we gained the first coherent description of the water cycle. Prior to this, people believed that the waters of the oceans, under the effect of winds, were thrust towards the interior of the continents. They then returned to the oceans via the great abyss, which, since Plato's time was called the Tartarus. In the seventeenth century, great thinkers such as Descartes still believed in this myth. Even in the nineteenth century there were still those who believed in Aristotle's theory that water was condensed in cool mountain caverns and formed underground lakes that fed springs. Today, we know that it is the infiltration of rain water into the ground that is responsible for this. If one compares the facts of modern hydrology with the data found in numerous verses of the Qur'an on this subject, one cannot fail to notice the remarkable degree of agreement between the two.

### **Mountains**

In geology, modern science has recently discovered the phenomenon of folding which formed the mountain ranges. The earth's crust is like a solid shell, while the deeper layers are hot and fluid, and thus inhospitable to any form of life. It has also been discovered that the stability of mountains is linked to the phenomenon of folding. The process of mountain formation by folding drove the earth's crust down into the lower layers and provided foundations for the mountains.

Let us now compare modern ideas with one verse among many in the Qur'an that deals with this subject. It is taken from chapter an-Naba':

“Have We not made the earth an expanse and the mountains stakes?”

Qur'an, 78:6-7

Stakes ( awtaad ), which are driven into the ground like those used to anchor a tent, are the deep foundations of geological folds.

Here, as in the case of all the other topics presented, the objective observer cannot fail to notice the absence of any contradiction to modern knowledge.

**BIOLOGY** More than anything else, I was struck by statements in the Qur'an dealing with living things, both in the animal and vegetable kingdoms, especially with regard to reproduction. We should really devote much more time to this subject, but, due to the limited scope of this presentation, I can only give a few examples.

I must once again stress the fact that it is only in modern times that scientific progress has made the hidden meaning of some Qur'anic verses comprehensible to us. Numerous translations and commentaries on the Qur'an have been made by learned men who had no access to modern scientific knowledge. It is for this reason that scientists find some of their interpretations unacceptable.

There are also other verses whose obvious meanings are easily understood, but which conceal scientific meanings which are startling, to say the least. This is the case of a verse in chapter al-Ambiyaa, a part of which has already been quoted:

“Do the unbelievers not realize that the heavens and the earth were joined together, then I clove them asunder and I made every living thing out of water. Will they still not believe?” Qur'an, 21:30  
This is a dramatic affirmation of the modern idea that the origin of life is aquatic.

### **Botany**

Progress in botany at the time of Muhammad (S) was not advanced enough in any country for scientists to know that plants have both male and female parts. Nevertheless, we may read the following in the chapter Taa Haa:

“(God is the One who) sent down rain from the sky and with it brought forth a variety of plants in pairs.” Qur'an, 20:53

Today we know that fruit comes from plants that have sexual characteristics even when they come from unfertilized flowers, like bananas. In the chapter ar-Ra'd we read the following:

“... and of all fruits (God) placed (on the earth) two pairs.” Qur'an, 13:3

### **Physiology**

In the field of physiology, there is one verse which appears extremely significant to me. One thousand years before the discovery of the blood circulatory system, and roughly thirteen centuries before it was determined that the internal organs were nourished by the process of digestive, a verse in the Qur'an described the source of the constituents of milk, in conformity with scientific facts.

To understand this verse, it must first be known that chemical reactions occur between food and enzymes in the mouth, the stomach and the intestines releasing nutrients in molecular form which are then absorbed into the circulatory system through countless microscopic projections of the intestinal wall called villi. Blood in the circulatory system then transports the nutrients to all the organs of the body, among which are the milk-producing mammary glands.

This biological process must be basically understood, if we are to understand a verse in the Qur'an which has for many centuries given rise to commentaries that were totally incomprehensible.

Today it is not difficult to see why! This verse is taken from the chapter an-Nahl:

“Verily, in cattle there is a lesson for you. I give you drink from their insides, coming from a conjunction between the digested contents ( of the intestines ) and the blood, milk pure and pleasant for those who drink it.” Qur'an, 16:66

The constituents of milk are secreted by the mammary glands which are nourished by the product of food digestion brought to them by the bloodstream. The initial event which sets the whole process in motion is the conjunction of the contents of the intestine and blood at the level of the intestinal wall itself.

This very precise concept is the result of the discoveries made in the chemistry and physiology of the digestive system over one thousand years after the time of Prophet Muhammad (S).

### **EMBRYOLOGY**

There are a multitude of statements in the Qur'an on the subject of human reproduction which constitute a challenge to the embryologist seeking a human explanation for them. It was only after the birth of the basic sciences which contributed to our knowledge of biology and the invention of the microscope, that humans were able to understand the depth of those Qur'anic statements. It was impossible for a human being living in the early seventh century to have accurately expressed such ideas. There is nothing to indicate that people in the Middle-East and Arabia knew anything more about this subject than people living in Europe or anywhere else. Today, there are many Muslims, possessing a thorough knowledge of the Qur'an and natural sciences, who have recognized the amazing similarity between the verses of the Qur'an dealing with reproduction and modern scientific knowledge.

I shall always remember the comment of an eighteen-year-old Muslim, brought up in Saudi Arabia, commenting on a reference to human reproduction as described in the Qur'an. He pointed to the Qur'an and said, “This book provides us with all the essential information on the subject. When I was at school, my teachers used the Qur'an to explain how children were born. Your books on sex-education are a bit late on the scene!”

If I were to spend as long on all the details of reproduction contained in the Qur'an, as the subject merits, this pamphlet would become a book. The detailed linguistic and scientific explanations I have given in The Bible, The Qur'an and Science are sufficient for the person who does not speak Arabic nor know much about embryology to be able to understand the meaning of such verses in the light of modern science in more depth.

It is especially in the field of embryology that a comparison between the beliefs present at the time of the Qur'an's revelation and modern scientific data, leaves us amazed at the degree of agreement between the Qur'an's statements and modern scientific knowledge. Not to mention the total absence of any reference in the Qur'an to the mistaken ideas that were prevalent around the world at the time.

### **Fertilization**

Let us now isolate, from all these verses, precise ideas concerning the complexity of the semen and the fact that an infinitely small quantity is required to ensure fertilization. In chapter al-Insaan the Qur'an states:

"Verily, I created humankind from a small quantity of mingled fluids." Qur'an, 76:2

The Arabic word *nutfah* has been translated as "small quantity". It comes from the verb meaning 'to dribble, to trickle' and is used to describe what remains in the bottom of a bucket which has been emptied. The verse correctly implies that fertilization is performed by only a very small volume of liquid.

On the other hand, *mingled fluids* ( *amshaaj* ) has been understood by early commentators to refer to the mixture of male and female discharges. Modern authors have corrected this view and note that the sperm is made up of various components.

When the Qur'an talks of a fertilizing fluid composed of different components, it also informs us that human progeny will be formed from something extracted from this liquid. This is the meaning of the following verse in chapter as-Sajdah:

"Then He made [ man's ] offspring from the essence of a despised fluid."

Qur'an, 32:8

The Arabic word translated by the term 'essence' is *sulaalah* which means 'something extracted, the best part of a thing'. In whatever way it is translated, it refers to part of a whole. Under normal conditions, only one single cell, spermatozoon, out of over 50 million ejaculated by a man during sexual intercourse will actually penetrate the ovule.

### **Implantation**

Once the egg has been fertilized in the fallopian tube, it descends to lodge itself inside the uterus. This process is called the 'implantation of the egg'. Implantation is a result of the development of villousities, which, like roots in the soil, draw nourishment from the wall of the uterus and make the egg literally cling to the womb. The process of implantation is appropriately described in several verses by the word '*alaq*', which is also the title of the chapter in which one of the verses appears:

"God fashioned humans from a clinging entity." Qur'an, 96:2

I do not think there is any reasonable translation of the word '*alaq*' other than to use it in its original sense. It is a mistake to speak of a 'blood clot' here, which is the term Professor Hamidullah uses in his translation. It is a derivative meaning which is not as appropriate in this context.

### **Embryo**

The evolution of the embryo inside the maternal uterus is only briefly described, but the description is accurate, because the simple words referring to it correspond exactly to fundamental stages in its growth. This is what we read in a verse from the chapter al-Mu'minoon:

"I fashioned the clinging entity into a chewed lump of flesh and I fashioned the chewed flesh into bones and I clothed the bones with intact flesh." Qur'an, 23:14

The term 'chewed flesh' (*mudghah*) corresponds exactly to the appearance of the embryo at a certain stage in its development.

It is known that the bones develop inside this mass and that they are then covered with muscle. This is the meaning of the term 'intact flesh' (*lahm*).

The embryo passes through a stage where some parts are in proportion and others out of proportion with what is later to become the individual. This is the obvious meaning of a verse in the chapter al-Hajj, which reads as follows: "I fashioned (humans) a clinging entity, then into a lump of flesh in proportion and out of proportion." Qur'an, 22:5.

Next, we have a reference to the appearance of the senses and internal organs in the chapter as-Sajdah:

"... and (God) gave you ears, eyes and hearts." Qur'an, 32:9

Nothing here contradicts today's data and, furthermore, none of the mistaken ideas of the time have crept into the Qur'an. Throughout the Middle Ages there were a variety of beliefs about human development based on myths and speculations which continued for several centuries after the period. The most fundamental stage in the history of

embryology came in 1651 with Harvey's statement that "all life initially comes from an egg". At that time, when science had benefited greatly from the invention of the microscope, people were still arguing about the respective roles of the egg and spermatozoon. Buffon, the great naturalist, was one of those in favor of the egg theory. Bonnet, on the other hand, supported the theory of 'the ovaries of Eve', which stated that Eve, the mother of the human race, was supposed to have had inside her the seeds of all human beings packed together one inside the other.

### **BIBLE, QUR'AN AND SCIENCE**

We have now come to the last subject I would like to present in this short pamphlet: it is the comparison between modern knowledge and passages in the Qur'an that are also referred to in the Bible.

#### **Creation**

We have already come across some of the contradictions between scripture and science regarding the creation of the universe. When dealing with that topic, I stressed the perfect agreement between modern knowledge and verses in the Qur'an, and pointed out that the Biblical narration contained statements that were scientifically unacceptable. This is hardly surprising if we are aware that the narration of the creation contained in the Bible was the work of priests living in the sixth century BC, hence the term 'sacerdotal' (priestly) narration is officially used to refer to it. The narration seems to have been conceived as the theme of a sermon designed to exhort people to observe the Sabbath. The narration was constructed with a definite end in view, and as Father de Vaux (a former head of the Biblical School of Jerusalem) has noted, this end was essentially legalist in character.

The Bible also contains a much shorter and older narration of Creation, the so-called 'Yahvist' version, which approaches the subject from a completely different angle. They are both taken from Genesis, the first book of the Pentateuch or Torah. Moses is supposed to have been its author, but the text we have today has undergone many changes.

The sacerdotal narration of Genesis is famous for its whimsical genealogies, that go back to Adam, and which nobody takes very seriously. Nevertheless, such Gospel authors as Matthew and Luke have reproduced them, more or less word-for-word, in their genealogies of Jesus. Matthew goes back as far as Abraham, and Luke to Adam. These writings are scientifically unacceptable, because they set a date for the age of the world and the time humans appeared on Earth, which most definitely contradicts what modern science has firmly established. The Qur'an, on the other hand, is completely free of dates of this kind.

Earlier on, we noted how perfectly the Qur'an agrees with modern ideas on the formation of the Universe. On the other hand, the Biblical narration of primordial waters is hardly, nor is the creation of light on the first day before the creation of the stars which produce this light; the existence of an evening and a morning before the creation of the earth; the creation of the earth on the third day before that of the sun on the fourth; the appearance of beasts of the earth on the sixth day after the appearance of the birds of the air on the fifth day, although the former came first. All these statements are the result of beliefs prevalent at the time this text was written and do not have any other meaning.

**Age of the Earth** As for the Biblical genealogies which form the basis of the Jewish calendar and assert that today the world is 5738 years old, these are hardly admissible either. Our solar system may well be four and a quarter billion years old, and the appearance of human beings on earth, as we know him today, may be estimated in tens of thousands of years, if not more. It is absolutely essential, therefore, to note that the Qur'an does not contain any such indications as to the age of the world, and that these are specific to the Biblical text.

#### **The Flood**

There is a second highly significant subject of comparison between the Bible and the Qur'an; descriptions of the deluge. In actual fact, the Biblical narration is a fusion of two descriptions in which events are related differently.

The Bible speaks of a universal flood and places it roughly 300 years before Abraham.

According to what we know of Abraham, this would imply a universal cataclysm around the twenty-first or twenty-second century BC. This story would be untenable, in view of presently available historical data. How can we accept the idea that, in the twenty-first or twenty-second century BC, all civilization was wiped off the face of the earth by a universal cataclysm, when we know that this period corresponds, for example, to the one preceding the Middle Kingdom in Egypt, at roughly the date of the first Intermediary period before the eleventh dynasty? It is historically unacceptable to maintain that, at this time, humanity was totally wiped out. None of the preceding statements is acceptable according to modern knowledge. From this point of view, we can measure the enormous gap separating the Bible from the Qur'an.

In contrast to the Bible, the narration contained in the Qur'an deals with a cataclysm that is limited to Noah's people. They were punished for their sins, as were other ungodly peoples. The Qur'an does not fix the cataclysm in time. There are absolutely no historical or archaeological objections to the narration in the Qur'an.

#### **The Pharaoh**

A third point of comparison, which is extremely significant, is the story of Moses, and especially the Exodus from Egypt of the Hebrews. Here I can only give a highly compressed account of a study on this subject that appears in my book. I have noted the points where the Biblical and Qur'anic narrations agree and disagree, and I have found points where the two texts complement each other in a very useful way.

Among the many hypotheses, concerning the historical time-frame occupied by the Exodus in the history of the pharaohs, I have concluded that the most likely is the theory which makes Merneptah, Ramesses II's successor, the pharaoh of the Exodus. The comparison of the data contained in the Scriptures with archeological evidence strongly supports this hypothesis. I am pleased to be able to say that the Biblical narration contributes weighty evidence leading us to situate Moses in the history of the pharaohs. Moses was probably born during the reign of Ramesses II. Biblical data, are therefore of considerable historical value in the story of Moses. A medical study of the mummy of Merneptah has yielded further useful information on the possible causes of this pharaoh's death. The fact that we possess the mummy of this pharaoh is one of paramount importance. The Bible records that pharaoh was engulfed in the sea, but does not give any details as to what subsequently became of his corpse. The Qur'an, in chapter Yoonus, notes that the body of the pharaoh would be saved from the waters:

"Today I will save your dead body so that you may be a sign for those who come after you." Qur'an, 10:92

A medical examination of this mummy, has, shown that the body could not have stayed in the water for long, because it does not show signs of deterioration due to prolonged submersion. Here again, the comparison between the narration in the Qur'an and the data provided by modern knowledge does not give rise to the slightest objection from a scientific point of view.

Such points of agreement are characteristic of the Qur'anic revelation. But, are we throwing the Judeo-Christian revelation into discredit and depriving it of all its intrinsic value by stressing the faults as seen from a scientific point of view? I think not because the criticism is not aimed at the text as a whole, but only at certain passages. There are parts of the Bible which have an undoubted historical value. I have shown that in my book, *The Bible, The Qur'an and Science*, where I discuss passages which enable us to locate Moses in time.

The main causes which brought about such differences as arise from the comparison between the Holy Scriptures and modern knowledge is known to modern scholars. The Old Testament constitutes a collection of literary works produced in the course of roughly nine centuries and which has undergone many alterations. The part played by men in the actual composition of the texts of the Bible is quite considerable.

The Qur'anic revelation, on the other hand, has a history which is radically different. As we have already seen, from the moment it was first commto humans, it was learnt by heart and written down during Muhammad's own lifetime. It is thanks to this fact that the Qur'an does not pose any problem of authenticity.

A totally objective examination of the Qur'an, in the light of modern knowledge, leads us to recognize the agreement between the two, as has already been noted on repeated occasions throughout this presentation.

It makes us deem it quite unthinkable for a man of Muhammad's time to have been the author of such statements, on account of the state of knowledge in his day. Such considerations are part of what gives the Qur'anic revelation its unique place among religious and non-religious texts, and forces the impartial scientist to admit his inability to provide an explanation based solely upon materialistic reasoning. Such facts as I have had the pleasure of exposing to you here, appear to represent a genuine challenge to human explanation leaving only one alternative: the Qur'an is undoubtedly a revelation from God.

### **What Non-Muslims think of Muhammad**

During the centuries of the crusades, all sorts of slanders were invented against the Prophet Muhammad (p). However, with the birth of the modern age, marked with religious tolerance and freedom of thought, there has been a great change in the approach of Western authors in their delineation of his life and character.

The West, however, has yet to go a step forward to

discover the greatest reality about Muhammad (p); that is his being the true and the last Prophet of God for all humanity.

Despite all its objectivity and enlightenment, there has been no sincere and objective attempt by the West to understand the Prophethood of Muhammad (p). It is so strange that very glowing tributes are paid to him for his integrity and achievement but his claim of being the Prophet of God is rejected explicitly or implicitly. It is here that a searching of the heart is required, and a review of the so-called objectivity is needed. The following glaring



facts from the life of Muhammad (p) have been furnished to facilitate an unbiased, logical and objective decision regarding his Prophethood.

Up to the age of forty, Muhammad (p) was not known as a statesman, a preacher or an orator. He was never seen discussing the principles of metaphysics, ethics, law, politics, economics or sociology. No doubt he possessed an excellent character and charming manners and was known to be highly cultured. Yet there was nothing so deeply striking and so radically extraordinary in him that would make men expect something great and revolutionary from him in the future. But when he came out of the Cave of Hira, with a new message, he was completely transformed. .Is it possible for a person known to possess an upright and unblemished character, to suddenly turn an impostor. and claim to be the Prophet of God?. It is well known that his claim invited the rage of his people, and marked the beginning of a long, arduous struggle. One might ask: .for what reason did he suffer all those hardships?His people offered to accept him as their King and to lay all the riches of the land at his feet if only he would leave the preaching of his message. But he turned down their alluring offers and continued to preach in the face of insults, social boycott and even physical assault. Furthermore, had he come with a design of rivalry with the Christians and the Jews, why should he have believed in Jesus Christ and Moses and other Prophets of God (peace be upon them), which is a basic requirement of faith without which no one could be a Muslim?

It is well known that Muhammad (p) was unlettered and had led a very uneventful life before he announced his mission to the world at the age of forty. Is it not an incontrovertible proof of his Prophethood, that despite being unlettered, all of Arabia stood in awe and wonder when he began preaching his message, and was bewitched by the wonderful eloquence of his message? The whole legion of Arab poets, preachers and orators of the highest caliber failed to bring forth the equivalent of the Qur.an, which remains inimitable to this day. And above all, how could he then pronounce truths of scientific nature contained in the Qur.an that no human being could possibly have discovered at that time

Last, but not the least, why did he lead a hard life even after gaining power and authority? The words he uttered while dying were: .We the community of the Prophets are not inherited. Whatever we leave is for charity.  
As a matter of fact, Muhammad (p), is the last link of Prophets sent in different lands and times since the beginning of the human life on earth.

If greatness of purpose, smallness of means, and astounding results are the three criteria of human genius, who could dare to compare any great man in modern history with Muhammad? The most famous men created arms, laws and empires only. They founded, if anything at all, no more than material powers which often crumbled away before their eyes. This man moved not only armies, legislations, empires, peoples and dynasties, but millions of men in one-third of the then inhabited world; and more than that, he moved the altars, the gods, the religions, the ideas, the beliefs and souls... His forbearance in victory, his ambition, which was entirely devoted to one idea and in no manner striving for an empire; his endless prayers, his mystic conversations with God, his death and his triumph after death; all these attest not to an impostor but to a firm conviction which gave him the power to restore a dogma. This dogma was twofold, the unity of God and the immateriality of God; the former telling what God is, the latter telling what God is not; the one overthrowing false gods with the sword, the other starting an idea with the words.

Philosopher, orator, apostle, legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, of a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire, that is Muhammad. As regards all standards by which human greatness

may be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?[Lamartine, Histoire de la Turquie, Paris 1854 Vol. II, pp. 276-77.]

It is not the propagation but the permanency of his religion that deserves our wonder; the same pure and perfect impression that he engraved at Mecca and Medina is preserved, after the revolutions of twelve centuries by the Indian, the African and the Turkish proselytes of the Koran... The Mahometans have uniformly withstood the temptation of reducing the object of their faith and devotion to a level with the senses and imagination of man. I believe in One God and Mahomet the Apostle of God., is the simple and invariable profession of Islam. The intellectual image of the Deity has never been degraded by any visible idol; the honors of the prophet have never transgressed the measure of human virtue; and his living precepts have restrained the gratitude of his disciples within the bounds of reason and religion.[Edward Gibbon and Simon Ockley, History of the Saracen Empire, London 1870, p. 54.]

He was Caesar and Pope in one; but he was Pope without Popes pretensions, Caesar without the legions of Caesar: without a standing army, without a bodyguard, without a palace, without a fixed revenue; if ever any man had the right to say that he ruled by the right divine, it was Mohammad, for he had all the power without its instruments and without its supports.[Bosworth Smifu, Mohammad and Mohammadanism. London 1874, p. 92.]

.It is impossible for anyone who studies the life and character of the great Prophet of Arabia, who knows how he taught and how he lived, to feel anything but reverence for that mighty Prophet, one of the great messengers of the Supreme. And although in what I put to you I shall say many things which may be familiar to many, yet I myself feel whenever I re-read them, a new way of admiration, a new sense of reverence for that mighty Arabian teacher.[Annie Besant, The Life and Teachings of Muhammad, Madras 1932, p.4]

His readiness to undergo persecutions for his beliefs, the high moral character of the men who believed in him and looked up to him as leader, and the greatness of his ultimate achievement all argue his fundamental integrity. To suppose Muhammad an impostor raises more problems than it solves. Moreover, none of the great figures of history is so poorly appreciated in the West as Muhammad.[W. Montgomery, Mohammad at Mecca, Oxford, 1953, p. 52.]

Muhammad, the inspired man who founded Islam, was born about A.D. 570 into an Arabian tribe that worshipped idols. Orphaned at birth, he was always particularly solicitous of the poor and needy, the widow and the orphan, the slave and the downtrodden. At twenty he was already a successful businessman, and soon became director of camel caravans for a wealthy widow. When he reached twenty-five his employer, recognizing his merit, proposed marriage. Even though she was fifteen years older, he married her, and as long as she lived remained a devoted husband. Like almost every major prophet before him, Muhammad fought shy of serving as the transmitter of God's word, sensing his own inadequacy. But the angel commanded Read.. So far as we know, Muhammad was unable to read or write, but he began to dictate those inspired words which would soon revolutionize a large segment of the earth; .There is one God.

In all things Muhammad was profoundly practical. When his beloved son Ibrahim died, an eclipse occurred, and rumors of God's personal condolence quickly arose. Whereupon Muhammad is said to have announced, An eclipse is a phenomenon of nature. It is foolish to attribute such things to the death or birth of a human being..

At Muhammad.s own death an attempt was made to deify him, but the man who was to

become his administrative successor killed the hysteria with one of the noblest speeches in religious history: If there are any among you who worshipped Muhammad, he is dead. But if it is God you worshipped, He lives forever..

[James A. Michener, Islam The Misunderstood Religion., In the Reader.s Digest (American Edition) for May 1955, pp. 68-70.]

The 100: A Ranking of the Most Influential Persons in History, New York: Hart Publishing Company, Inc., 1978, p. 33.

**Muhammad said no one has the right to burn anything only god has the right to burn someone which is in hell. Love peace for all. May god bless &save us all.**

### **THE QUR'AAN AND MODERN SCIENCE COMPATIBLE OR INCOMPATIBLE?**

**By Dr. ZAKIR NAIK ISLAMIC RESEARCH FOUNDATION**

**In the Name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful**

#### **INTRODUCTION**

Ever since the dawn of human life on this planet, Man has always sought to understand Nature, his own place in the scheme of Creation and the purpose of Life itself. In this quest for Truth, spanning many centuries and diverse civilizations, organized religion has shaped human life and determined to a large extent, the course of history. While some religions have been based on books, claimed by their adherents to be divinely inspired, others have relied solely on human experience.

Al-Qur'aan, the main source of the Islamic faith, is a book believed by Muslims, to be of completely Divine origin. Muslims also believe that it contains guidance for all mankind. Since the message of the Qur'aan is believed to be for all times, it should be relevant to every age. Does the Qur'aan pass this test? In this booklet, I intend to give an objective analysis of the Muslim belief regarding the Divine origin of the Qur'aan, in the light of established scientific discoveries.

There was a time, in the history of world civilization, when 'miracles', or what was perceived to be a miracle, took precedence over human reason and logic. But how do we define the term 'miracle'? A miracle is anything that takes place out of the normal course of life and for which humankind has no explanation. However, we must be careful before we accept something as a miracle. An article in 'The Times of India' Mumbai, in 1993 reported that 'a saint' by the name 'Baba Pilot' claimed to have stayed continuously submerged under water in a tank for three consecutive days and nights. However, when reporters wanted to examine the base of the tank of water where he claimed to have performed this 'miraculous' feat, he refused to let them do so. He argued by asking as to how one could examine the womb of a mother that gives birth to a child. The 'Baba' was hiding something. It was a gimmick simply to gain publicity. Surely, no modern man with even the slightest inkling towards rational thinking would accept such a 'miracle'. If such false miracles are the tests of divinity, then we would have to accept Mr. P. C. Sorcar, the world famous magician known for his ingenious magical tricks and illusions, as the best God-man.

A book, claiming Divine origin, is in effect, claiming to be a miracle. Such a claim should be easily verifiable in any age, according to the standards of that age. Muslims believe, that the Qur'aan is the last and final revelation of God, the miracle of miracles revealed as a mercy to mankind. Let us therefore investigate the veracity of this belief.

I would like to thank Brother Musaddique Thange for his editorial assistance.

May Allah (swt) reward him for his efforts, Aameen

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

#### **THE CHALLENGE OF THE QUR'AAN**

Literature and poetry have been instruments of human expression and

creativity, in all cultures. The world also witnessed an age when literature and poetry occupied pride of position, similar to that now enjoyed by science and technology. Muslims as well as non-Muslims agree that Al-Qur'aan is Arabic literature par excellence - that it is the best Arabic literature on the face of the earth.

The Qur'aan, challenges mankind in the following verses:

**“And if ye are in doubt As to what We have revealed From time to time to Our Servant, then produce a Soorah Like thereunto; And call your witnesses or helpers (If there are any) besides Allah, If your (doubts) are true. But if ye cannot –And of a surety you cannot, hen fear the Fire Whose fuel is Men and Stones – Which is prepared for those Who reject Faith.”** [Al-Qur'aan 2:23-24] 1

The same notation is followed throughout the book. References and translation of the Qur'aan are from the translation of the Qur'aan by Abdullah Yusuf Ali, new revised edition, 1989, published by Amana Corporation, Maryland, USA. The challenge of the Qur'aan, is to produce a single *Soorah* (chapter) like the *Soorahs* it contains. The same challenge is repeated in the Qur'aan several times. The challenge to produce a *Soorah*, which, in beauty, eloquence, depth and meaning is at least somewhat similar to a Qur'aanic *Soorah* remains unmet to this day. A modern rational man, however, would never accept a religious scripture, which says, in the best possible poetic language, that the world is flat. This is because we live in an age, where human reason, logic and science are given primacy. Not many would accept the Qur'aan's extraordinarily beautiful language, as proof of its Divine origin. Any scripture 1 Al-Qur'an 2:23-24 indicates *Soorah* or Chapter No. 2 and *Ayaat* or Verses 23 and 24.

**The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?**

claiming to be a divine revelation must also be acceptable on the strength of its own reason and logic.

According to the famous physicist and Nobel Prize winner, Albert Einstein, “Science without religion is lame. Religion without science is blind.” Let us therefore study the Qur'aan, and analyze whether **The Qur'aan and Modern Science are compatible or incompatible?**

The Qur'aan is not a book of science but a book of 'signs', i.e. *ayats*. There are more than six thousand 'signs' in the Qur'aan of which more than a thousand deal with science. We all know that many a times Science takes a 'U-turn'. In this book I have considered only established scientific facts and not mere hypotheses and theories that are based on assumptions and are not backed by proof.

## **I. ASTRONOMY**

### **CREATION OF THE UNIVERSE: 'THE BIG BANG'**

The creation of the universe is explained by astrophysicists in a widely accepted phenomenon, popularly known as the 'Big Bang'. It is supported by observational and experimental data gathered by astronomers and astrophysicists for decades. According to the 'Big Bang', the whole universe was initially one big mass (Primary Nebula). Then there was a 'Big Bang' (Secondary Separation) which resulted in the formation of Galaxies. These then divided to form stars, planets, the sun, the moon, etc. The origin of the universe was unique and the probability of it occurring by 'chance' is zero. The Qur'aan contains the following verse, regarding the origin of the universe: **“Do not the Unbelievers see That the heavens and the earth Were joined together (as one Unit of Creation), before We clove them asunder?”** [Al-Qur'aan 21:30]

The striking congruence between the Qur'aanic verse and the 'Big Bang' is inescapable! How could a book, which first appeared in the deserts of Arabia 1400 years ago, contain this profound scientific truth?

**THERE WAS AN INITIAL GASEOUS MASS BEFORE THE CREATION OF GALAXIES**

Scientists say that before the galaxies in the universe were formed, celestial matter was initially in the form of gaseous matter. In short, huge gaseous matter or clouds were present before the formation of the galaxies. To describe initial celestial matter, the word ‘smoke’ is more appropriate than gas. The following Qur’anic verse refers to this state of the universe by the word *dhukhan* which means smoke.

**“Moreover, He Comprehended In His design the sky, And it had been (as) smoke: He said to it And to the earth: ‘Come ye together, Willingly The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible? or unwillingly.’ They said: ‘We do come (Together), in willing obedience.’”** [Al-Qur’aan 41:11]

Again, this fact is a corollary to the ‘Big Bang’ and was not known to the

Arabs during the time of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). What then, could have been the source of this knowledge?

#### **THE SPHERICAL SHAPE OF THE EARTH**

In early times, people believed that the earth is flat. For centuries, men were afraid to venture out too far, lest they should fall off the edge. Sir Francis Drake was the first person who proved that the earth is spherical when he sailed around it in 1597. Consider the following Qur’anic verse regarding the alternation of day and night: **“Seest thou not that Allah merges Night into Day And He merges Day into Night?”** [Al-Qur’aan 31:29]

Merging here means that the night slowly and gradually changes to day and vice versa. This phenomenon can only take place if the earth is spherical. If the earth was flat, there would have been a sudden change from night to day and from day to night.

The following verse also alludes to the spherical shape of the earth: **“He created the heavens And the earth In true (proportions): He makes the Night Overlap the Day, and the Day Overlap the Night.”** [Al-Qur’aan 39:5]

The Arabic word used here is *Kawwara* meaning ‘to overlap’ or ‘to coil’ – the way a turban is wound around the head. The overlapping or coiling of the day and night can only take place if the earth is spherical.

The earth is not exactly round like a ball, but geo-spherical i.e. it is flattened at the poles. The following verse contains a description of the earth’s shape:

**“And the earth, moreover, Hath He made egg shaped.”** 2 [Al-Qur’aan 79:30]

The Arabic word for egg here is *dahaha*, which means an ostrich-egg. The shape of an ostrich-egg resembles the geo-spherical shape of the earth. Thus the Qur’aan correctly describes the shape of the earth, though the prevalent notion when the Qur’aan was revealed was that the earth is flat.

#### **THE LIGHT OF THE MOON IS REFLECTED LIGHT**

It was believed by earlier civilizations that the moon emanates its own light. Science now tells us that the light of the moon is reflected light. However this fact was mentioned in the Qur’aan 1,400 years ago in the following verse:

**“Blessed is He Who made Constellations in the skies, And placed therein a Lamp And a Moon giving light.”** [Al-Qur’aan 25:61]

The Arabic word for the sun in the Qur’aan, is *shams*. It is referred to as *siraaj*, which means a ‘torch’ or as *wahhaaj* which means ‘a blazing lamp’ or as *diya* which means ‘shining glory’. All three descriptions are appropriate to the sun, since it generates intense heat and light by its internal combustion.

The Arabic word for the moon is *qamar* and it is described in the Qur’aan as *muneer*, which is a body that gives *nur* i.e. light. Again, the Qur’anic description matches perfectly with the true nature of the moon, which does not give off light itself and is an inert body that reflects the light of the sun. Not once in the Qur’aan, is the moon mentioned as *siraaj*, *wahhaaj* or *diya* or

the sun as *nur* or *muneer*. This implies that the Qur'aan recognizes the difference between the nature of sunlight and moonlight.

2 The Arabic word *dahaha* has been translated by A. Yusuf Ali as "vast expanse", which also is correct. The word *dahaha* also means an ostrich-egg. The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Consider the following verses related to the nature of light from the sun and the moon: **"It is He who made the sun To be a shining glory And the moon to be a light (Of beauty)."** [Al-Qur'aan 10:5]

**"See ye not How Allah has created The seven heavens One above another, "And made the moon A light in their midst, and made the sun As a (Glorious) Lamp?"** [Al-Qur'aan 71:15-16]

#### THE SUN ROTATES

For a long time European philosophers and scientists believed that the earth stood still in the centre of the universe and every other body including the sun moved around it. In the West, this geocentric concept of the universe was prevalent right from the time of Ptolemy in the second century B.C. In 1512, Nicholas Copernicus put forward his Heliocentric Theory of Planetary Motion, which asserted that the sun is motionless at the centre of the solar system with the planets revolving around it.

In 1609, the German scientist Yohannus Keppler published the '*Astronomia Nova*'. In this he concluded that not only do the planets move in elliptical orbits around the sun, they also rotate upon their axes at irregular speeds. With this knowledge it became possible for European scientists to explain correctly many of the mechanisms of the solar system including the sequence of night and day.

After these discoveries, it was thought that the Sun was stationary and did not rotate about its axis like the Earth. I remember having studied this fallacy from Geography books during my school days. Consider the following Qur'aanic verse: **"It is He Who created The Night and the Day, And the sun and the moon: All (the celestial bodies) Swim along, each in its Rounded course."** [Al-Qur'aan 21:33]

The Arabic word used in the above verse is *yasbahûn*. The word *yasbahûn* is derived from the word *sabaha*. It carries with it the idea of motion that comes The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

from any moving body. If you use the word for a man on the ground, it would not mean that he is rolling but would mean he is walking or running. If you use the word for a man in water it would not mean that he is floating but would mean that he is swimming.

Similarly, if you use the word *yasbah* for a celestial body such as the sun it would not mean that it is only flying through space but would mean that it is also rotating as it goes through space. Most of the school textbooks have incorporated the fact that the sun rotates about its axis. The rotation of the sun about its own axis can be proved with the help of an equipment that projects the image of the sun on the table top so that one can examine the image of the sun without being blinded. It is noticed that the sun has spots which complete a circular motion once every 25 days i.e. the sun takes approximately 25 days to rotate around its axis.

In fact, the sun travels through space at roughly 150 miles per second, and takes about 200 million years to complete one revolution around the center of our Milky Way Galaxy.

**"It is not permitted To the Sun to catch up The Moon, nor can The Night outstrip the Day: Each (just) swims along In (its own) orbit (According to Law)."** [Al-Qur'aan 36:40]

This verse mentions an essential fact discovered by modern astronomy, i.e. the existence of the individual orbits of the Sun and the Moon, and their

journey through space with their own motion. The ‘fixed place’ towards, which the sun travels, carrying with it the solar system, has been located exactly by modern astronomy. It has been given a name, the Solar Apex. The solar system is indeed moving in space towards a point situated in the constellation of Hercules (alpha Layer) whose exact location is firmly established.

The moon rotates around its axis in the same duration that it takes to revolve around the earth. It takes approximately 29½ days to complete one rotation. One cannot help but be amazed at the scientific accuracy of the Qur’aanic verses. Should we not ponder over the question: “What was the source of knowledge contained in the Qur’aan?”

#### **THE SUN WILL EXTINGUISH AFTER A CERTAIN PERIOD**

The light of the sun is due to a chemical process on its surface that has been taking place continuously for the past five billion years. It will come to an end at some point of time in the future when the sun will be totally extinguished leading to extinction of all life on earth. Regarding the impermanence of the sun’s existence the Qur’aan says: “**And the Sun Runs its course For a period determined For it; that is The decree of (Him) The exalted in Might, The All-Knowing.**” [Al-Qur’aan 36:38] 3

The Arabic word used here is *mustaqarr*, which means a place or time that is determined. Thus the Qur’aan says that the sun runs towards a determined place, and will do so only up to a pre-determined period of time – meaning that it will end or extinguish.

#### **THE PRESENCE OF INTERSTELLAR MATTER**

Space outside organized astronomical systems was earlier assumed to be a vacuum. Astrophysicists later discovered the presence of bridges of matter in this interstellar space. These bridges of matter are called plasma, and consist of completely ionized gas containing equal number of free electrons and positive ions. Plasma is sometimes called the fourth state of matter (besides the three known states viz. solid, liquid and gas). The Qur’aan mentions the presence of this interstellar material in the following verse: “**He Who created the heavens And the earth and all That is between.**” [Al-Qur’aan 25:59]

It would be ridiculous, for anybody to even suggest that the presence of interstellar galactic material was known 1400 years ago.

3 A similar message is conveyed in the Qur’an in 13:2, 35:13, 39:5 and 39:21.

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

#### **THE EXPANDING UNIVERSE**

In 1925, an American astronomer by the name of Edwin Hubble, provided observational evidence that all galaxies are receding from one another, which implies that the universe is expanding. The expansion of the universe is now an established scientific fact. This is what Al-Qur’aan says regarding the nature of the universe: “**With the power and skill Did We construct The Firmament: For it is We Who create The vastness of Space.**” [Al-Qur’aan 51:47]

The Arabic word *mūsi‘ūn* is correctly translated as ‘expanding it’, and it refers to the creation of the expanding vastness of the universe. Stephen Hawking, in his book, ‘A Brief History of Time’, says, “The discovery that the universe is expanding was one of the great intellectual revolutions of the 20th century.”

The Qur’aan mentioned the expansion of the universe, before man even learnt to build a telescope! Some may say that the presence of astronomical facts in the Qur’aan is not surprising since the Arabs were advanced in the field of astronomy. They are correct in acknowledging the advancement of the Arabs in the field of astronomy. However they fail to realize that the Qur’aan was

revealed centuries before the Arabs excelled in astronomy. Moreover many of the scientific facts mentioned above regarding astronomy, such as the origin of the universe with a Big Bang, were not known to the Arabs even at the peak of their scientific advancement. The scientific facts mentioned in the Qur'aan are therefore not due to the Arabs' advancement in astronomy. Indeed, the reverse is true. The Arabs advanced in astronomy, because astronomy occupies a place in the Qur'aan.

## II. PHYSICS

### THE EXISTENCE OF SUBATOMIC PARTICLES

In ancient times a well-known theory by the name of 'Theory of Atomism' was widely accepted. This theory was originally proposed by the Greeks, in particular by a man called Democritus, who lived about 23 centuries ago. Democritus and the people that came after him, assumed that the smallest unit of matter was the atom. The Arabs used to believe the same. The Arabic word *dharrah* most commonly meant an atom. In recent times modern science has discovered that it is possible to split even an atom. That the atom can be split further is a development of the 20th century. Fourteen centuries ago this concept would have appeared unusual even to an Arab. For him the *dharrah* was the limit beyond which one could not go. The following Qur'aanic verse however, refuses to acknowledge this limit: **"The Unbelievers say, 'Never to us will come The Hour': say, 'Nay! But most surely, By my Lord, it will come Upon you – by Him Who knows the unseen – From Whom is not hidden The least little atom In the Heavens or on earth: Nor is there anything less Than that, or greater, but Is in the Record Perspicuous.'"** [Al-Qur'aan 34:3] 4

This verse refers to the Omniscience of God, His knowledge of all things, hidden or apparent. It then goes further and says that God is aware of everything, including what is smaller or bigger than the atom. Thus the verse clearly shows that it is possible for something smaller than the atom to exist, a fact discovered only recently by modern science.

4 A similar message is conveyed in the Qur'an in 10:61.

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

## III. GEOGRAPHY

### THE WATER CYCLE

In 1580, Bernard Palissy was the first man to describe the present day concept of 'water cycle'. He described how water evaporates from the oceans and cools to form clouds. The clouds move inland where they rise, condense and fall as rain. This water gathers as lakes and streams and flows back to the ocean in a continuous cycle. In the 7th century B.C., Thales of Miletus believed that surface spray of the oceans was picked up by the wind and carried inland to fall as rain. In earlier times people did not know the source of underground water. They thought the water of the oceans, under the effect of winds, was thrust towards the interior of the continents. They also believed that the water returned by a secret passage, or the Great Abyss. This passage is connected to the oceans and has been called the 'Tartarus', since Plato's time. Even Descartes, a great thinker of the eighteenth century, subscribed to this view. Till the nineteenth century, Aristotle's theory was prevalent. According to this theory, water was condensed in cool mountain caverns and formed underground lakes that fed springs. Today, we know that the rainwater that seeps into the cracks of the ground is responsible for this. The water cycle is described by the Qur'aan in the following verses: **"Seest thou not that Allah Sends down rain from The sky, and leads it Through springs in the earth? Then He causes to grow, Therewith, produce of various Colours."** [Al-Qur'aan 39:21]

**"He sends down rain From the sky And with it gives life to The earth**



after it is dead: Verily in that are Signs For those who are wise.” [Al-Qur’aan 30:24]

“And We send down water From the sky according to (Due) measure, and We cause it To soak in the soil; And We certainly are able To drain it off (with ease).” [Al-Qur’aan 23:18]

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

No other text dating back 1400 years ago gives such an accurate description of the water cycle.

#### WINDS IMPREGNATE THE CLOUDS

“And We send the fecundating winds, Then cause the rain to descend From the sky, therewith providing You with water (in abundance).” [Al-Qur’aan 15:22]

The Arabic word used here is *lawâqih*, which is the plural of *laqih* from *laqaha*, which means to impregnate or fecundate. In this context, impregnate means that the wind pushes the clouds together increasing the condensation that causes lightning and thus rain. A similar description is found in the Qur’aan: “It is Allah Who sends The Winds, and they raise The Clouds: then does He Spread them in the sky As He wills, and break them Into fragments, until thou seest Raindrops issue from the midst Thereof: then when He has Made them reach such Of His servants as He wills, Behold, they do rejoice!” [Al-Qur’aan 30:48]

The Qur’aanic descriptions are absolutely accurate and agree perfectly with modern data on hydrology. The water cycle is described in several verses of the Glorious Qur’aan, including 3:9, 7:57, 13:17, 25:48- 49, 36:34, 50:9-11, 56:68-70, 67:30 and 86:11.

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

#### IV. GEOLOGY

##### MOUNTAINS ARE LIKE PEGS (STAKES)

In Geology, the phenomenon of ‘folding’ is a recently discovered fact. Folding is responsible for the formation of mountain ranges. The earth’s crust, on which we live, is like a solid shell, while the deeper layers are hot and fluid, and thus inhospitable to any form of life. It is also known that the stability of the mountains is linked to the phenomenon of folding, for it was the folds that were to provide foundations for the reliefs that constitute the mountains. Geologists tell us that the radius of the Earth is about 3,750 miles and the crust on which we live is very thin, ranging between 1 to 30 miles. Since the crust is thin, it has a high possibility of shaking. Mountains act like stakes or tent pegs that hold the earth’s crust and give it stability. The Qur’aan contains exactly such a description in the following verse: “Have We not made The earth as a wide Expanse, And the mountains as pegs?” [Al-Qur’aan 78:6-7]

The word *awtad* means stakes or pegs (like those used to anchor a tent); they are the deep foundations of geological folds. A book named ‘Earth’ is considered as a basic reference textbook on geology in many universities around the world. One of the authors of this book is Frank Press, who was the President of the Academy of Sciences in the USA for 12 years and was the Science Advisor to former US President Jimmy Carter. In this book he illustrates the mountain in a wedge-shape and the mountain itself as a small part of the whole, whose root is deeply entrenched in the ground.<sup>5</sup> According to Dr. Press, the mountains play an important role in stabilizing the crust of the earth.

The Qur’aan clearly mentions the function of the mountains in preventing the earth from shaking: “And We have set on the earth Mountains standing firm, Lest it should shake with them.” [Al-Qur’aan 21:31]

5 *Earth*, Press and Siever, p. 435. Also see *Earth Science*, Tarbuck and Lutgens, p. 157. The Qur'aanic descriptions are in perfect agreement with modern geological data. **MOUNTAINS FIRMLY FIXED**

The surface of the earth is broken into many rigid plates that are about 100 km in thickness. These plates float on a partially molten region called asthenosphere. Mountain formations occur at the boundary of the plates. The earth's crust is 5 km thick below oceans, about 35 km thick below flat continental surfaces and almost 80 km thick below great mountain ranges. These are the strong foundations on which mountains stand. The Qur'aan also speaks about the strong mountain foundations in the following verse: **“And the mountains Hath He firmly fixed.”** [Al-Qur'aan 79:32] 6

6 A similar message is contained in the Qur'an in 88:19, 31:10 and 16:15. The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible? Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

#### V. OCEANOLOGY

##### **BARRIER BETWEEN SWEET AND SALT WATERS**

Consider the following Qur'aanic verses: **“He has let free the two bodies Of flowing water, Meeting together: Between them is a Barrier Which they do not transgress.”** [Al-Qur'aan 55:19-20]

In the Arabic text the word *barzakh* means a barrier or a partition. This barrier is not a physical partition. The Arabic word *maraja* literally means 'they both meet and mix with each other'. Early commentators of the Qur'aan were unable to explain the two opposite meanings for the two bodies of water, i.e. they meet and mix, and at the same time, there is a barrier between them. Modern Science has discovered that in the places where two different seas meet, there is a barrier between them. This barrier divides the two seas so that each sea has its own temperature, salinity and density. 7 Oceanologists are now in a better position to explain this verse. There is slanted unseen water barrier between the two seas through which water from one sea passes to the other. But when the water from one sea enters the other sea, it loses its distinctive characteristic and becomes homogenized with the other water. In a way this barrier serves as a transitional homogenizing area for the two waters. This scientific phenomenon mentioned in the Qur'aan was also confirmed by Dr. William Hay who is a well-known marine scientist and Professor of Geological Sciences at the University of Colorado, U.S.A. The Qur'aan mentions this phenomenon also in the following verse: **“And made a separating bar between the two bodies Of flowing water?”** [Al-Qur'aan 27:61]

This phenomenon occurs in several places, including the divider between the Mediterranean and the Atlantic Ocean at Gibraltar. But when the Qur'aan speaks about the divider between fresh and salt water, it mentions the 7 *Principles of Oceanography*, Davis, pp. 92-93.

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

existence of “a forbidding partition” with the barrier. **“It is He Who has Let free the two bodies Of flowing water: One palatable and sweet, And the other salty and bitter; Yet has He Made a barrier between them, And a partition that is forbidden To be passed.”** [Al-Qur'aan 25:53]

Modern science has discovered that in estuaries, where fresh (sweet) and saltwater meet, the situation is somewhat different from that found in places where two seas meet. It has been discovered that what distinguishes fresh water from salt water in estuaries is a “pycnocline zone with a marked density discontinuity separating the two layers.” 8 This partition (zone of separation) has salinity different from both the fresh water and the salt water. 9

This phenomenon occurs in several places, including Egypt, where the river Nile flows into the Mediterranean Sea.

## DARKNESS IN THE DEPTHS OF THE OCEAN

Prof. Durga Rao is an expert in the field of Marine Geology and was a professor at King Abdul Aziz University in Jeddah. He was asked to comment on the following verse: **“Or (the Unbelievers’ state) Is like the depths of darkness In a vast deep ocean, Overwhelmed with billow Topped by billow, Topped by (dark) clouds: Depths of darkness, one Above another: if a man Stretches out his hand, He can hardly see it! For any to whom Allah Giveth not light, there is no light!”** [Al-Qur’aan 24:40]

Prof. Rao said that scientists have only now been able to confirm, with the help of modern equipment that there is darkness in the depths of the ocean. Humans are unable to dive unaided underwater for more than 20 to 30 meters, and cannot survive in the deep oceanic regions at a depth of more than 200 meters. This verse does not refer to all seas because not every sea can be

8 *Oceanography*, Gross, p. 242. Also see *Introductory Oceanography*, Thurman, pp. 300-301.

9 *Oceanography*, Gross, p. 244 and *Introductory Oceanography*, Thurman, pp. 300-301.

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

described as having accumulated darkness layered one over another. It refers especially to a deep sea or deep ocean, as the Qur’aan says, “darkness in a vast deep ocean”. This layered darkness in a deep ocean is the result of two causes: A light ray is composed of seven colours. These seven colours are Violet, Indigo, Blue, Green, Yellow, Orange and Red (VIBGYOR). The light ray undergoes refraction when it hits water. The upper 10 to 15 metres of water absorb the red colour. Therefore if a diver is 25 metres under water and gets wounded, he would not be able to see the red colour of his blood, because the red colour does not reach this depth. Similarly orange rays are absorbed at 30 to 50 metres, yellow at 50 to 100 metres, green at 100 to 200 metres, and finally, blue beyond 200 metres and violet and indigo above 200 metres. Due to successive disappearance of colour, one layer after another, the ocean progressively becomes darker, i.e. darkness takes place in layers of light. Below a depth of 1000 meters there is complete darkness. 10

. The sun’s rays are absorbed by clouds, which in turn scatter light rays thus causing a layer of darkness under the clouds. This is the first layer of darkness. When light rays reach the surface of the ocean they are reflected by the wave surface giving it a shiny appearance. Therefore it is the waves which reflect light and cause darkness. The unreflected light penetrates into the depths of the ocean. Therefore the ocean has two parts. The surface characterized by light and warmth and the depth characterized by darkness. The surface is further separated from the deep part of the ocean by waves. The internal waves cover the deep waters of seas and oceans because the deep waters have a higher density than the waters above them. The darkness begins below the internal waves. Even the fish in the depths of the ocean cannot see; their only source of light is from their own bodies.

The Qur’aan rightly mentions: **“Darkness in a vast deep ocean overwhelmed with waves topped by waves”**.

10 *Oceans*, Elder and Pernetta, p. 27.

In other words, above these waves there are more types of waves, i.e. those found on the surface of the ocean. The Qur’aanic verse continues, “topped by (dark) clouds; depths of darkness, one above another.”

These clouds as explained are barriers one over the other that further cause darkness by absorption of colours at different levels.

Prof. Durga Rao concluded by saying, “1400 years ago a normal human being could not explain this phenomenon in so much detail. Thus the information

must have come from a supernatural source”.

## VI. BIOLOGY

### EVERY LIVING THING IS MADE OF WATER

Consider the following Qur’anic verse: **“Do not the Unbelievers see that the heavens and the earth were joined together (as one Unit of Creation), before We clove them asunder? We made from water every living thing. Will they not then believe?”** [Al-Qur’aan 21:30]

Only after advances have been made in science, do we now know that cytoplasm, the basic substance of the cell is made up of 80% water. Modern research has also revealed that most organisms consist of 50% to 90% water and that every living entity requires water for its existence. Was it possible 14 centuries ago for any human-being to guess that every living being was made of water? Moreover would such a guess be conceivable by a human being in the deserts of Arabia where there has always been scarcity of water? The following verse refers to the creation of animals from water: **“And Allah has created Every animal from water.”** [Al-Qur’aan 24:45]

The following verse refers to the creation of human beings from water: **“It is He Who has Created man from water: Then has He established Relationships of lineage And marriage: for thy Lord Has power (over all things).”** [Al-Qur’aan 25:54]

## VII. BOTANY

### PLANTS CREATED IN PAIRS, MALE AND FEMALE

Previously humans did not know that plants too have male and female gender distinctions. Botany states that every plant has a male and female gender. Even the plants that are unisexual have distinct elements of both male and female. **“And has sent Down water from the sky.’ With it have We produced Diverse pairs of plants Each separate from the others.”** [Al-Qur’aan 20:53]

### FRUITS CREATED IN PAIRS, MALE AND FEMALE

**“And fruit Of every kind He made In pairs, two and two.”** [Al-Qur’aan 13:3]

Fruit is the end product of reproduction of the superior plants. The stage preceding fruit is the flower, which has male and female organs (stamens and ovules). Once pollen has been carried to the flower, they bear fruit, which in turn matures and frees its seed. All fruits therefore imply the existence of male and female organs; a fact that is mentioned in the Qur’aan.

In certain species, fruit can come from non-fertilized flowers (parthenocarpic fruit) e.g. bananas, certain types of pineapple, fig, orange, vine, etc. They also have definite sexual characteristics.

### EVERYTHING MADE IN PAIRS

**“And of everything We have created pairs.”** [Al-Qur’aan 51:49]

This refers to things other than humans, animals, plants and fruits. It may also be referring to a phenomenon like electricity in which the atoms consist of negatively – and positively – charged electrons and protons.

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

**“Glory to Allah, Who created In pairs all things that The earth produces, as well as Their own (human) kind And (other) things of which They have no knowledge.”** [Al-Qur’aan 36:36]

The Qur’aan here says that everything is created in pairs, including things that the humans do not know at present and may discover later.

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

## VIII. ZOOLOGY

### ANIMALS AND BIRDS LIVE IN COMMUNITIES

**“There is not an animal (That lives) on the earth, Nor a being that flies On its wings, but (forms Part of) communities like you.”** [Al-Qur’aan 6:38]

Research has shown that animals and birds live in communities, i.e. they organize, and live and work together.

#### THE FLIGHT OF BIRDS

Regarding the flight of birds the Qur’aan says: **“Do they not look at The birds, held poised In the midst of (the air And) the sky? Nothing Holds them up but (the power Of) Allah. Verily in this Are Signs for those who believe.”** [Al-Qur’aan 16:79] A similar message is repeated in the Qur’aan in the verse: **“Do they not observe The birds above them, Spreading their wings And folding them in? None can uphold them Except (Allah) Most Gracious: Truly it is He That watches over all things.”** [Al-Qur’aan 67:19]

The Arabic word *amsaka* literally means, ‘to put one’s hand on, seize, hold, hold someone back,’ which expresses the idea that Allah holds the bird up in His power. These verses stress the extremely close dependence of the birds’ behaviour on Divine order. Modern scientific data has shown the degree of perfection attained by certain species of birds with regard to the programming of their movements. It is only the existence of a migratory programme in the genetic code of the birds that can explain the long and complicated journey that very young birds, without any prior experience and without any guide, are able to accomplish. They are also able to return to the departure point on a definite date.

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

Prof. Hamburger in his book ‘Power and Fragility’ gives the example of ‘mutton-bird’ that lives in the Pacific with its journey of over 15,000 miles in the shape of figure ‘8’. It makes this journey over a period of 6 months and comes back to its departure point with a maximum delay of one week. The highly complicated instructions for such a journey have to be contained in the birds’ nervous cells. They are definitely programmed. Should we not reflect on the identity of this ‘Programmer’?

#### THE BEE

**“And thy Lord taught the Bee To build its cells in hills, On trees, and in (men’s) habitations; Then to eat of all The produce (of the earth), And find with skill the spacious Paths of its Lord.”** [Al-Qur’aan 16:68-69]

Von-Frisch received the Nobel Prize in 1973 for his research on the behaviour and communication of the bees. The bee, after discovering any new garden or flower, goes back and tells its fellow bees the exact direction and map to get there, which is known as ‘bee dance’. The meanings of this insect’s movements that are intended to transmit information between worker bees have been discovered scientifically using photography and other methods. The Qur’aan mentions in the above verse how the bee finds with skill the spacious paths of its Lord.

The worker bee or the soldier bee is a female bee. In Soorah Al-Nahl chapter no. 16, verses 68 and 69 the gender used for the bee is the female gender (*fa’sluki* and *kuli*), indicating that the bee that leaves its home for gathering food is a female bee. In other words the soldier or worker bee is a female bee. In fact, in Shakespeare’s play, ‘Henry the Fourth’, some of the characters speak about bees and mention that the bees are soldiers and that they have a king. That is what people thought in Shakespearean times. They thought that the worker bees are male bees and they go home and are answerable to a king bee. This, however, is not true. The worker bees are females and they do not

report to a king bee but to a queen bee. But it took modern investigations in the last 300 years to discover this.

#### **SPIDER'S WEB / HOME IS FRAGILE**

The Qur'aan mentions in Soorah Al-'Ankabût, **"The parable of those who Take protectors other than Allah Is that of the Spider, Who builds (to itself) A house; but truly The flimsiest of houses Is the Spider's house – If they but knew."** [Al-Qur'aan 29:41]

Besides giving the physical description of the spider's web as being very flimsy, delicate and weak, the Qur'aan also stresses on the flimsiness of the relationship in the spider's house, where the female spider many a times kills its mate, the male spider.

#### **LIFESTYLE AND COMMUNICATION OF ANTS**

Consider the following Qur'aanic verse: **"And before Solomon were marshaled His hosts – of Jinns and men And birds, and they were all Kept in order and ranks. "At length, when they came To a (lowly) valley of ants, One of the ants said: 'O ye ants, get into Your habitations, lest Solomon And his hosts crush you (Under foot) without knowing it.'"** [Al-Qur'aan 27:17-18]

In the past, some people would have probably mocked at the Qur'aan, taking it to be a fairy tale book in which ants talk to each other and communicate sophisticated messages. In recent times, research has shown us several facts about the lifestyle of ants, which were not known earlier to humankind.

Research has shown that the animals or insects whose lifestyle is closest in resemblance to the lifestyle of human beings are the ants. This can be seen from the following findings regarding ants:

- (a) The ants bury their dead in a manner similar to the humans.
- (b) They have a sophisticated system of division of labour, whereby they have managers, supervisors, foremen, workers, etc.
- (c) Once in a while they meet among themselves to have a 'chat'.
- (d) They have an advanced method of communication among themselves.

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

- (e) They hold regular markets wherein they exchange goods.
- (f) They store grains for long periods in winter and if the grain begins to bud, they cut the roots, as if they understand that if they leave it to grow, it will rot. If the grains stored by them get wet due to rains, they take these grains out into the sunlight to dry, and once these are dry, they take them back inside as though they know that humidity will cause development of root systems and thereafter rotting of the grain.

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

#### **IX. MEDICINE**

##### **HONEY HAS HEALING PROPERTIES**

The bee assimilates juices of various kinds of flowers and fruit and forms within its body the honey, which it stores in its cells of wax. Only a couple of centuries ago man came to know that honey comes from the belly of the bee. This fact was mentioned in the Qur'aan 1,400 years ago in the following verse: **"There issues From within their bodies A drink of varying colours, Wherein is healing for men."** [Al-Qur'aan 16:69]

We are now aware that honey has a healing property and also a mild antiseptic property. The Russians used honey to cover their wounds in World War II. The wound would retain moisture and would leave very little scar tissue. Due to the density of honey, no fungus or bacteria would grow in the wound. A person suffering from an allergy of a particular plant may be given

honey from that plant so that the person develops resistance to that allergy. Honey is rich in fructose and vitamin K. Thus the knowledge contained in the Qur'aan regarding honey, its origin and properties, was far ahead of the time it was revealed.

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

#### X. PHYSIOLOGY

##### BLOOD CIRCULATION AND THE PRODUCTION OF MILK

The Qur'aan was revealed 600 years before the Muslim scientist Ibn Nafees described the circulation of the blood and 1,000 years before William Harwey brought this understanding to the Western world. Roughly thirteen centuries before it was known what happens in the intestines to ensure that organs are nourished by the process of digestive absorption, a verse in the Qur'aan described the source of the constituents of milk, in conformity with these notions. To understand the Qur'aanic verse concerning the above concepts, it is important to know that chemical reactions occur in the intestines and that, from there, substances extracted from food pass into the blood stream via a complex system; sometimes by way of the liver, depending on their chemical nature. The blood transports them to all the organs of the body, among which are the milk-producing mammary glands.

In simple terms, certain substances from the contents of the intestines enter into the vessels of the intestinal wall itself, and these substances are transported by the blood stream to the various organs.

This concept must be fully appreciated if we wish to understand the following verse in the Qur'aan: **“And verily in cattle there is A lesson for you. We give you to drink Of what is inside their bodies, Coming from a conjunction Between the contents of the Intestine and the blood, A milk pure and pleasant for Those who drink it.”** [Al-Qur'aan 16:66] 11

**“And in cattle (too) ye Have an instructive example: From within their bodies We produce (milk) for you To drink; there are, in them, (Besides),**

11 Translation of this Qur'aanic verse is from the book “The Bible, the Qur'an and Science” by Dr. Maurice Bucaille.

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

**numerous (other) Benefits for you; And of their (meat) ye eat.”** [Al-Qur'aan 23:21]

The Qur'aanic description of the production of milk in cattle is strikingly similar to what modern physiology has discovered.

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

#### XI. EMBRYOLOGY

##### MAN IS CREATED FROM ALAQ

##### A LEECH-LIKE SUBSTANCE

A few years ago a group of Arabs collected all information concerning embryology from the Qur'aan, and followed the instruction of the Qur'aan:

**“If ye realise this not, ask Of those who possess the Message.”** [Al-Qur'aan 16:43 & 21:7]

All the information from the Qur'aan so gathered, was translated into English and presented to Prof. (Dr.) Keith Moore, who was the Professor of Embryology and Chairman of the Department of Anatomy at the University of Toronto, in Canada. At present he is one of the highest authorities in the field of Embryology. He was asked to give his opinion regarding the information present in the Qur'aan concerning the field of embryology. After

carefully examining the translation of the Qur'aanic verses presented to him, Dr. Moore said that most of the information concerning embryology mentioned in the Qur'aan is in perfect conformity with modern discoveries in the field of embryology and does not conflict with them in any way. He added that there were however a few verses, on whose scientific accuracy he could not comment. He could not say whether the statements were true or false, since he himself was not aware of the information contained therein.

There was also no mention of this information in modern writings and studies on embryology. One such verse is: **“Proclaim! (or Read!) In the name Of thy Lord and Cherisher, Who created – Created man, out of A (mere) clot Of congealed blood.”** [Al-Qur'aan 96:1-2]

The word *alaq* besides meaning a congealed clot of blood also means something that clings, a leech-like substance. Dr. Keith Moore had no knowledge whether an embryo in the initial stages appears like a leech. To check this out he studied the initial stage of the embryo under a very powerful microscope in his laboratory and compared what he observed with a diagram of a leech and he was astonished at the striking resemblance between the two! The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

In the same manner, he acquired more information on embryology that was hitherto not known to him, from the Qur'aan. Dr. Keith Moore answered about eighty questions dealing with embryological data mentioned in the Qur'aan and Hadith. Noting that the information contained in the Qur'aan and Hadith was in full agreement with the latest discoveries in the field of embryology, Prof. Moore said, “If I was asked these questions thirty years ago, I would not have been able to answer half of them for lack of scientific information”

Dr. Keith Moore had earlier authored the book, ‘The Developing Human’. After acquiring new knowledge from the Qur'aan, he wrote, in 1982, the 3rd edition of the same book, ‘The Developing Human’. The book was the recipient of an award for the best medical book written by a single author. This book has been translated into several major languages of the world and is used as a textbook of embryology in the first year of medical studies. In 1981, during the Seventh Medical Conference in Dammam, Saudi Arabia, Dr. Moore said, “It has been a great pleasure for me to help clarify statements in the Qur'aan about human development. It is clear to me that these statements must have come to Muhammad from God or Allah, because almost all of this knowledge was not discovered until many centuries later. This proves to me that Muhammad must have been a messenger of God or Allah.” 12

Dr. Joe Leigh Simpson, Chairman of the Department of Obstetrics and Gynaecology, at the Baylor College of Medicine, Houston, U.S.A., proclaims: “...these Hadiths, sayings of Muhammad (pbuh) could not have been obtained on the basis of the scientific knowledge that was available at the time of the writer (7th century). It follows that not only is there no conflict between genetics and religion (Islam) but in fact religion (Islam) may guide science by adding revelation to some of the traditional scientific approaches... there exist statements in the Qur'aan shown centuries later to 12 The reference for this statment is the video tape titled ‘*This is the Truth*’. For a copy of this video tape contact the Islamic Research Foundation. The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

be valid which support knowledge in the Qur'aan having been derived from God.”  
**MAN CREATED FROM A DROP EMITTED FROM BETWEEN**



## THE BACK BONE AND THE RIBS

**“Now let man but think From what he is created! He is created from A drop emitted – Proceeding from between The back bone and the ribs.”**

[Al-Qur’aan 86:5-7]

In embryonic stages, the reproductive organs of the male and female, i.e. the testicles and the ovaries, begin their development near the kidney between the spinal column and the eleventh and twelfth ribs. Later they descend; the female gonads (ovaries) stop in the pelvis while the male gonads (testicles) continue their descent before birth to reach the scrotum through the inguinal canal. Even in the adult after the descent of the reproductive organ, these organs receive their nerve supply and blood supply from the Abdominal Aorta, which is in the area between the backbone (spinal column) and the ribs. Even the lymphatic drainage and the venous return goes to the same area.

## HUMAN BEINGS CREATED FROM *NUTFAH*

(Minute Quantity of Liquid)

The Glorious Qur’aan mentions no less than eleven times that the human being is created from *nutfah*, which means a minute quantity of liquid or a trickle of liquid which remains after emptying a cup. This is mentioned in several verses of the Qur’aan including 22:5 and 23:13. 13

Science has confirmed in recent times that only one out of an average of three million sperms is required for fertilising the ovum. This means that only a 13 The same is also mentioned in the Qur’an in 16:4, 18:37, 35:11, 36:77, 40:67, 53:46, 75:37, 76:2 and 80:19.

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

1/three millionth part or 0.00003% of the quantity of sperms that are emitted is required for fertilisation.

## HUMAN BEINGS CREATED FROM *SULALAH*

(Quintessence of liquid)

**“And made his progeny From a quintessence Of the nature of A fluid despised.”** [Al-Qur’aan 32:8]

The Arabic word *sulalah* means quintessence or the best part of a whole. We have come to know now that only one single spermatozoon that penetrates the ovum is required for fertilization, out of the several millions produced by man. That one spermatozoon out of several millions, is referred to in the Qur’aan as *sulalah*. *Sulalah* also means gentle extraction from a fluid. The fluid refers to both male and female germinal fluids containing gametes. Both ovum and sperm are gently extracted from their environments in the process of fertilization.

## MAN CREATED FROM *NUTFATUN AMSHAAJ*

(Mingled liquids)

Consider the following Qur’aanic verse: **“Verily We created Man from a drop Of mingled sperm.”** [Al-Qur’aan 76:2]

The Arabic word *nutfatin amshaajin* means mingled liquids. According to some commentators of the Qur’aan, mingled liquids refers to the male or female agents or liquids. After mixture of male and female gamete, the zygote still remains *nutfah*. Mingled liquids can also refer to spermatid fluid that is formed of various secretions that come from various glands.

Therefore *nutfatin amsaj*, i.e. a minute quantity of mingled fluids refers to the male and female gametes (germinal fluids or cells) and part of the surrounding fluids.

The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

## SEX DETERMINATION

The sex of a fetus is determined by the nature of the sperm and not the ovum. The sex of the child, whether female or male, depends on whether the 23rd pair of chromosomes is XX or XY respectively. Primarily sex determination occurs at fertilization and depends upon the type of sex chromosome in the sperm that fertilizes an ovum. If it is an 'X' bearing sperm that fertilizes the ovum, the fetus is a female and if it is a 'Y' bearing sperm then the fetus is a male. **“That He did create In pairs – male and female, From a seed when lodged (In its place).”** [Al-Qur’aan 53:45-46]

The Arabic word *nutfah* means a minute quantity of liquid and *tumnâ* means ejaculated or planted. Therefore *nutfah* specifically refers to sperm because it is ejaculated. The Qur’aan says: **“Was he not a drop of sperm emitted (In lowly form)? “Then did he become A clinging clot; Then did (Allah) make And fashion (him) In due proportion. “And of him He made Two sexes, male And female.”** [Al-Qur’aan 75:37-39]

Here again it is mentioned that a small quantity (drop) of sperm (indicated by the word *nutfatan min maniyin*) which comes from the man is responsible for the sex of the fetus.

Mothers-in-law in the Indian subcontinent, by and large prefer having male grandchildren and often blame their daughters-in-law if the child is not of the desired sex. If only they knew that the determining factor is the nature of the male sperm and not the female ovum! If they were to blame anybody, they should blame their sons and not their daughters-in-law since both the Qur’aan and Science hold that it is the male fluid that is responsible for the sex of the child!

## FOETUS PROTECTED BY THREE VEILS OF DARKNESS

**“He makes you, In the wombs of your mothers, In stages, one after another, In three veils of darkness.”** [Al-Qur’aan 39:6]

According to Prof. Keith Moore these three veils of darkness in the Qur’aan refer to:

- (i) anterior abdominal wall of the mother
- (ii) the uterine wall
- (iii) the amnio-chorionic membrane.

## EMBRYONIC STAGES

**“Man We did create From a quintessence (of clay); Then We placed him As (a drop of) sperm In a place of rest, firmly fixed; Then We made the sperm Into a clot of congealed blood; Then of that clot We made A (foetus) lump; then We Made out of that lump Bones and clothed the bones With flesh; then We developed Out of it another creature. So blessed be Allah, The Best to create!”** [Al-Qur’aan 23:12-14]

In this verse Allah states that man is created from a small quantity of liquid which is placed in a place of rest, firmly fixed (well established or lodged) for which the Arabic word *qarârin makîn* is used.

The uterus is well protected from the posterior by the spinal column supported firmly by the back muscles. The embryo is further protected by the amniotic sac containing the amniotic fluid. Thus the foetus has a well protected dwelling place. This small quantity of fluid is made into *alaqah*, meaning something which clings. It also means a leech-like substance. Both descriptions are scientifically acceptable as in the very early stages the foetus clings to the wall and also appears to resemble the leech in shape. It also behaves like a

leech (blood sucker) and acquires its blood supply from the mother through the placenta. The third meaning of the word *alaqah* is a blood clot. During The Qur’aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

this *alaqah* stage, which spans the third and fourth week of pregnancy, the

blood clots within closed vessels. Hence the embryo acquires the appearance of a blood clot in addition to acquiring the appearance of a leech. In 1677, Hamm and Leeuwenhoek were the first scientists to observe human sperm cells (spermatozoa) using a microscope. They thought that a sperm cell contained a miniature human being which grew in the uterus to form a newborn. This was known as the perforation theory. When scientists discovered that the ovum was bigger than the sperm, it was thought by De Graf and others that the foetus existed in a miniature form in the ovum. Later, in the 18th century Maupertuis propagated the theory of biparental inheritance. The *alaqah* is transformed into *mudghah* which means 'something that is chewed (having teeth marks)' and also something that is tacky and small which can be put in the mouth like gum. Both these explanations are scientifically correct. Prof. Keith Moore took a piece of plaster seal and made it into the size and shape of the early stage of foetus and chewed it between the teeth to make it into a 'Mudgha'. He compared this with the photographs of the early stage of foetus. The teeth marks resembled the 'somites' which is the early formation of the spinal column. This *mudghah* is transformed into bones (*izâm*). The bones are clothed with intact flesh or muscles (*lahm*). Then Allah makes it into another creature. Prof. Marshall Johnson is one of the leading scientists in US, and is the head of the Department of Anatomy and Director of the Daniel Institute at the Thomas Jefferson University in Philadelphia in US. He was asked to comment on the verses of the Qur'aan dealing with embryology. He said that the verses of the Qur'aan describing the embryological stages cannot be a coincidence. He said it was probable that Muhammad (pbuh) had a powerful microscope. On being reminded that the Qur'aan was revealed 1400 years ago, and microscopes were invented centuries after the time of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh), Prof. Johnson laughed and admitted that the first microscope invented could not magnify more than 10 times and could not show a clear picture. Later he said: "I see nothing here in conflict with the concept that Divine intervention was involved when Muhammad (pbuh) recited the Qur'aan."

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

According to Dr. Keith Moore, the modern classification of embryonic development stages which is adopted throughout the world, is not easily comprehensible, since it identifies stages on a numerical basis i.e. stage I, stage II, etc. The divisions revealed in the Qur'aan are based on distinct and easily identifiable forms or shapes, which the embryo passes through. These are based on different phases of prenatal development and provide elegant scientific descriptions that are comprehensible and practical.

Similar embryological stages of human development have been described in the following verses: **"Was he not a drop Of sperm emitted (In lowly form)? Then did he become a clinging clot; Then did (Allah) make and fashion (him) In due proportion. And of him He made Two sexes, male and female."** [Al-Qur'aan 75:37-39]

**"Him Who created thee, fashioned thee in due proportion, And gave thee a just bias; In whatever Form He wills, Does He put thee together."** [Al-Qur'aan 82:7-8]

#### EMBRYO PARTLY FORMED AND PARTLY UNFORMED

At the *mudghah* stage, if an incision is made in the embryo and the internal organ is dissected, it will be seen that most of them are formed while the others are not yet completely formed.

According to Prof. Johnson, if we describe the embryo as a complete creation, then we are only describing that part which is already created. If we describe

it as an incomplete creation, then we are only describing that part which is not yet created. So, is it a complete creation or an incomplete creation? There is no better description of this stage of embryogenesis than the Qur'aanic description, "partly formed and partly unformed", as in the following verse:

**"We created you Out of dust, then out of Sperm, then out of a leech-like Clot, then out of a morsel Of flesh, partly formed And partly unformed."**

[Al-Qur'aan 22:5]

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible? Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

Scientifically we know that at this early stage of development there are some cells which are differentiated and there are some cells that are undifferentiated – some organs are formed and yet others unformed.

#### **SENSE OF HEARING AND SIGHT**

The first sense to develop in a developing human embryo is hearing. The foetus can hear sounds after the 24th week. Subsequently, the sense of sight is developed and by the 28th week, the retina becomes sensitive to light.

Consider the following Qur'aanic verses related to the development of the senses in the embryo: **"And He gave You (the faculties of) hearing and sight and feeling (And understanding)."** [Al-Qur'aan 32:9]

**"Verily We created Man from a drop Of mingled sperm, In order to try him: So We gave him (the gifts), Of Hearing and Sight."** [Al-Qur'aan 76:2]

**"It is He Who has created For you (the faculties of) Hearing, sight, feeling And understanding: little thanks It is ye give!"** [Al-Qur'aan 23:78]

In all these verses the sense of hearing is mentioned before that of sight. Thus the Qur'aanic description matches with the discoveries in modern embryology.

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

## **XII. GENERAL SCIENCE**

### **FINGERPRINTS**

**"Does man think that We Cannot assemble his bones? Nay, We are able to put Together in perfect order The very tips of his fingers."** [Al-Qur'aan 75:3-4]

Unbelievers argue regarding resurrection taking place after bones of dead people have disintegrated in the earth and how each individual would be identified on the Day of Judgement. Almighty Allah answers that He can not only assemble our bones but can also reconstruct perfectly our very fingertips.

Why does the Qur'aan, while speaking about determination of the identity of the individual, speak specifically about fingertips? In 1880, fingerprinting became the scientific method of identification, after research done by Sir Francis Golt. No two persons in the world can ever have exactly the same fingerprint pattern. That is the reason why police forces worldwide use fingerprints to identify the criminal. 1400 years ago, who could have known the uniqueness of each human's fingerprint? Surely it could have been none other than the Creator Himself!

### **PAIN RECEPTORS PRESENT IN THE SKIN**

It was thought that the sense of feeling and pain was only dependent on the brain. Recent discoveries prove that there are pain receptors present in the skin without which a person would not be able to feel pain. When a doctor examines a patient suffering from burn injuries, he verifies the degree of burns by a pinprick. If the patient feels pain, the doctor is happy, because it indicates that the burns are superficial and the pain receptors are intact. On the other hand if the patient does not feel any pain, it indicates that it is a deep

burn and the pain receptors have been destroyed. The Qur'aan gives an indication of the existence of pain receptors in the following verse: **“Those who reject Our signs, We shall soon Cast into the Fire; As often as their skins Are roasted through, We shall change them For fresh skins, That they may taste The Penalty: for Allah Is Exalted in Power, Wise.”** [Al-Qur'aan 4:56]

Prof. Tagatat Tejasen, Chairman of the Department of Anatomy at Chiang Mai University in Thailand, has spent a great amount of time on research of pain receptors. Initially he could not believe that the Qur'aan mentioned this scientific fact 1,400 years ago. He later verified the translation of this particular Qur'aanic verse. Prof. Tejasen was so impressed by the scientific accuracy of the Qur'aanic verse, that at the 8th Saudi Medical Conference held in Riyadh on the Scientific Signs of Qur'aan and Sunnah he proclaimed in public: “There is no God but Allah and Muhammad (pbuh) is His Messenger.”

The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible?

Distributed by AHYA Multi-Media <http://www.ahya.org>

#### CONCLUSION

To attribute the presence of scientific facts in the Qur'aan to coincidence would be against common sense and a true scientific approach. The Qur'aan invites all humans to reflect on the Creation of this universe in the verse:

**“Behold! In the creation Of the heavens and the earth, And the alternation Of Night and Day – There are indeed Signs For men of understanding.”** [Al-Qur'aan 3:190]

The scientific evidences of the Qur'aan clearly prove its Divine Origin. No human could have produced a book, fourteen hundred years ago, that would contain profound scientific facts, to be discovered by humankind centuries later. The Qur'aan, however, is not a book of Science but a book of ‘Signs’. These signs invite Man to realize the purpose of his existence on earth, and to live in harmony with Nature. The Qur'aan is truly a message from Allah, the Creator and Sustainer of the universe. It contains the same message of the Oneness of God, that was preached by all prophets, right from Adam, Moses, Jesus to Muhammad (peace be upon them).

Several detailed tomes have been written on the subject of Qur'aan and modern science and further research in this field is on. Inshallah, this research will help mankind to come closer to the Word of the Almighty. This booklet contains only a few of the scientific facts present in the Qur'aan. I cannot claim to have done full justice to the subject. Prof.

Tejasen accepted Islam on the strength of just one scientific ‘sign’ mentioned in the Qur'aan. Some people may require ten signs while some may require hundred signs to be convinced about the Divine Origin of the Qur'aan. Some would be unwilling to accept the Truth even after being shown a thousand signs. The Qur'aan condemns such a closed mentality in the verse: **“Deaf, dumb and blind, They will not return (To the path).”** [Al-Qur'aan 2:18]

The Qur'aan contains a complete code of life for the individual and society. Alhamdulillah (Praise be to Allah), the Qur'aanic way of life is far superior to the ‘isms’ that modern man has invented out of sheer ignorance. Who can give better guidance than the Creator Himself?

I pray that this humble effort is accepted by Allah, to whom I pray for mercy and guidance (Aameen).

*God forbids you not, with regards to those who fight you not for (your) faith nor drive you out of your homes, from dealing kindly and justly with them; for God loveth those who are just*  
(Qur'an, 60:8)

## First 2 of the 10 Commandments

I am the Lord thy God, Thou shalt have no other gods before me.

Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven images.

### SURAT AL IKHLAS (MAKKAH)

- 1) Say he is Allah one & only
- (2) Allah, the eternal, absolute
- 3) He begets not, nor is he begotten
- (4) And there is none like unto him (Al-Quran)

The original

quran is 100% accurate in the Arabic language & its 1 only. But in English there are couple of translations of the same 1 arabic quran. so if some 1 wants to understand the quran properly he should read it in couple of translations of the same 1 arabic quran & learn some Arabic to understand the quran more accurately.

Adam, Abraham, Noah, Moses, Jesus, Muhammad were all messengers & prophets of 1 God Allah so Islam is the 1<sup>st</sup> religion & it's the last religion because God is Allah & God is forever so is God's religion which is only Islam & it is also forever. Finally Islam always existed even before Adam, Abraham, Noah, Moses, Jesus & Muhammad because it's the only true religion from God Allah.

### ISA "Jesus", the prophet of Islam

#### Introduction

#### MARYAM, THE MOTHER OF ^ISA (Jesus)

#### THE BIRTH OF ^ISA (Jesus)

#### EARLY LIFE OF PROPHET ^ISA (Jesus)

#### THEREVELATION OF PROPHETHOOD

#### THE INJIL (BIBLE)

#### THE ASCENSION OF PROPHET ^ISA (Jesus)

#### PROPHET ^ISA'S (Jesus) DESCENT TO EARTH

#### CONCLUSION

### Introduction

Allah sent many messengers to the humans as a mercy from Him. Allah sent them all to teach the people what is the correct and acceptable worship of Allah--their Creator and the Creator of everything. All the prophets of Allah, the first of whom was Adam and the last of whom is Muhammad, came with one Religion--Islam, one creed--the belief in the Oneness of Allah. They all taught that Allah is attributed with all the perfect attributes and that He does not resemble any of His creations. They taught what Allah ordered us to perform with and refrain from in this life. They taught there is the Judgment Day in which each one of us will be judged as to whether or not we fulfilled our obligations in this life. None of them taught their people what contradicts the belief in the Oneness of Allah. Each one of them ordered their followers to believe in the rest of the prophets. Imam al-Bukhariyy related that Prophet Muhammad, sallallahu alayhi wa sallam, said:

which means: << The prophets are like brothers from the same father with different mothers. Their Religion is one although their Shari'ah (rules of the Religion) differed. I am the most deserving of Prophet ^Isa. There was no other prophet between us.>>

Allah revealed Prophet ^Isa (Jesus) as the messenger before Prophet Muhammad. He was one of the five best messengers of Allah, called Ulul-^Azm, those with the highest status, who were the most patient. He was ^Isa, the son of Maryam, the daughter of ^Imran, from the sons of Israel. Prophet ^Isa, as all the prophets, was truthful in what he conveyed from Allah, and although today we follow the Shari'ah of Prophet Muhammad, Muslims respect, love, and believe in ^Isa and in his prophethood.

### MARYAM, THE MOTHER OF ^ISA (Jesus)

Maryam (Mary), the mother of ^Isa, was a pious Muslim woman from the offspring of Israel during the time of Prophet Zakariyya. Prophet Zakariyya was a prophet of Allah revealed to convey to the people to follow the Shari'ah revealed to Prophet Musa. In the Qur'an there is a chapter named Maryam referring to Maryam (Mary), the mother of ^Isa. This chapter talks about Maryam: her birth, her story, and the birth of Prophet ^Isa, and other things.

*Maryam's* mother conceived and delivered *Maryam* when she was an old woman, at an age when women usually can no longer have babies. One day *Maryam's* mother saw a bird feeding its young and she longed for a baby herself. She made a supplication to *Allah* to bless her with a child and vowed that she would make him a servant for the Holy House in Jerusalem, dedicated for worship, because she thought the child would be male. *Allah* answered her supplication and *Maryam's* mother conceived and delivered a baby girl. She named her "*Maryam*" and asked *Allah* to protect her and her offspring from evil.

Since *Maryam's* father had died, Prophet *Zakariyya* (who was the husband of *Maryam's* sister) became *Maryam's* guardian. From him, *Maryam* learned the Religion. She grew up as a righteous, pure, and pious Muslim woman worshipping *Allah* and endeavoring greatly in performing obedience to Him. Before she turned fourteen (14) years old, *Maryam* was a *waliyyah* (a very pious woman with a special status). She became the best of the women in the world. It is mentioned in the *Qur'an* that the angels said *Allah* chose *Maryam* and preferred her to the other women of the world. (*Al Imran*, 42-43).

---

### THE BIRTH OF <sup>^</sup>ISA(Jesus)

*Ibn Jarir* and others narrated that one day *Maryam* ran out of water. She asked her cousin, *Yusuf*, the son of *Ya<sup>^</sup>qub* to go with her to get some. He declined, saying he had his sufficiency for that day, so *Maryam* went to fetch water alone. There, she found *Jibril*, whom *Allah* had sent to her in the shape of a man. Thinking he was a human who might harm her, she asked refuge with *Allah* from him. *Jibril* told her, "I am the Messenger of your Lord to you. I was sent to give you a pious child who is pure from sins." *Maryam* told him, "How would I have a son? I have no husband, and I am not an adulterer or a fornicator." *Jibril* told her, "Creating a son without a father is an easy matter to *Allah*. *Allah* will make him a sign for the people and an indication of the Power of *Allah*. He will send him as a mercy from Him and an endowment to the one who follows him and believes in him. Creating him is a matter *Allah* willed and destined, so it will not be blocked or changed."

*Jibril* blew the soul of <sup>^</sup>*Isa* into *Maryam* and <sup>^</sup>*Isa's* soul entered into her womb. *Maryam* became pregnant with <sup>^</sup>*Isa*, peace be upon him. There is a difference of opinion as to the term of her pregnancy, some said nine months, some said eight, and some said other than that. However, when the signs of pregnancy became apparent on her, her cousin, *Yusuf* the Carpenter, was disturbed and did not know how to interpret that matter. If he wanted to accuse her he would remember how pious she was. If he wanted to declare her innocence, he would see the signs of pregnancy. So he decided to open the subject with her. He asked her, "Tell me, would plants grow without seeds? Would trees grow without rainfall? Would there be a child without a male?" To all these questions *Maryam* said "Yes." Then she asked him, "Did you not know *Allah* made the plants emerge without seeds the day He created them? Did you not know *Allah* created the trees the first time without rain? Did you not know *Allah* created *Adam* and *Hawwa'* (Eve) without a father or a mother?" *Yusuf* knew all these things and when she responded in this way, he felt assured of her innocence and that this was something special given to her by *Allah*.

When the signs of her pregnancy became apparent, *Maryam* went away from her people. The pangs of birth led her to the trunk of a dead palm tree. Out of her shyness from the people, and fearing they would accuse her of having done something ugly, she wished she was dead and not a trace of her could be found. *Jibril* called to her, comforting her. He told her *Allah* made a small river run under her from which she could drink, and should she shake the trunk of the dead palm tree next to her, it would turn green and moist dates would fall down from which she could eat and be nourished. *Jibril* told her when she faces her people with her son to tell anyone who questions her about him that she had made a vow not to talk to any human for that day. That day, *Maryam* gave birth to her son, <sup>^</sup>*Isa*, peace be upon him. Forty (40) days later she carried him back to her people. They accused her of having fornicated. In response, *Maryam* pointed to her son, meaning to tell them to talk to him. They were angered at this and thought she was mocking them by asking them to speak with a 40-day old baby lying in a small cradle. At this, *Allah* made <sup>^</sup>*Isa* speak. He said:

which are verses 30-33 of *Surat Maryam* and mean: [I am a slave of *Allah*. He will reveal the Book to me and make me a prophet. He blessed me wherever I am. In the rules revealed to me there will be a special attention given to Prayers and

Zakat. Allah predestined that I will be kind to my mother and not a tyrant with a bad ending. Peace was on me the day I was born. Peace will be on me on the day I will die and on the day I am raised alive again.] When Maryam's people heard that, they refrained from harming her or Prophet Zakariyya, about whom they had made ugly accusations. After Baby ^Isa spoke these words, he did not speak again until he became at an age when children normally begin to speak. ^Isa's speaking from the cradle was a preparation and a sign of his creed and coming prophethood, when he would call the people to believe in Allah, the One Who does not have a partner and to believe in the message of ^Isa--that he was the slave and messenger of Allah. The first words he spoke were, "I am a slave of Allah."

---

### EARLY LIFE OF PROPHET ^ISA(Jesus)

Lady Maryam took ^Isa to Egypt where they stayed for a period of time. Then they returned to the countries of ash-Sham--to a city known as an-Nasirah. ^Isa, peace be upon him, studied the Torah in the schools and memorized it. He spoke Syriac, the language of the people of Palestine at that time, and the language in which the Heavenly Book, called the Injil, was revealed to him. He was a pious worshipper of Allah, following the rules of the Torah revealed to Prophet Musa.

---

### THE REVELATION OF PROPHETHOOD

Allah sent the Revelation of Prophethood to ^Isa when he was thirty years old. Allah revealed to him new laws which abrogated some of the laws revealed to Prophet Musa. Prophet ^Isa conveyed the revelation to the people and called them to believe in his message.

Prophet ^Isa, like all the prophets of Allah, performed miracles. Allah sent all the prophets with miracles as a proof to their prophethood, so the people would witness, know about them, and believe in their prophethood. Many of Prophet ^Isa's miracles were in curing illnesses, to be a stronger proof of his truthfulness, since the people at his time were famous for being knowledgeable in the field of medicine. Prophet ^Isa cured those with seemingly incurable illnesses. Prophet ^Isa cured a man afflicted with leprosy. He put his honorable hand on the face of a man who was born blind and cured his sight. Once Prophet ^Isa supplicated to Allah to bring back to life one person who had died and was being carried to the burial place, and Allah brought this person back to life.

Prophet ^Isa had other kinds of miracles also. He formed the shape of bats from clay and then they would fly away a distance. One of the miracles of ^Isa is mentioned in the Qur'an in Surat al-Ma'idah, Verses 112-114, which tells about one time when Prophet ^Isa and the people who were with him reached to a place where there was not enough food for all the people with him. The students of ^Isa asked him to supplicate Allah for food which would come down on them from the sky. ^Isa made supplication to Allah and the angels brought down the food on a piece of material before the eyes of the people. Hundreds and hundreds of people ate from that food, and there was no sign the food had diminished in quantity. This miracle increased the belief of the believers. The blasphemers however, claimed ^Isa had performed sorcery on their eyes.

After his revelation, Prophet ^Isa lived on earth for about three years. He used to travel from place to place calling people to the proper worship of Allah. He was so detached from the worldly matters that he did not worry that he did not have a house to return to at night. He used to sleep wherever the night would fall on him, whether he was in an open land or in a sheltered place. He wore clothing made out of unwoven wool. He ate from the raw plants of the earth, without desiring to cook them. He did not marry or have children.

---

### THE INJIL(BIBLE)

^Isa received a Heavenly Book, the Injil, which contained the Shari'ah, (rules of the Religion) revealed to him. In it was the prohibition of associating partners with Allah. In it was the prohibition to consume the usurious gain (riba), pig meat, blood, and the meat of animals not slaughtered properly. It contained the order to perform the Prayer (with bowing and prostration) twice a day. It had the order to fast (but other than the month of Ramadan), and the order to perform taharah. Prophet ^Isa came with a Shari'ah that contained making permissible some of the things which had



been forbidden upon the children of Israel in the Torah. Although what is called "The Bible" today contains some true stories of Prophet ^Isa, it does not contain the true *Injil* which was revealed to him.

### THE ASCENSION OF PROPHET ^ISA(Jesus)

When Prophet ^Isa was 33 years old, the blasphemers among the offspring of Israel plotted to kill him, but *Allah* saved him from their harm. *Ibn AbiHatim* and *an-Nasa'iyy* narrated from the route of *Ibn ^Abbas* that he said:

Prophet ^Isa was in session with twelve of his elite companions in a house. He told them that among them would be who would blaspheme in the future. Then he asked them, "Who among you would want to be made to look like me, be killed in my place, and be my companion in Paradise." The youngest among them stood up and said, "Me." Prophet ^Isa told him to sit, then repeated his same question. Again, the same young man said, "Me." Again, Prophet ^Isa told him to sit, then again asked the same question. After the same young man volunteered for the third time, Prophet ^Isa received the Revelation that this young man would be the one who would be made to look like him and killed instead of him. Prophet ^Isa was raised to the sky from an opening in the ceiling of the house. When the Jews came after Prophet ^Isa, they saw that young man, whom *Allah* made to look like ^Isa. They took him, thinking he was Prophet ^Isa, and crucified him.

It should be noted here there are two widespread false stories about this matter. In one, it is claimed that one of ^Isa's students was paid a great sum of money to lead those Jews to

^Isa however *Allah* made him look like ^Isa, so they thought he was ^Isa and they crucified him. In another, it is said that the person killed in place of ^Isa was the leader of the Jews. Both of these stories are false.

After Prophet ^Isa was raised to the sky, his nation lived following his guidance, teaching, and methodology for two hundred (200) years. However, the nation of Prophet ^Isa did not remain steadfast to *Islam*. Three hundred (300) years after Prophet ^Isa was raised to the sky, those who were following the ones who had perverted the teachings of Prophet ^Isa became very numerous, and those who were truly following the Religion of *Islam* were few and weak. After some five hundred (500) years, none of the believing Muslims of ^Isa's nation were left. When Prophet *Muhammad* was revealed, he was the only Muslim worshipping only *Allah* from among the people of the earth.

---

### PROPHET ^ISA'S(Jesus) DESCENT TO EARTH

Prophet ^Isa, peace be upon him, is still alive--in the second sky--worshipping *Allah*. He will descend to earth before the Day of Judgment and his descent will be one of the great signs of the nearing of that Day. Prophet *Muhammad* informed us ^Isa will descend to earth at a place on the eastern side of Damascus, with his hands on the wings of two angels. He will meet a group of Muslims getting ready to perform the Prayer, with the *Mahdiyy* as their *Imam*. The *Mahdiyy* will ask Prophet ^Isa to lead them in that prayer, however, ^Isa will ask the *Mahdiyy* to stand *imam* for them--as a sign that Prophet ^Isa will rule with the rules revealed to Prophet *Muhammad*. After this one time, ^Isa will lead the people in prayers because he has a higher status than the *Mahdiyy*.

After he descends, Prophet ^Isa will rule the earth with the *Shari^ah* of Prophet *Muhammad*, the *Shari^ah* Muslims are ordered to follow until the Judgment Day. He will break the cross, kill the pig, and abolish the *jizyah* (compulsory payment by the People of the Book to the Muslim state), because in the rules of Prophet *Muhammad* the *jizyah* is only applicable until the descent of ^Isa. He will kill the *Dajjal*, an ugly, evil blasphemer who claims himself as God, and who misleads many people to blaspheme. Prophet ^Isa will perform *Hajj* and travel to visit the grave of the Prophet to salute him, and to greet him by saying, "*As-salamu ^alaykum ya rasulAllah*", as narrated by *Abu Dawud at-Tayalisiyy* and others.

During his time, the people of *Ya'juj* and *Ma'juj* will appear and cause great destruction to the earth and devastation to the Muslims. Prophet ^Isa will take the believers to Mount *at-Tur* to supplicate *Allah* there to relieve them from these people. *Allah* will answer their *du^a'* and destroy all the people of *Ya'juj* and *Ma'juj*. After that, Prophet ^Isa will rule the Muslims and there will be a time

when peace, comfort, and safety will prevail. Prophet ^Isa will live for forty (40) years on earth after he descends. He will marry and have children. Then, he will die and be buried. *^Adullah Ibn Salam* said, "It is written in the original Torah that Prophet ^Isa will be buried next to Prophet *Muhammad*" (in the chamber of Lady *^A'ishah*).

---

## CONCLUSION

Prophet ^Isa was a messenger of Allah revealed to convey to the people the religion of Islam and to call them to worship Allah, their Creator. Muslims believe in his prophethood and in his truthfulness in conveying that message. Prophet ^Isa is alive now, living in the second heaven, worshipping Allah. He will return to earth before the Day of Judgment and will rule the world. Peace be upon this respected, honored and beloved Messenger of Allah.

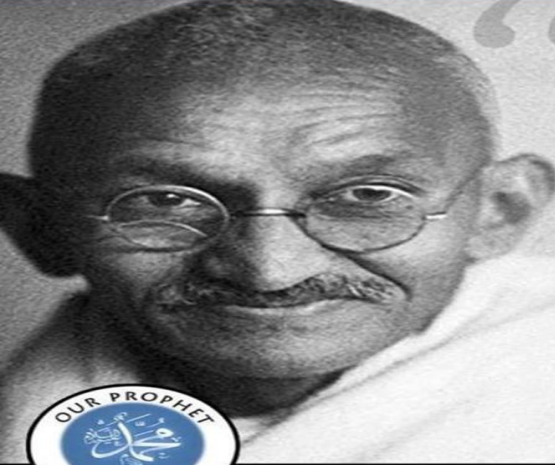
Praise be to Allah, and Allah knows best.

Verse #33 of Surat Maryam means: [Peace was on me the day I was born. Peace will be on me on the day I will die and on the day I am raised alive again.]

1


## NON-MUSLIM VIEWS ABOUT MUHAMMAD

PEACE BE UPON HIM



I wanted to know the best of the life of one who holds today an undisputed sway over the hearts of millions of mankind.... I became more than ever convinced that it was not the sword that won a place for Islam in those days in the scheme of life. It was the rigid simplicity, the utter self-effacement of the Prophet the scrupulous regard for pledges, his intense devotion to his friends and followers, his intrepidity, his fearlessness, his absolute trust in God and in his own mission. These and not the sword carried everything before them and surmounted every obstacle. When I closed the second volume (of the Prophet's biography), I was sorry there was not more for me to read of that great life.

**Mahatma Gandhi**





**The Quran and Modern Science:  
Compatible or Incompatible?**

**The Choice: Islam and Christianity**

**The Bible The Quran and Science**

**PART1B**

# Jesus Muhammad and the Bible

Information arranged and organized BY MR.FAISAL FAHIM  
NO COPYRIGHTS

We grant you an open license to reproduce this article.

ABOUT FAISAL FAHIM: FAISAL WAS BORN IN BANGLADESH. HE SPENT HIS CHILDHOOD WITH HIS GRANDPARENTS IN BANGLADESH & HE SAW THEM PRAYING 5 TIMES A DAY. HE CAME TO AMERICA AT A YOUNG AGE AND HE IS AN AMERICAN BANGLADESHI MUSLIM. IN AMERICA HE LIVED WITH HIS PARENTS. HE WENT TO SCHOOLS IN NY. HE WENT TO VISIT BANGLADESH IN 2009 & HE SAW SOME VIDEOS OF DR.ZAKIR NAIK ON TV. THE VIDEOS WERE ABOUT SPREADING THE KNOWLEDGE OF ISLAM WITH MUSLIMS AND NONMUSLIMS. HE WAS INSPIRED BY DR.ZAKIR NAIK. HE LOVES ISLAM & BELIEVES ISLAM IS A RELIGION OF PEACE & MERCY. SO HE LIKES TO SPREAD THE MESSAGE OF ISLAM TO NONMUSLIMS AND MUSLIMS.

According to Islam the statements of the Torah and Bible which do not contradict but rather matches with Quran Hadith and Islam are accurate but other statements which goes against the teachings of Quran Sunnah prophet Muhammad pbuh and Islam are errors made by humans. So those are not from God. Muslims believe prophet Muhammad is mentioned in the OT and NT = Torah and Bible. But Jews and Christians deny it .So they follow the teachings of the Church and synagogue and do not follow what is written in their holy books.

## 1. MUHAMMAD (PBH) PROPHESED IN THE BOOK OF DEUTERONOMY:

Almighty God speaks to Moses in Book of Deuteronomy chapter 18 verse 18:

"I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and I will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him."

The Christians say that this prophecy refers to Jesus (pbuh) because Jesus (pbuh) was like Moses (pbuh). Moses (pbuh) was a Jew, as well as Jesus (pbuh) was a Jew. Moses (pbuh) was a Prophet and Jesus (pbuh) was also a Prophet If these two are the only criteria for this prophecy to be fulfilled, then all the Prophets of the Bible who came after

Moses (pbuh) such as Solomon, Isaiah, Ezekiel, Daniel, Hosea, Joel, Malachi, John the Baptist, etc. (pbuh) will

fulfill this prophecy since all were Jews as well as prophets.

However, it is Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) who is like Moses (pbuh):

- i) Both had a father and a mother, while Jesus (pbuh) was born miraculously without any male intervention.  
[Mathew 1:18 and Luke 1:35 and also Al-Qur'an 3:42-47]
- ii) Both were married and had children. Jesus (pbuh) according to the Bible did not marry nor had children.
- iii) Both died natural deaths. Jesus (pbuh) has been raised up alive. (4:157-158)  
Muhammad (pbuh) is from among the brethren of Moses (pbuh). Arabs are brethren of Jews. Abraham (pbuh) had two sons: Ishmail and Isaac (pbuh). The Arabs are the descendants of Ishmail (pbuh) and the Jews are the descendants of Isaac (pbuh). Words in the mouth: Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) was unlettered and whatever revelations he received from Almighty God he repeated them verbatim. "I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him."  
[Deuteronomy 18:18]
- iv) Both besides being Prophets were also kings i.e. they could inflict capital punishment. Jesus (pbuh) said, "My kingdom is not of this world." (John 18:36).

- p2 v) Both were accepted as Prophets by their people in their lifetime but Jesus (pbuh) was rejected by his people. John chapter 1 verse 11 states, "He came unto his own, but his own received him not."
- iv) Both brought new laws and new regulations for their people. Jesus (pbuh) according to the Bible did not bring any new laws. (Mathew 5:17-18).

2.

It is Mentioned in the book of Deuteronomy chapter 18:19

"And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not harken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him."

3.

Muhammad (pbuh) is prophesised in the book of Isaiah:

It is mentioned in the book of Isaiah chapter 29 verse 12:"And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned."When Archangel Gabrail commanded Muhammad (pbuh) by saying Iqra - "Read", he replied, "I am not learned".

4.

prophet Muhammad (pbuh) mentioned by name in the old testament:

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is mentioned by name in the Song of Solomon chapter 5 verse 16:prophet Muhammad (pbuh) mentioned by name in the old testament: Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is mentioned by name in the Song of Solomon chapter 5 verse 16:"Hikko Mamittakim we kullo Muhammadim Zehdoodeh wa Zehraee Bayna Jerusalem." "His mouth is most sweet: yea, he is altogether lovely. This is my beloved, and this is my friend, O daughters of Jerusalem." In the Hebrew language im is added for respect. Similarly im is added after the name of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) to make it Muhammadim. In English translation they have even translated the name of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) as "altogether lovely", but in the Old Testament in Hebrew, the name of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) is yet present. It's majestic plural noun like Elohim which refers to 1 God only. so Muhammadim also refers to 1 Muhammad even though im can refer also to be plural. (Edited by Faisal)

Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) in the New Testament: Al-Qur'an Chapter 61 Verse 6: "And remember, Jesus, the son of Mary, said, 'O Children of Israel! I am the messenger of Allah (sent) to you, confirming the Law (which came) before me and giving glad tidings of a messenger to come after me, whose name shall be Ahmed.' But when he came to them with clear signs, they said, 'This is evident sorcery!' "All the prophecies mentioned in the Old Testament regarding Muhammad (pbuh) besides applying to the Jews also hold good for the Christians.

1.

John chapter 14 verse 16:

P3 "And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you forever."

2.

Gospel of John chapter 15 verse 26:

"But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me."

3.

Gospel of John chapter 16 verse 7:

"Nevertheless I tell you the truth; it is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you".

"Ahmed" or "Muhammad" meaning "the one who praises" or "the praised one" is almost the translation of the

Greek word Periclytos. In the Gospel of John 14:16, 15:26, and 16:7. The word 'Comforter' is used in the English translation for the Greek word Paracletos which means advocate or a kind friend rather than a comforter.

Paracletos is the warped reading for Periclytos. Jesus (pbuh) actually prophesised Ahmed by name. Even the


Greek word Paraclete refers to the Prophet (pbuh) who is a mercy for all creatures. Some Christians say that the Comforter mentioned in these prophecies refers to the Holy Sprit. They fail to realise that the prophecy clearly says that only if Jesus (pbuh) departs will the Comforter come. The Bible states that the

Holy Spirit was already present on earth before and during the time of Jesus (pbuh), in the womb of Elizabeth, and again when Jesus (pbuh) was being baptised, etc. Hence this prophecy refers to none other than Prophet Muhammad (pbuh).

4. Gospel of John chapter 16 verse 12-14:

"I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you unto all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me".

The Sprit of Truth, spoken about in this prophecy referes to none other than Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). All quotations of the Bible are taken from the King James Version. Written By DR.ZAKIR NAIK.

112. Surah Al-Ikhlaas 1. Say (O Muhammad ): "He is Allah, (the) One.2. "Allah-us-Samad (The Self-Sufficient Master, Whom all creatures need, He neither eats nor drinks).3. "He begets not, nor was He begotten;4. "And there is none co-equal or comparable unto Him." Quran (The punishment of raping a women in islam is death penalty)!!!if anyone killed a person not in retaliation of murder, or (and) to spread mischief in the land - it would be as if he killed all mankind, and if anyone saved a life, it would be as if he saved the life of all mankind.Quran.

In Quran, It says "If you kill one human being it's as if you have killed the entire of humanity. And if you save one human being. It's as you saved the entire of humanity". So, for killing you go to hell, for saving you go to heaven. There was no suicide bombers in the time of prophet Mohammad.

Philosopher, orator, apostle, legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, of a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire, that is Muhammad. As regards all standards by which human greatness may be measured, we may

p4

well ask, is there any man greater than he?[Lamartine, Histoire de la Turquie, Paris 1854 Vol. II, pp. 276-77.]

It is not the propagation but the permanency of his religion that deserves our wonder; the same pure and perfect impression that he engraved at Mecca and Medina is preserved, after the revolutions of twelve centuries by the Indian, the African and the Turkish proselytes of the Koran... The Mahometans have uniformly withstood the temptation of reducing the object of their faith and devotion to a level with the senses and imagination of man. I believe in One God and Mahomet the Apostle of God., is the simple and invariable profession of Islam. The intellectual image of the Deity has never been degraded by any visible idol; the honors of the prophet have never transgressed the measure of human virtue; and his living precepts have restrained the gratitude of his disciples within the bounds of reason and religion.[Edward Gibbon and Simon Ockley, History of the Saracen Empire, London 1870, p. 54.]

He was Caesar and Pope in one; but he was Pope without Popes pretensions, Caesar without the legions of Caesar: without a standing army, without a bodyguard, without a palace, without a fixed revenue; if ever any man had the right to say that he ruled by the right divine, it was Mohammad, for he had all the power without its instruments and without its supports.[Bosworth Smifu, Mohammad and Mohammadanism. London 1874, p. 92.]

.It is impossible for anyone who studies the life and character of the great Prophet of Arabia, who knows how he taught and how he lived, to feel anything but reverence for that mighty Prophet, one of the great messengers of the Supreme. And although in what I put to you I shall say many things which may be familiar to many, yet I myself feel whenever I re-read them, a new way of admiration, a new sense of reverence for that mighty Arabian teacher.[Annie Besant, The Life and Teachings of Muhammad, Madras 1932, p.4]

His readiness to undergo persecutions for his beliefs, the high moral character of the men who believed in him and looked up to him as leader, and the greatness of his ultimate achievement all argue his fundamental integrity. To suppose Muhammad an impostor raises more problems than it solves. Moreover, none of the great figures of history is so poorly appreciated in the West as Muhammad.[W. Montgomery, Mohammad at Mecca, Oxford, 1953, p. 52.]

Thomas Carlyle, struck by this philosophy of life writes "and then also Islam-that we must submit to God; that our whole strength lies in resigned submission to Him, whatsoever he does to us, the thing he sends to us, even if death and worse than death, shall be good, shall be best; we resign ourselves to God." The same author continues "If this be Islam, says Goethe, do we not all live in Islam?" Carlyle himself answers this question of Goethe and says "Yes, all of us that have any moral life, we all live so. This is yet the highest wisdom that heaven has revealed to our earth."

On the authority of Abu Malik al-Harith bin Asim al-Asharee (may Allah be pleased with him) who said: The Messenger of Allah (peace and blessings of Allah be upon him) said, "Purity is half of iman (faith). 'Al-hamdu lillah (praise be to Allah)' fills the scales, and 'subhan-Allah (how far is Allah from every imperfection) and 'Al-hamdulillah (praise be to Allah)' fill that which is between heaven and earth. And the salah (prayer) is a light, and charity is a proof, and patience is illumination, and the Qur'an is a proof either for you or against you. Every person starts his day as a vendor of his soul, either freeing it or causing its ruin." It was related by Muslim.

Allah has promised to keep The Quran same until the Day of Judgment & challenged humans to create another accurate book like Quran & said if you can't, surrender to your lord (the only way of peace& heaven). Quran is word of god & it has the information of past, present& future. God reveled to Prophet Muhammad whatever god wanted to & kept some information only to god by reveling some & not reveling some. But still Quran is 1 great source of information from God.

Do Muslims worship the Mecca? No Muslims bow towards the direction of mecca & worship only 1 God Allah. While praying in a mosque if Muslims will not have a direction they will end up praying facing or towards each



p5 other .The Quran & Prophet Muhammad taught us to bow towards the direction of mecca while we only pray & worship Allah. And it's also important for the unity of Muslims.

Jesus preached in Aramaic, and parts of the Old Testament and much of the rabbinical literature were written in that language. "El-law" or "El-lawh" in Aramaic means "GOD", while "Eloi" in Aramaic means "My GOD" as Jesus used the word "Eloi" when he was put on

the cross and said "My GOD My GOD why have you forsaken me? (Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachtani?)....(Mark 15:34)"

In Arabic, "GOD" means "Allah", and "My GOD" means "Ilahi" or "Elahi" which is derived from the word "Allah".1. "elahh" is the way the word "hhla" (spelled from right to left as it is Aramaic) is pronounced.

2. The words "Elahh", "hhla (read from right to left)" and "Allah" all have the "h" letter and pronunciation in them.

3- "Allah" in Arabic is pronounced as "Al-lawh" or "Al-lah" depending on the sentence that it is p18 used in. In Arabic, the sound of the word "Allah" could be thicker (Allawh) or thinner (Allah) depending on the sentence.

4- The Aramaic word "hhla (read from right to left)", which is transliterated as "elahh" which means "GOD" is pronounced as "El-aw" as show above.

5- The Aramaic word "hla (read from right to left)", which is transliterated as "elah" which means "oak" is pronounced as "Ay-law" also as shown above.

6- "Allah" in Arabic is pronounced as "Al-lawh" or "Al-lah" depending on the sentence that it is used in. In Arabic, the sound of the word "Allah" could be thicker (Allawh) or thinner (Allah) depending on the sentence.

7- The Hebrew word "Elohim" is the plural of "Elowah", which is derived from the Aramaic word "Alaha", or "Elahh"; the same as the Arabic word "Allah" or "Allawh" in pronunciation.

If we pronounce the words "Allah" in Arabic and "Elahh (pronounced as 'El-aw')" in Aramaic, then we would hear almost the same exact word.

1-In the case of "Aalah" or "Aaloh" Aramaic slang pronunciation, it is almost the same as the "Allah" or "Allawh" Arabic slang pronunciation.

2- In the case of "Aalaha" or "Aalohaa" Aramaic slang pronunciation, it is also almost the same as the "Allaha" or "Allawha" in the Arabic slang pronunciation. "Allah" would be pronounced as "Allaha" or "Allaha" in Arabic if it's used in the middle of the sentence. It can also be pronounced as "Allahi" or "Allahu" or "Allaho" depending on the grammar of the sentence.

3- The Hebrew word "Elohim" is the plural of "Elowah", which is derived from the Aramaic word "Alaha", or "Elahh"; the same as the Arabic word "Allah" or "Allawh" in pronunciation.

"Son of God" means "Servant of God" in Hebrew. Bible agrees with Islam, not with pagan trinity: The sections of this article are: 1-Comparison between Hebrew and Arabic.2- "Son of God" is the same as "Servant of God" in Hebrew! 3- Articles with detailed proofs about "Son of God" means "Servant of God" in Hebrew. 4- Conclusion.

1- Comparison between Hebrew and Arabic:In this article, I will prove that the Bible's "Son of GOD" translation is wrong, because it literally means "Servant of GOD" as Islam clearly defines it. I have shown sample evidence from Hebrew below. The following definitions were taken from:

<http://www.thebabycorner.com/pregnancy/babynames/find.php?sex=boy&begin=a>

Word	Hebrew or Arabic	English Translation
Abbott	Hebrew	Father
Abb	Arabic	Father
Abel	Hebrew	Breath or Son of
Abd	Arabic	Servant of or Slave of

**Important Note:** Since "Abd" means "Servant of" in Arabic, and "Abel" means "Breath of" in Hebrew, then this means "Abel" in Hebrew could also mean "Servant of" or "Creation of", since it literally also means "Breath of".

Word	Hebrew or Arabic	English Translation
Ben	Hebrew	Son of
Bin	Arabic	Son of (as in Osama <u>bin</u> Laden)
Benie Elohim	Hebrew	Sons of GOD
Beni	Arabic	People of (as in Bani Israel, People of Israel)

from:[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Son\\_of\\_God](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Son_of_God)

**Important Note:** Since "Beni" in Arabic means "People of", then this means that "Benie" in Hebrew also means "People of" or "Group of", or "Belongings of", which was falsely translated as "Sons of" throughout the entire Bible!

"In the Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha

This literature contain a few passages in which the title "son of God" is given to the Messiah (see Enoch, cv. 2; IV Esdras vii. 28-29; xiii. 32, 37, 52; xiv. 9); but the title belongs also to any one whose piety has placed him in a filial relation to God (see Wisdom ii. 13, 16, 18; v. 5, where "the sons of God" are identical with "the saints"; comp. Ecclus. [Sirach] iv. 10).

In Judaism, it is through such personal relations that the individual becomes conscious of God's fatherhood, and gradually in Hellenistic and rabbinical literature "sonship to God" was ascribed first to every Israelite and then to every member of the human race (Abot iii. 15, v. 20; Ber. v. 1; see Abba). In one midrash, the Torah is said to be God's "daughter" (Leviticus Rabbah xx.)"

([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Son\\_of\\_God](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Son_of_God))**Important Note:** "filial relation to God" means that a person or creation has a special place in GOD Almighty's Sight. Also, "sons of God" being identical with "the saints" means that the term "son of God" is not an accurate one in the sense of being physically or biologically "part of GOD" or "Son of GOD" respectively as the trinitarian Christians falsely claim. Also, "In one midrash, the Torah is said to be God's "daughter", further proves my point that "Son of GOD" today in the English bibles don't mean more than a "Creation of GOD" or "Servant of GOD"; perhaps a very dear or special servant of GOD Almighty, as the Torah was also called "daughter of GOD".

2- "Son of God" is the same as "Servant of God" in Hebrew!"In modern English usage, the Son of God is almost always a reference to Jesus Christ, whom Christianity holds to be the son of the Christian God, eternally begotten of God the Father and coeternal with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. Human or part-human offspring of deities are very common in other religions and mythologies, however. For example in the Epic of Gilgamesh, one of the earliest recorded legends of humanity, Gilgamesh claimed to be of both human and divine descent. Another well-known son of a god and a human is Hercules.

A great many pantheons also included genealogies in which various gods were descended from other gods, and so the term "son of god" may be applied to many actual deities as well."([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Son\\_of\\_God](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Son_of_God))**Important Note:** So as we can see, the "Son of GOD" theory originally comes from pagan Greek origins. And since most of the Bible's New Testament was written in Greek, then it had been without a doubt negatively influenced by such pagan theology, where Jesus being called "Son of GOD" is literally interpreted today as "part of GOD" or the "Creator of the Universe".

"In the Hebrew Bible Israel is both a man (Jacob, the son of Isaac) and the nation that descended from him. Because of the shared name and organic identity, God speaks to the nation as though he were a single person. Israel is, in fact, God's son (Exod 4:22 — beni vechori yisrael; Deut 14:1 — banim atem l'Adonai; Jer 31:9 — ki hayiti le'yisrael le'av; Hosea 11:1 — mimitzrayim qarati livni). Israel's Father nurtures him to grow up and become a worshiping servant (Exod 4:23 — "Let my son go that he may serve me")."(<http://www.hebrew-streams.org/works/hebrew/eved-adonai.html>)

**Important Note:** Here we see when Israel became GOD Almighty's "son", he reached the point of being GOD Almighty's "servant". This means that "son of GOD" is nothing but a "Servant of GOD" as clearly defined in Islam. It doesn't at all mean that the individual is part of GOD Almighty, or he is GOD the Father Himself.

This is further proven in this quote:

"The Inner Son Rescues His People

Read together, these texts make clear that the Plan (etzah) is set in God's mind. He will use the anointed one

p7 — and his circle of faithful-to-God disciples — as his agent for bringing rebellious Israel back to his sonship calling.

**YHVH formed me from the womb to be His Servant,  
to bring Jacob back to him,  
in order that Israel might be gathered to Him.**

**It is too small a thing that you should be  
my Servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob,  
and to restore the preserved ones [netzurim] of Israel . . . (Isa 49:5, 6)**

It's worth noting that the apostles Paul and Barnabas quoted this passage in reference to themselves, as being members of the Messiah's Remnant Israel (Acts 13:46-48; cf. Luke 2:32).

Thus, within the writings of Isaiah we observe the tensions, paradoxes, and hopes for fixing what is broken — both within God's servant people and in the creation as a whole. To accomplish this there are two who serve the Lord, two with the title "Eved." "

(<http://www.hebrew-streams.org/works/hebrew/eved-adonai.html>)

**Important Note:** Again, we see that the Son of GOD's main responsibility is to Serve GOD Almighty and to Worship Him alone. So a Son of GOD is basically a Servant of GOD. Also, Jesus being called "Son of GOD" is also no different. Him being the "Son of GOD" means he is a Servant of GOD Almighty, or Abdallah, since "Abd" means "Servant of" and "Allah" means "GOD" or "The Supreme GOD Almighty above all gods".

3- Articles with detailed proofs about "Son of God" means "Servant of God":

Below are a list of articles that clearly prove from Hebrew resources that "Son of God" also means "Servant of God".

Article #1:

.(Emphasis below is mine) Is Jesus "God's Son" or "God's Servant?" Do you see a difference between these two Bible versions?

**King James Version**

Acts 3:25 - Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

Acts 3:26 - Unto you first God, having raised up **his Son Jesus**, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

**New King James Version**

Acts 3:25 - You are the sons of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying to Abraham, 'And in your seed all the families of the earth shall be blessed.

Acts 3:26 - To you first, God, having raised up **His Servant Jesus**, sent Him to bless you, in turning every one of you away from his iniquities.

In the KJV, we find that Jesus is God's Son. In the NKJV, we find that He is God's servant. These are clearly not the same! The Greek word found in the text here is "pais". It can be used in Greek for either "son" or "servant." So which one is correct here? The solution is simple: look at the context in which it is used. In English, we have many words that can have more than one meaning. If a translator, going from English to another language, came across the word "bear," he would have a choice of meanings. But it wouldn't take rocket science to figure out which one to use. If the passage described a man with a heavy burden, the translator would understand that the man is going to "bear," or "carry" the burden. If, on the other hand, the passage described a hairy beast climbing a tree, the translator would understand the correct meaning here applies to a forest-dwelling animal that will eat nearly anything it finds. It's not really very hard.

Now look at the Bible passage above. What is being discussed?

"children of the prophets"

"covenant which God made with our fathers"

"in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed."

It's clear, isn't it? The passage is talking about "children," and "fathers" and "seed." The word "pais" means "son." But the New King James translators chose "servant." Why? They were not alone. The New

p8

World Translation, created by the Jehovah's Witnesses who deny the deity of Jesus, translated this word "servant" also. So do the NIV, ASV, NASB and other modern Bible translations. Could it be that these modern translators disagree that "pais" can be translated "son?" No, the NKJV committee translates this very word as "boy," "child" or "son" in Matthew 2:16; 17:18; 21:15; Luke 2:43; 9:42; and John 4:51. Yet they refused to translate the word as "son" in this powerful sermon where Peter presents Jesus as Messiah and Son of God. One has to ask, why were these translators so determined to deny the deity of Jesus in this passage? Is this a Bible you can trust with your eternal destiny?

Article #2

**1.2.3.15 Jesus is God's servant** All of mankind are the servants of God. If a man were to own another man then that man would be his servant. Obviously this servant would be held in a lower regard than this man's own children (or himself).

We do not usually find people telling their sons (or themselves): "*come here my servant,*" or "*Go over there my servant.*" Let us compare this with what God has to say about Jesus (pbuh):

Matthew 12:18: "*Behold my servant, whom I have chosen.*"

Acts 3:13(RSV): "*The God of Abraham, and of Isaac,.... hath glorified his servant Jesus.*"

Acts 4:27(RSV): "*For of a truth against thy holy servant Jesus, whom thou hast anointed....*"

**The Actual Greek word used is "pias" or "paida" which mean; "servant, child, son, manservant."** Some translations of the Bible, such as the popular King James Version, have translated this word as "Son" when it is attributed to Jesus (pbuh) and "servant" for most everyone else, while more recent translations of the Bible such as the Revised Standard Version (RSV) now honestly translate it as "servant." As we shall see in later chapters, the RSV was compiled by thirty two Biblical scholars of the highest eminence, backed by 50 cooperating Christian denominations from the "*most*" ancient Biblical manuscripts available to them today. Chances are that no matter what your church or denomination you are able to name, that church took part in the correction of the King James Version of the Bible which resulted in the RSV.

**The exact same word "pias" is attributed to Jacob (Israel) in Luke 1:54 and translated as "servant":**

*"He hath helped his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy;."* It is also applied to King David in Luke 1:69, and once again, it is translated as "servant":

*"...the house of his servant David;"* (also see Acts 4:25).

However, when it is applied to Jesus (e.g. Acts 3:13, Acts 4:27), **NOW** it is translated as "Son." (notice that it is not only translated as "son" but as "Son".) Why the double standard? Why the dishonest translation techniques? "*And verily, among them is a party who twist their tongues with the Scripture that you might think that it is from the Scripture but it is not from the Scripture; and they say, 'It is from Allah' but it is not from Allah; and they speak a lie against Allah while [well] they know it!*" The noble Qur'an, A'al-Umran(3):78

*"The Messiah will never scorn to be a servant of Allah, nor will the favored angels. Whosoever scorns His service and is proud, all such will He assemble unto Him; Then as for those who believed and did good works, unto them will he pay their wages in full and shall increase them from His bounty. [But] as for those who were scornful and proud, He shall punish hem with a painful torment, nor will they find for themselves other than Allah any ally or champion"* The noble Qur'an, Al-Nissa(4):172-174

4- Conclusion: As we've seen above, in Hebrew, "Son of God" can also be translated as "Servant of God", which literally means "Abdallah" in Arabic. Abd = Servant, and Allah = Allah, or the Supreme GOD Almighty that is above all gods. So, Jesus being called "Son of God" does not mean anything about him being part of GOD or GOD Almighty Himself. It simply means "Servant of God" since Jesus existed among Jews and preached the Gospel to them. Allah Almighty said: "*And they say: "(God) Most Gracious has begotten offspring."* Glory to Him! they are (but) servants raised to honour. (The Noble Quran, 21:26)"

**Information arranged and organized by Faisal Fahim**

**Some hadiths (teachings of prophet Muhammad) (pbuh)** Aisha reported: I heard the Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, say, "Gabriel continued to advise me to treat neighbors well until I thought he would make them my heirs." Source: Sahih Muslim 2624 Grade: Sahih (authentic) according to Imam Muslim

Abu Musa reported: The Prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, said, "The honest Muslim trustee who carries out the orders of those who trusted him and who pays in full with a good heart to the right person is regarded as one of the two who gave charity." Source: Sahih Bukhari 1371, Sahih Muslim [...] Abu Huraira reported: The Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, said,

“There is no justification for envy except in two cases. First, a man whom Allah has given the Quran and he recites it during the night and day, so someone says: If I were to be given like this, I would do as he is doing. And second, a man whom Allah has given wealth and he spends it in justice, so someone says: If I were to be given like this, I would do as he is doing.” Source: Sahih Bukhari 6805 Grade: Sahih (authentic) according to Al-Bukhari

Hadith on Zakat: The command to give 2.5% of surplus wealth as alms and charity

Abu Amina Elias | April 5, 2013 Ali ibn Abu Talib reported: The Prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, said, “If you have two hundred coins and a year has passed, then five coins is due for alms; and you will owe nothing until you own twenty coins, but when you own twenty coins and a year has passed, then half of a coin is due for alms and whatever exceeds that should be calculated likewise.” Source: Sunan Abu Dawud 1572 Grade: Hasan (fair) according to Abu Dawud (due to his silence) Abu Dharr reported: My dear friend the Prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, enjoined upon me three deeds, “Listen to and obey the ruler even if a slave is appointed over you. When you make soup, put some extra water in it and look to the people in the neighboring house and give them a reasonable portion of it, and pray your prayers on time, for if you find the Imam praying then pray with him and your prayer will be safeguarded, otherwise it will be voluntary for you.” Source: Musnad Ahmad 20918 Grade: Sahih (authentic) according to Al-Albani

Juwairiya reported: The Prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, came out from her apartment as she was performing the dawn prayer. He returned in the forenoon and found her sitting there. The Prophet said, “Are you in the same position as I left you?” She said yes. The Prophet said, “I recited four words three times after I left you. If these are to be weighed against all you have recited since the morning, these words will be heavier. They are: Glory and praise to Allah as many as the numbers of His creation, in according with His pleasure, as the weight of the Throne, and as the ink for recording His words.” Source: Sahih Muslim 2726 Grade: Sahih (authentic) according to Imam Muslim Ubadah ibn As-Samit reported: We pledged allegiance to the Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, pledging to listen and obey in hardship and in ease, in pleasure and displeasure even if someone is wrongly favored over us, and pledging not to dispute the rule of those in authority and that we should speak the truth wherever we are and not to fear those who blame us regarding Allah. Source: Sahih Muslim 1709 Grade: Sahih (authentic) according to Imam Muslim

Al-Qurtubi reported: Some scholars gave permission to initiate greetings of peace with the unbelievers. It was said to Sufyan bin Uyainah, “Do you give permission to greet an unbeliever with peace?” Sufyan said, “Yes, for Allah the Exalted said: Allah does not forbid you from those who do not fight you in religion nor expel you from your homes that you be righteous and fair to them. Verily, Allah loves those who are just.” (60:8) Sufyan added, “Allah said: There has come to you the best example in Abraham, (60:4) and Abraham said to his father: Peace be upon you.” (19:47) Source: Tafseer Al-Qurtubi, verse 19:41

Abdullah ibn Mas’ud reported: He stood upon a platform and he grabbed his tongue and he said, “O tongue! Speak goodness and be rewarded, or remain silent and be safe before you are regretful.” Then he said: I heard the Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, say, “Most of the sins of the children of Adam are on their tongues.” [At-Tabarani, Mu’jam Al-Kabeer, Number 10300, Sahih]

Anas ibn Malik reported: The Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, said three times, “May Allah have mercy on a person who spoke rightly and was rewarded, or who was silent and remained safe.” Source: Shu’b Al-Iman Al-Bayhaqi 4579

Abu Huraira reported: The Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, said, “The basis of reasoning, after faith in Allah, is loving kindness toward the people.” Source: At-Tabarani, Al-Mu’jam Al-Awsat, Number 6067

Abu Huraira reported: The Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, said, “Whoever believes in Allah and the Last Day, let him not harm his neighbor. Whoever believes in Allah and the Last Day, let him honor his guest. Whoever believes in Allah and the Last Day, let him speak goodness or remain silent.” Source: Sahih Muslim 47

Ibn Mas’ud reported: The Prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, said, “During the night journey, I met with Abraham, Moses, and Jesus and they were discussing the matter of the Hour. Their matter was referred to Abraham, who said, “I have no knowledge about it.” So the matter was referred to

p10

Moses, who said, "I have no knowledge about it." So the matter was referred to Jesus, who said, "As for the conditions of the Hour, no one knows them but Allah. My Lord the Exalted has entrusted me that the False Messiah will appear and I will have with me two rods. When he sees me, he will melt away just as lead is melted in fire. Allah will destroy him to the point that the rock and the tree will say: O Muslims, beneath me is an unbeliever, so come slay him. Thus, Allah will destroy them and the people will return to their lands and their countries. When that happens, the nations of Gog and Magog will appear, eating and drinking everything in their lands. They will not come upon anything but that they will devour it and they will not pass by any water but that they will consume it. The people will complain to me about them, so I will supplicate to Allah and He will destroy them until their stench fills the earth. Then Allah will send rain which will wash their bodies into the sea. My Lord the Exalted has entrusted me that when all of this happens, the Hour is indeed near just as a woman is ready to give birth; her family does not know when she will give birth but it could be any day or night." [Musnad Ahmad, Number 3546, Sahih]

Abu Huraira reported: The Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, said, "By Allah, the son of Mary will descend as a just ruler. He will abolish the cross, kill the swine, and annul the tribute, but he will leave the she-camel such that no one collects from it. He will cause rancor, hatred, and envy to disappear, and he will call people to give their wealth in charity but no one will need it." Source: Sahih Muslim 155

Prophet said, "By Allah, you must enjoin good and forbid evil and seize the hand of the oppressor and make him follow the truth and restrict him to what is just." Source: Sunan Abu Dawud 4336

"God is Kind and likes kindness in all things." Reporter: Hadhrat Ayesah (r) Source: Bukhari/Muslim (reported in Riyadhus Saleheen, #633); Sunan Ibn Majah, #3684 The people will be resurrected

(and judged) according to their intentions." Reporter: Hadhrat Aishah (r) Source: Sahih al-Bukhari, Vol. 3, Book of Fasting, Chapter 6, p. 69

"The best among you are those

who have the best manners and character." Reporter: Hadhrat Abdullah ibn Amr (r) Source: Sahih al-Bukhari, Vol. 8: #56b

"A person who goes in search of knowledge, he is in the path of God and he remains so till he returns." Reporter: Hadhrat Anas (r) Source: Sunan at-Tirmizi, Vol. 4, #2656

"Hell lies hidden behind evil (worldly desires) and paradise is screened behind hard labor." Reporter: Hadhrat Abu Hurairah (r) Source: Sahih al-Bukhari, Vol. 8, #494

"Paradise is closer to you than your shoelace, and so is the (Hell) Fire." Reporter: Hadhrat Ibn Mas'ud Source: Sahih al-Bukhari, Vol. 8, #495

"The world is prison for the believers and paradise for the disbelievers." Reporter: Hadhrat Abu Hurairah (r) Source: Sahih Muslim, Vol. 4, #7058

"To spend one morning or evening in the cause of God is better than the world and whatever is in the world." Reporter: Hadhrat Anas bin Malik Source: Sahih al-Bukhari, Vol. 4, #50

# PART 2

# Allah Quran And Science

P1

BY MR.FAISAL FAHIM

NO COPYRIGHTS

We grant you an open license to reproduce this article.

**ABOUT FAISAL FAHIM:** FAISAL WAS BORN IN BANGLADESH. HE SPENT HIS CHILDHOOD WITH HIS GRANDPARENTS IN BANGLADESH & HE SAW THEM PRAYING 5 TIMES A DAY. HE CAME TO AMERICA AT A YOUNG AGE AND HE IS AN AMERICAN BANGLADESHI MUSLIM.IN AMERICA HE LIVED WITH HIS PARENTS.HE WENT TO SCHOOLS IN NY. HE WENT TO VISIT BANGLADESH IN 2009 & HE SAW SOME VIDEOS OF DR.ZAKIR NAIK ON TV. THE VIDEOS WERE ABOUT SPREADING THE KNOWLEDGE OF ISLAM WITH MUSLIMS AND NONMUSLIMS.HE WAS INSPIRED BY DR.ZAKIR NAIK.HE LOVES ISLAM & BELIEVES ISLAM IS A RELIGION OF PEACE & MERCY.SO HE LIKES TO SPREAD THE MESSAGE OF ISLAM TO NONMUSLIMS AND MUSLIMS.

Abu Huraira reported: The Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, said, "The basis of reasoning, after faith in Allah, is loving kindness toward the people."Source: At-Tabarani, Al-Mu'jam Al-Awsat, Number 6067

Abu Huraira reported: The Messenger of Allah, peace and blessings be upon him, said, "Whoever believes in Allah and the Last Day, let him not harm his neighbor. Whoever believes in Allah and the Last Day, let him honor his guest. Whoever believes in Allah and the Last Day, let him speak goodness or remain silent."Source: Sahih Muslim 47

Surat Al-'Ikhlaṣ (The Sincerity)

Say, "He is Allah, The Only One,

"Allah-us-Samad (The Self-Sufficient Master, Whom all creatures need, He neither eats nor drinks).

"He begets not, nor was He begotten;

And to Him none could be co-equal or comparable unto Him."

Introduction :Surah Al-Fatiha (The Opening) al Quran)In the name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful Praise be to Allah, Lord of the Worlds,The Beneficent, the Merciful.Owner of the Day of Judgment,Thee (alone) we worship; Thee (alone) we ask for help.Guide us on the straight path,

The path of those whom Thou hast favored;Not (the path) of those who earn Thine anger nor of those who go astray.

(1 : 1-7)

On the authority of Abu Malik al-Harith bin Asim al-Asharee (may Allah be pleased with him) who said:The Messenger of Allah (peace and blessings of Allah be upon him) said, "Purity is half of iman (faith). 'Al-hamdu lillah (praise be to Allah)' fills the scales, and 'subhan-Allah (how far is Allah from every imperfection) and 'Al-hamdulillah (praise be to Allah)' fill that which is between heaven and earth. And the salah (prayer) is a light, and charity is a proof, and patience is illumination, and the Qur'an is a proof either for you or against you. Every person starts his day as a vendor of his soul, either freeing it or causing its ruin." It was related by Muslim.

Errors of Christianity and Judaism (See Genesis 1: 1 - 31) Scientists say that the Earth's surface took millions of years to cool down and became suitable for living. Genesis says that the water

Appeared on earth on its first day, then the appearance of the plants

On its third, and the animals on the fourth and the fifth days.

The biblical order of the appearance of the creations contradicts the findings of geologic history.The presence of water on the face of the earth on the first day contradicts the scientific theory that the earth and the universe were gas at the beginning of creation. In addition, the plants cannot appear before the existence of the sun, and the marine animals and birds were not before wild animals.

Scientifically, saying that the creation of the earth was before the

P2 creation of the sun and the stars (on the fourth day) is wrong. Moreover, the appearance of the night and the day for three days, without the sun is surprising!

In addition, saying that the appearance of plants was three days before man is wrong. Scientific discoveries tell us that the presence of vegetations were millions of years before the presence of man. Torah claims that the earth has pillars, has corners, and it is flat, approving the scientific mainstream during the time of the writing. It says, "The sun also arises, and the sun goes down, and haste to its place where it arises." (Ecclesiastes 1: 5) The writer did not know neither that the earth is spherical, nor that it spins on its axis to create the sunrise and sunset.

The author of that verse was not Allah (S.W.) the Omniscient, who says, "He created the heavens and the earth in true (proportions): He makes the Night overlap the Day, and the Day overlap the Night: He has subjected the sun and the moon (to His law)" (Holy Quran, Surah 39, Az-Zumar – 5)

Describing Allah (S.W.), the Torah says that He is "That shaketh the earth out of its place, And the pillars thereof tremble".

(Job 9: 6) The holy books' writers confirmed this misconception. They claimed that Allah (S.W.) said to Job, "Where were you when I put the earth on its base? Say, if you have knowledge. By whom were its measures fixed? Say, if you have wisdom; or by whom was the line stretched out over it? On what were its pillars based, or who laid its corner-stone" (Job 38: 4-6), and the Book of Samuel says. "For the pillars of the earth are Lord's, and he hath set the world upon them." (1Samuel 2: 8).

The New Testament confirms this naive and wrong perception of the earth; it is flat, with pillars, and with four corners, in some verses, which I will mention them in their place of this series.

Ecclesiastes speaks about the water cycle on earth and why the sea would not be full, although much water is poured into it from rivers. It mentions that the seawater goes back again to the springs of the rivers, so the sea would not be full. It says, "All the rivers run into the sea, yet the sea doth not overflow: unto the place from whence the rivers come, they return, to flow again ". (Ecclesiastes 1: 7)

Finally, the Torah ratifies that humans have the ability of bringing the souls of the dead, and tells that this actually happened. The sorcerer was able to bring Prophet Samuel's spirit to King Saul, and explained the talk between them. (See 1Samuel 28: 3-20) This is close to witchcraft and myth more than anything else.

These errors and others testify that this book is not the word of Allah. The word of Allah (S.W.) does not err, nor teach people lies or error. And if ye are in doubt As to what We have revealed From time to time to Our Servant, then produce a Soorah Like thereunto; And call your witnesses or helpers (if there are any) besides Allah, If your (doubts) are true. But if ye cannot – And of a surety you cannot. Then fear the Fire Whose fuel is Men and Stones – Which is prepared for those Who reject Faith." [Al-Qur'aan 2:23-24] Do not the Unbelievers see that the heavens and the earth Were joined together (as one Unit of Creation), before we clove them asunder?" [Al-Qur'aan 21:30]



p3           The striking congruence between the Qur'aanic verse and the 'Big Bang' is inescapable! Allah mentions big bang in Quran! Scientists say that before the galaxies in the universe were formed, celestial

matter was initially in the form of gaseous matter "Moreover He Comprehended In His design the sky, And it had been smoke: He said to it And to the earth: 'Come ye together, Willingly or unwillingly They said:We do -Quran41:11

**THE QURAN ISNT A BOOK OF SCIENCE IT'S A BOOK OF SIGNS FROM GOD!**  
**The Sun and Moon.**

Whereas the Bible talks of the sun and the moon as two lights differing only in size, the Qur'an distinguishes between them by the use of different terms: light (noor) for the moon, and lamp (siraj) for the sun.

"Did you see how Allah created seven heavens, one above the other, and made in them the moon a light and the sun a lamp?" Qur'an, 78:12-13

The moon is an inert body which reflects light, whereas the sun is a celestial body in a state of permanent combustion producing both light and heat.

**THE SUN ROTATES**"It is He Who created The Night and the Day, And the sun and the moon: All (the celestial bodies) Swim along, each in its Rounded course." [Al-Qur'aan 21:33]

"It is not permitted To the Sun to catch up The Moon, nor can The Night outstrip the Day: Each (just) swims along In (its own) orbit (According to Law)." [Al-Qur'aan 36:40]

**THE SUN WILL EXTINGUISH AFTER A CERTAIN PERIOD**"And the Sun Runs its course For a period determined For it; that is The decree of (Him) The exalted in Might, The All-Knowing." [Al-Qur'aan 36:38]

**THE EXISTENCE OF SUBATOMIC PARTICLES**"The Unbelievers say, 'Never to us will come The Hour': say, 'Nay! But most surely, By my Lord, it will come Upon you – by Him Who knows the unseen – From Whom is not hidden The least little atom In the Heavens or on earth: Nor is there anything less Than that, or greater, but Is in the Record Perspicuous.'" [Al-Qur'aan 34:3]

**BARRIER BETWEEN SWEET AND SALT WATERS**"He has let free the two bodies Of flowing water, Meeting together: Between them is a Barrier Which they do not transgress." [Al-Qur'aan 55:19-20]

"It is He Who has Let free the two bodies Of flowing water: One palatable and sweet, And the other salty and bitter; Yet has He Made a barrier between them, And a partition that is forbidden To be passed." [Al-Qur'aan 25:53]

**FRUITS CREATED IN PAIRS, MALE AND FEMALE**

"And fruit Of every kind He made In pairs, two and two." [Al-Qur'aan 13:3]

**EVERYTHING MADE IN PAIRS**"Glory to Allah, Who created In pairs all things that The earth produces, as well as Their own (human) kind And (other) things of which They have no knowledge." [Al-Qur'aan 36:36]

**FOETUS PROTECTED BY THREE VEILS OF DARKNESS**

"He makes you, In the wombs of your mothers, In stages, one after another, In three veils of darkness." [Al-Qur'aan 39:6]

According to Prof. Keith Moore these three veils of darkness in the Qur'aan refer to:

- (i) anterior abdominal wall of the mother
- (ii) the uterine wall
- (iii) the amnio-chorionic membrane.

**EMBRYONIC STAGES**

"Man We did create From a quintessence (of clay); Then We placed him As (a drop of) sperm In a place of rest, firmly fixed; Then We made the

P4 sperm into a clot of congealed blood; Then of that clot We made a (foetus) lump; then We Made out of that lump Bones and clothed the bones With flesh; then We developed Out of it another creature. So blessed be Allah, The Best to create!" [Al-Qur'aan 23:12-14]

"Do not the Unbelievers see That the heavens and the earth Were joined together (as one Unit of Creation), before We clove them asunder?" [Al-Qur'aan 21:30]

The striking congruence between the Qur'aanic verse and the 'Big Bang' is inescapable! How could a book, which first appeared in the deserts of Arabia 1400 years ago, contain this profound scientific truth?

**THERE WAS AN INITIAL GASEOUS MASS BEFORE THE CREATION OF GALAXIES**

Scientists say that before the galaxies in the universe were formed, celestial matter was initially in the form of gaseous matter. In short, huge gaseous matter or clouds were present before the formation of the galaxies. To describe initial celestial matter, the word 'smoke' is more appropriate than gas. The following Qur'aanic verse refers to this state of the universe by the word *dhukhan* which means smoke.

"Moreover, He Comprehended In His design the sky, And it had been (as) smoke: He said to it And to the earth: 'Come ye together, Willingly The Qur'aan and Modern Science: Compatible or Incompatible? or unwillingly.' They said: 'We do come (Together), in willing obedience.'" [Al-Qur'aan 41:11]

Again, this fact is a corollary to the 'Big Bang' and was not known to the

Arabs during the time of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). What then, could have been the source of this knowledge?

It is mentioned in the quran 1400 years ago even before scientists found the genetic similarities of monkeys ,apes & humans. what scientists have found is true but their opinion of the theory of evolution is wrong. Quran is word of god & it has the information of past,present& future.God reveled to prophet Muhammad whatever god wanted to & kept some information only to god by reveling some & not reveling some.But still quran is 1 great source of information from God. Because of their constant defiance and blasphemy of GOD Almighty's Divine and Holy Words, not all jews but some Jews were transformed into swines and apes during Prophet Moses (peace be upon him) times: "Say: "Shall I point out to you something much worse than this, (as judged) by the treatment it received from God? those who incurred the curse of God and His wrath, those of whom some He transformed into apes and swine, those who worshipped evil;- these are (many times) worse in rank, and far more astray from the even path!" The Noble Quran, 5:60

Scientists don't know for sure. Perhaps the most popular theory says that, shortly after the Earth formed, millions of asteroids and comets, saturated in water, slammed into the planet, releasing their payloads to form Earth's oceans . Scientists are working hard to understand more about what our planet was like billions of years ago, and each new piece of information moves us closer to understanding how Earth's oceans, lakes and rivers came to exist.But the quran already has the answer because the quran is more superior than science & it's the only 100% true book of God's words. Thenceforth were your hearts hardened: They became like a rock and even worse in hardness. For among rocks there are some from which rivers gush forth; others there are which when split asunder send forth water; and others which sink for fear of Allah. And Allah is not unmindful of what ye do. 2:74 al-Baqarah Verse: 74 AL-QURAN

Quran is not a copy of anything & there is no evidence to say such.statements in quran are against torah&bible.torah & bible has so many errors. & according to science 80%of quran matches with science&other 20%of quran science doesn't have answers maybe it will take couple of hundred years to find out for science.acording to historians original bible doesn't exist anymore. Acording to islam torah&bible were books of allah but humans have destroyed their originality. so quran is the last &final word of god allah &Muhammad is the last&final messenger of allah. Quran is not copy of anything and its 100% word of god in islam. According to science torah &bibles statements have errors &Qurans statements are accurate &word of god is accurate.

P5 To say that there is no god or there is they both should be based on facts and evidences. Just like stating Mr.X doesn't exist just because of lack of evidence. It doesn't proof that he doesn't exist. So if my neighbor Mr.X goes missing and police finds no evidence about him we can't just say he never existed! Humans have been part of this world about 6 million years according to some scientists. 1 million years ago there was no evidence for germs but they did exist! Still we are not sure whether aliens exist or not. The universe is like an ocean and the world is like a dust so what science has discovered it is not enough to make a scientific 100% proven statement that there is no god at all and science will never find god. If god exists science will be advanced enough 1 day to discover its mystery and it might take billions of years of research. But until then the claim of that there is no god is equally a blind faith as claiming that there is god for sure! So the best statement a logical person or a scientist could make is this that we don't know yet. Because science has yet to find much more then what we have now.

Even if 1 says the universe came from nothing that will contradict science because some scientists claim nothing comes from nothing! But some say something can come from nothing and in that case I can say god was created from nothing or is uncreated just like some claim the universe came from nothing but that contradicts the claim that nothing comes from nothing! So my point is sometimes even science can contradict science and be wrong rarely but it's possible because nothing is impossible. And calming that god exists doesn't limit the possibilities but calming it does not limits its possibilities. Just like  $4+3=7$  but 4 times  $3=12$  so both have possibilities and we can't just claim or deny something without having the proper knowledge and evidence of it. There is no scientific statement made by a scientist who shows whether god exists or not! So I can say I don't know is the best answer. but if I'm a Muslim or Christian I can also say I have faith in god but atheists claim atheism isn't a religion so an atheist can't say I have faith that there is no god! so yes I will state that I believe in my religion which tells me god exists so I have faith and I am a believer but I am not claiming I have the evidence that I can prove the world that Allah exists. I don't have a video record of god & if you want that type of evidence! But guess what god has no image so I can't show god to anyone period. Besides we are suppose to believe in the unseen and that's where the faith/believe plays its role! But atheists don't have faith in any god or on religion. According to Islam we will never see god in this life and god is in heaven not in you or me or anywhere else but up in heaven only! Yes I believe in hell and heaven and it's my choice just like you exercise yours by not having faith and its ok with me! But I disagree that atheists have an open mind since the basic system of atheism is based on denying others faiths no matter what they say and it's not that the scriptures don't have any scientific statements but because atheists simply don't want to believe! And it's a fact that atheists deny the facts found in religious scriptures just to stick to their views which aren't based on evidence but on blind faith. And they do this not because there is no evidence of scientific statements in the scriptures but because they don't want to believe perod!

The quran isn't a book of science but it's a book of signs from god!Quran is not copy of anything and its 100% word of god in Islam. According to science torah &bibles statements have errors &Qurans statements are accurate &word of god is accurate.

God definition By Faisal:God does not born or die. Who has no beginning or end. Does not need to become human, animal or insect to understand his creation. He is the creator who knows what he has created. He is the most wise. So, he knows everything. He feeds everyone, but he doesn't need to eat or sleep or use toilet. True God is the creator who is not part of the creation. So, he has no father, mother, wife or children. He's above all & unique. There's none like him & he's only one, who has no partner & no gender. So, he's the creator of all creation & not part of his or any creation. That is the definition of one true God in Islam which is Allah. Allah has created the humans in a pair of male& female to worship him & in different colors, languages, countries to respect & recognize each other.Tv,watch,computer,phone everything has a purpose. Purpose of us is not just only to eat,poo,have sex&sleep .purpose of life is to obey & worship the creator because humans are the most superior of creation & our purpose is to serve god by praising & praying.No1 is superior whether you are black or white,arab or non arab,male or female .For god everyone is equal.Islam is the only religion that is against racism. Allah is the most just & God judges you by your heart only not by your looks. Islam is an accurate, just & peaceful religion of 1 god creator lord Allah.

In Quran, It says "If you kill one human being it's as if you have killed the entire of humanity. And if you save one human being. It's as you saved the entire

p6 of humanity". So, for killing you go to hell, for saving you go to heaven. There was no suicide bombers in the time of prophet Mohammad. Islam believes God created the first humans were Adam & eve without any father & mother. The devil made them eat a fruit that was told by God to not to eat.

And they got poo, but, they were not allowed to poo in heaven. You can eat everything in heaven & you wont get poo & it's a unholy thing you get it when you eat foods on earth & the 1forbidden fruit that was in heaven. So, as punishment God sent them to earth. Adam&Eve were married &having sex for married couples is not sin in islam. All humans are children of Adam & eve. In Islam from Adam to Moses, to Jesus to Mohammad God sent all of them as messengers prophets & humans to spread the true religion. Because God created Adam & Eve without any father & mother. It means true creator can create everything in any way he wants to, for example If he says something to happen It'll just happen. The same way he made Adam & Eve without being their father & mother plus also having no father & mother. He has the wisdom & power of over everything. Similarity of creating Adam a slight differently he created prophet Jesus as one of the mightiest messengers of God with having just mother without any father. Because God can do anything God can create humans without father & mother as well as having a mother but no father. That's the true miracle & it can only be done by one true creator. And that's the believe of Islam that the true God is Allah who has no partner, no parents, no children, no wife, doesn't born or die, has no image because there's none like him, does not eat but feeds everyone & does not sleep. In Islam the name of prophet Jesus is Isa. And Jesus/Isa did everything with the power of Allah (God). God gave him the power to do it. Who created Jesus as a messenger of God. Similarly he created Adam, Moses, Abraham, Noah, Isa as Jesus, Mohammad as messengers of peace & Islam towards humanity. And God can't be part of creation. If it's part of creation then it's not the creator or God or Allah. Even in Bible it says Jesus put his head on the floor as Muslims put their head on the floor for praying. 80% of Quran matches with Science & other 20% of Quran the Science does not have the answers because they haven't discovered or improved that much. For example Quran talks

about heaven, hell, & there are aliens. Science has no answer for everything but Quran has all the answers since last 1400 years even when Science had no answers. In the Bible it talks about Prophet Noah & the story goes something like this that the Prophet received a message from God that there would be a flood all over the world. So, he built a big boat & he took some people & a pair of every animals. According to Science there was not a flood which happened all over the world but it happened

p7 in a particular part of earth. Quran also tells it

happened in a particular part of the world. Quran also talks about humans are partly formed from father & partly formed from mother. And today Science agrees with it. So, if some one reads Quran & do a scientific research it'll help to understand what the truth is & what is fiction. Bible says, the world is flat & circle. Scientifically it's not true. A coin is also flat & circle. Quran tells the original shape of earth. Science can't prove any error in Quran but tells errors on Bible. Don't believe it! Do your own research & believe what's logical. Don't ask people but do your own research so, you can believe in true God the creator of all creation but not a creation. Islam also teaches black cumin cures so many diseases without any side effects. The ultimate goal of saitan (Devil) is to take humans towards hell & shirk. Shirk means to associate or include someone with God. True God has no partner, can't compare him with any creation because he has created the creation, how can he be part of what he created? Remember true religion should have all the answers Of humanity & should not have any missing links. Islam believes Quran is 100% words of one creator God Allah. People might think there are 2 types of Muslims Shia & Sunni. But they both have same book Quran. And in Quran there is no Sunni or Shia. Islam is one religion & Quran is the

only one book Of God in Islam. The followers of Islam & Quran are called Muslims. No Muslim is a Muslim unless he beliefs Adam, Moses, Abraham, Jesus, Noah, Mohammad were all messengers of one God Allah. No Muslim is a good Muslim unless he's a good human being. Islam teaches to live peacefully with people of every religion, race, color, language & nationalities. So we should understand, respect& live peacefully with each other. In the last 100 years to now Islam is the fastest growing religion in the world. That's why some governments & Medias create lies & misconceptions about Islam. Remember, true religion is the one that answers all the questions of humanity. Science can't prove any error in Quran. And true book of God can't have any errors. Muslims believe Torah & Bible were books of God but they have been changed by humans. So, Quran is the last & final book of God. Quran is only one book but you can find it in all languages. Any one who believes in God should do research on Science, Quran & Bible. Fact is stranger then fiction. The book of God should have all the answers for humanity with no errors & word of God can't have errors!

P8

### **Did Islam Exist Before Muhammad (Peace & Blessings Be Upon Him)?**

God does not born or die he is forever. Jesus, Moses, Mohammad & all other people of Bible, Quran & Torah were great messengers prophets of god not sons of god they were created by 1 true god, creator, Allah. So any creation can't be the 1 creator Allah. So they were messengers, prophets of god. How can creator be part of what he has created Himself!!! So he is not part of any creation again he is not a creation & has no partners no father ,mother, daughter ,son, brother, sister ,wife & no gender simply unique beyond comparable & 1 & 1 only. From Adam to Jesus god sent his messages for every generation or period of time but it was always destroyed by mankind & the devils conspiracy to take mankind towards hell. Because all previous books were massed up by humans Allah sent his last messenger not son or god, but messenger Mohammad & sent him Quran & it's messages to guide humans towards Allah & heaven. Allah has promised to Keep Quran same until the Day of Judgment & challenged humans to create another accurate book like Quran & said if you can't then surrender to your lord (the only way of peace&heaven). Majority of things science has discovered until now 80% of Quran had all those undiscovered answers from the last 1400years when science didn't have any answers. The other 20% answer was & is in Quran. Maybe it will take science another 1400years to find it. All 100% answers are in Quran. Science can't prove a single verse of Quran wrong. If you do a research on Quran, bible and science you will find facts. Facts are stranger than fiction. In the bible it says Jesus bowed his head on floor just like Muslims bow their head on floor while praying .You should do research on bible, Quran & science if you believe in god so you can find facts on Islam. If I teach a parrot a message & send it to someone & parrot tells the message to that person and leaves & that person starts saying that parrot is my son that would make no sense, because that was my messenger not son. Jesus was taken up alive & after that people started calling him son of god. He came to establish Islam & was a messenger of 1 god. Christianity started after Jesus was gone, Jesus will comeback & die as a human & Muslim. Quran is the only accurate 100% words of god & word of god can't have errors then it would not be word of god & according to science bibles & Torahs has many errors but they can't prove a verse in Quran wrong. Muslims believe there is no god but Allah & Prophet Mohammad is the last & final prophet & messenger of Allah.

### Conclusion

*He said: "I am indeed a servant of God: He hath given me revelation and made me a prophet; 019.031 "And He hath made me blessed wheresoever I be, and hath enjoined on me Prayer and Charity as long as I live; 019.032 "(He) hath made me kind to my mother, and not overbearing or miserable; 019.033 "So peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die, and the day that I shall be raised up to life (again)"! 019.034 Such (was) Jesus the son of Mary: (it is) a statement of truth, about which they (vainly) dispute. 019.035 It is not befitting to (the majesty of) God that He should beget a son. Glory be to Him! when He determines a matter, He only says to it, "Be", and it is. Al-Quran.*

*God forbids you not, with regards to those who fight you not for (your) faith nor drive you out of your homes, from dealing kindly and justly with them; for God loveth those who are just (Qur'an, 60:8)*

Adam, Abraham ,Noah, Moses ,Jesus , Muhammad were all messengers & prophets of 1 God Allah so Islam is the 1<sup>st</sup> religion & it's the last religion because God is Allah & God is forever so is God's religion which is only Islam & it is also forever. Finally Islam always existed even before Adam, Abraham ,Noah, Moses ,Jesus & Muhammad because it's the only true religion from God Allah.

Question: Does Quran mention that Prophet Muhammad is the last prophet? Muhammad is not the father of any of your men, but [he is] the messenger of God and seal(last,finish,end,final) of the prophets and God has the knowledge of everything. (Quran 33:40)

# PART3

# 1

## Islam and Terrorism

Often, the religion of Islam is held responsible for the acts of a fringe minority among Muslims.

Could it be possible that Islam, whose light ended the Dark Ages in Europe, now propound the advent of an age of terror? Could a faith that has over 1.2 billion followers the world over, and over 7 million in America, actually advocate the killing and maiming of innocent people? Could Islam, whose name itself stands for “peace” and “submission to God”, encourage its adherents to work for death and destruction?

For too long, have we relied on stereotypical images in the news media and in Hollywood films, for answers to these pertinent questions. It is time now to look at the sources of Islam, and its history, to determine whether Islam does indeed advocate violence.

### Sanctity of human life

The Glorious Qur’an says:

*“...take not life, which God hath made sacred, except by way of justice and law: thus doth He command you, that ye may learn wisdom.”* [Al-Qur’an 6:151]

Islam considers all life forms as sacred. However, the sanctity of human life is accorded a special place. The first and the foremost basic right of a human being is the right to live. The Glorious Qur’an says:

*“...if any one slew a person - unless it be for murder or for spreading mischief in the land - it would be as if he slew the whole people: and if any one saved a life, it would be as if he saved the life of the whole people.”* [Al-Qur’an 5:32]

Such is the value of a single human life, that the Qur’an equates the taking of even one human life unjustly, with killing all of humanity. Thus, the Qur’an prohibits homicide in clear terms. The taking of a criminal’s life by the state in order to administer justice is required to uphold the rule of law, and the peace and security of the society. Only a proper and competent court can decide whether an individual has forfeited his right to life by disregarding the right to life and peace of other human beings.

### Ethics of WAR

Even in a state of war, Islam enjoins that one deals with the enemy nobly on the battlefield. Islam has drawn a clear line of distinction between the combatants and the non-combatants of the enemy country. As far as the non-combatant population is concerned such as women, children, the old and the infirm, etc., the instructions of the Prophet are as follows: “Do not kill any old person, any child or any woman” [1].

“Do not kill the monks in monasteries” or “Do not kill the people who are sitting in places of worship.” [2]

During a war, the Prophet saw the corpse of a woman lying on the ground and observed:

“She was not fighting. How then she came to be killed?” Thus non-combatants are guaranteed security of life even if their state is at war with an Islamic state.

### Jihad

**JIHAD** While Islam in general is misunderstood in the western world, perhaps no other Islamic term evokes such strong reactions as the word ‘jihad’. The term ‘jihad’ has been much abused, to conjure up bizarre images of violent Muslims, forcing people to submit at the point of the sword. This myth was perpetuated throughout the centuries of mistrust during and after the Crusades. Unfortunately, it survives to this day.

The word Jihad comes from the root word jahada, which means to struggle. So jihad is literally an act of struggling, and this struggle can have various forms. The Prophet Muhammad (peace be upon him) referred to the struggle against the insidious suggestions of one’s own soul as a form of jihad. Thus the inner struggle of being a person of virtue and submission to God in all aspects of life, is part of the essence of Islam.

P2

Jihad also refers to struggle against injustice. Islam, like many other religions, allows for armed self-defense, or retribution against tyranny, exploitation, and oppression. The Glorious Qur'an says: *"And why should ye not fight in the cause of God and of those who, being weak, are ill-treated (and oppressed)? - Men, women, and children, whose cry is: "Our Lord! Rescue us from this town, whose people are oppressors; and raise for us from thee one who will protect; and raise for us from thee one who will help!" [Al-Qur'an 4:75]*

Thus Islam enjoins upon its believers to strive utmost, in purifying themselves, as well as in establishing peace and justice in the society. A Muslim can never be at rest while there is injustice and oppression around her.

Martin Luther King Jr., quite aptly said:

*"We will have to repent in this generation not merely for the hateful words and actions of the bad people but for the appalling silence of the good people."*

Islam enjoins upon all Muslims to work actively to maintain the balance in which God created everything. However, regardless of how legitimate the cause may be, the Glorious Qur'an categorically denounces the killing of innocent people. Terrorizing the civilian population, whether by small groups or by states, can never be termed as jihad and can never be reconciled with the teachings of Islam.

History of Tolerance

Even Western scholars have repudiated the myth of Muslims coercing others to convert. The great historian De Lacy O'Leary wrote:

*"History makes it clear, however, that the legend of fanatical Muslims, sweeping through the world and forcing Islam at the point of sword upon conquered races is one of the most fantastically absurd myths that historians have ever repeated."*<sup>[3]</sup>

Muslims ruled Spain for roughly 800 years. During this time, and up until they were finally forced out, the non-Muslims there were alive and flourishing. Additionally, Christian and Jewish minorities have survived in the Muslim lands of the Middle East for centuries. Countries such as Egypt, Morocco, Palestine, Lebanon, Syria, and Jordan all have significant Christian and/or Jewish populations. This is not surprising to a Muslim, for his faith prohibits him from forcing others to see his point of view. The Glorious Qur'an says:

*"Let there be no compulsion in religion: Truth stands out clear from Error: whoever rejects evil and believes in God hath grasped the most trustworthy hand-hold, that never breaks. And God heareth and knoweth all things."* [Al-Qur'an 2:256]

Islam- The Great Unifier

Far from being a militant dogma, Islam is a way of life that transcends race and ethnicity. The Glorious Qur'an repeatedly reminds us of our common origin:

*"O mankind! We created you from a single (pair) of a male and a female, and made you into nations and tribes, that ye may know each other (not that ye may despise (each other)). Verily the most honored of you in the sight of God is (he who is) the most righteous of you. And God has full knowledge and is well acquainted (with all things)."* [Al-Qur'an 49:13]

Thus, it is the universality of its teachings that makes Islam the fastest growing religion in the world. In a world full of conflicts and deep schisms between human beings, a world that is threatened with terrorism, perpetrated by individuals and states, Islam is a beacon of light that offers hope for the future.

"There is no such thing as physically or mentally more superior or inferior because of race or religion or ethnicity or nationality or caste or language or color but indeed these are delusional mythical believes ideas from complete ignorance and lack of knowledge about humanity. But the person who is the most close to the truth of God is spiritually the most superior with pity mercy humbleness kindness and honesty and nobility and only God and only God alone knows about that person. There is no other God except only one God one Allah alone the most high the most supreme the greatest creator of all creation but is not a creation who is not everywhere but is in his throne up in heaven only and his knowledge is everywhere and he is all known. Adam, Abraham, Noah,



Solomon, Moses, Jesus were only servants prophets messengers of God Allah and Muhammad is God's last Prophet, Quran is God's final testament and Islam is God's complete religion." "Faisal Muhammad Fahim" **Far from being a militant dogma, Islam is a way of life that transcends race and ethnicity. The Glorious Qur'an repeatedly reminds us of our common origin: "O mankind! We created you from a single (pair) of a male and a female, and made you into nations and tribes, that ye may know each other (not that ye may despise (each other)). Verily the most honored of you in the sight of God is (he who is) the most righteous of you. And God has full knowledge and is well acquainted (with all things))." [Al-Qur'an 49:13] And prophet Muhammad said " No one is more superior whether Arab or Non Arab, Black or White except by pity" According to Islam we are all children of Adam and Eve .So all of our forefather was one and he was Adam and he was made from clay. And our prophet Muhammad(Pbuh) taught us the same thing which was revealed to him through angel Gabriel from God.**

The truth about sharia.

When the Prophet Muhammad, peace be upon him, first began to receive revelations from God in 610 A.D., little did he know that they were the foundational stones for the formation of a future state to be refined piecemeal over the next 23 years. Complete with divinely-ordained laws, a blueprint for societal balance, and individual and mutual sense of accountability, this 'way of life' called Islam was presented to the general public through the medium of the Prophet Muhammad, peace be upon him.

Compiled into one text, these revelations not only represent the holy book of the Muslims, the Quran, but are also the foremost source for Shariah, Islamic law. Shariah, quite literally, translates to a path leading to a water hole; figuratively, it refers to a clear, straight path. It is a body of laws derived mainly from the Quran and the example of the Prophet Muhammad, along with interpretive, analogous, and/or consensus rulings for cases where no evidence could be sought from primary sources.

The laws as present in the Quran are binding on Muslims and range from prohibition of alcohol consumption and gambling to setting punishments for such grave offences as adultery and theft. Due to their divine origin – directly conveyed to the Prophet Muhammad, peace be upon him, via the Archangel Gabriel – these laws are considered timeless and perfect, geared towards the success, welfare and peace of humans in this world and in the hereafter.

**Shariah: Commitment to Justice**

While many people, both Muslim and non-Muslim, vocally and vehemently oppose Shariah law today in favor of western legal systems, this disenchantment tends to stem from either an unclear understanding of Shariah or instances of misuse of justice 'back home' in the name of Shariah. In fact, the establishment and internalization of justice is the supreme purpose of Shariah. The Quran states, "Thus we have made you a just nation, that you be witnesses over mankind, and the Messenger be a witness over you." [2:143]

Further, God commands His believers: "O you who believe! Stand out firmly for justice, as witnesses to Allah, even though it be against yourselves, or your parents, or your kin, be he rich or poor. Allah is a better Protector to both. So follow not the lusts, lest you avoid justice; and if you distort your witness or refuse to give it, verily Allah is Ever Well-Acquainted with what you do." [4:135]

This emphasis and primacy of justice was not at all introduced with Islam. In Ch. 57, verse 25, God reminds humankind of the fact that a similar code was brought by each previous Messenger so that "mankind may keep up justice." Therefore, it is no surprise that the Code of Hammurabi and the Law of Moses also contain retributive laws, similar to the famous "an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth." Islam, however, adds the following corollary to such retribution: It is better to forgive.

Today, such laws are considered by the vast majority to be medieval, barbaric, and primitive. Shariah, likewise, is intractably coupled with merciless executions, chopping off of hands and honor killings. To accept such a generalized picture of an intensely complex legal system is not only a disservice to divinely ordained laws but also to one's own sense of integrity. Here is an attempt to dispel some of the prevalent myths and to bring clarity to the matter.

Shariah Law & Common Law

Both are committed to facilitating basic values such as freedom, human rights, justice, and equality Shariah has its roots in the divine writ, whereas common law has been founded by human beings

Consultation and participation in the process of decision-making (shura) is common to both laws Certain laws and restrictions are timeless under Shariah (for instance, prohibition of alcohol) whereas laws and amendments can change at will within a democracy (for example, the ratification of the National Prohibition Act in the U.S. in 1919 and its official rejection in 1933)

Shariah Law and Common Law both espouse the establishment of a federal government, the declaration of freedom of religion, the abolishment of guilt by association, the right to privacy, and matters such as common defense and peacemaking Shariah encompasses all areas of life, such as dietary laws, dress code, finances, and social aspects. On the other hand, common law leaves matters such as dietary considerations, relationships between consenting adults, dress code, and economic choices to the preferences of individuals

#### Shariah: Dispelling Myths

The Shariah consists of hadd punishments and tazir punishments; hadd crimes overstep God's set boundaries whereas tazir crimes are committed against the society. The following hadd crimes have been mentioned in the Quran: murder, apostasy from Islam, theft, adultery, defamation, robbery and consumption of alcohol. Common tazir crimes include bribery, selling tainted or defected products, treason, usury, selling obscene pictures, etc. While hadd punishments have been fixed in the Quran (such as retributive killing for murder and the chopping off of a limb for theft) there are many safeguards which are important to mention. For any punishment to actually take place, proof must be provided, along with a confession of the crime or witnesses testifying against the criminal. If any of these is not sufficiently presented, Islamic law requires the hadd crime to be treated as a tazir crime. (Some of the tazir penalties include counseling, fines, flogging, confinement, etc.)

Similarly, if a thief could prove that he/she only stole because of need, then the Muslim society would be held at fault and made to supply that need and there would be no hadd punishment. Likewise, to be penalized for adultery, the couple had to be actually witnessed performing the physical act by four people who were in a position to identify both parties without doubt. A retributive punishment may be averted if the aggrieved party is willing to accept blood money or to forgive, which is always considered to be the higher road to take in Islam. Indeed, to forgive when one has the right to take revenge is the ultimate form of mercy, and God reminds us over and over in the Quran that while He is Just, He is also Most Merciful.

Forced marriages and honor killings are not at all sanctioned in Islam. Unfortunate deaths caused as a result of misguided emotions must be dealt by the courts as murders. Rape is a serious offence which is punishable by death, penalizing the rapist and exonerating the raped woman, treating her as a victim, not a complicit.

An example from the time of the Prophet Muhammad, peace be upon him, states:

Waa'il ibn Hujr said that a woman, in the life of the Messenger of Allah (pbuh), [left her home] intending to go for Prayer [in the mosque] when a man seized her and had sexual intercourse with her, while she let out a scream [for help]. The man fled, and she told a man what had occurred. A group from amongst the immigrants were told of this and they chased the man down eventually capturing who they thought it was, and took the man to her. She said that it was the man who did it to her. They took the man (and the woman) to the Messenger of Allah (pbuh), and the man was asked, 'Who is the man who did this to her?' The man confessed saying, "I am the one who did this to her, Oh Messenger of Allah!" The Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) said to the woman, "You can leave, for Allah has forgiven you!" The Prophet (pbuh) said to the man, "Your words are sound." So he said regarding the man who had raped her, "Stone him". He added, "This man has [sincerely] repented a type of repentance that if the people of Medinah would perform, Allah would accept it from them." (Abu Dawood, Tirmidhi)

As for stoning, Ruqayyah Waris Maqsood, a British Muslim author, explains, "The correct Islamic method of stoning according to Sharia was similar to that advised by the Pharisees at the time of Jesus – the person was held fast in a fixed position, and a stone or rock that it took two men to lift (i.e. was heavier than one man could lift alone) was to be dropped to crush the head – it was not someone tied to a post and rocks hurled at them, although this has been done in some cultures. The point was that if someone really had to be executed, it was to be done swiftly, with as little torture as possible, and usually publicly so that no vindictive person could do further nasty things behind the scenes and get away with it."

Muslim women may seek divorce for grounds such as physical or mental abuse, adultery, abandonment, etc. Alternatively, they may demand a divorce for no specific reason. With regards to custody of children, Shariah

5 permits parents to decide with whom the children will stay; if they are in disagreement, they may allow the courts to decide for them. In principle, however, mothers are preferred as the primary caretakers for young children, and fathers are required to provide for the children's maintenance. When it comes to inheritance, a woman's share is half of man, but then she has no obligation to make any financial contribution to the family, even if she earns; her money is hers to keep because her husband, father, or brother are required to provide for her. It is often claimed that a woman's testimony is half of a man – the vast majority of scholars view that verse of the Quran [2:282] in the context in which it occurs, i.e., testimony regarding financial transactions. Jamal Badawi, professor at Saint Mary's University in Halifax, Nova Scotia, Canada, explains that this verse cannot be taken as a general ruling because at another instance [24:6-9], no such exception has been made.

Non-Muslims under Sharia are protected so long as they pay the annual tax, called *jizya*; this is a nominal amount which does not amount to hardship on the part of the taxed. Their houses of worship are safe under Islamic rule and they are free to worship their religion; in other words, Sharia does not apply any pressure on them to change their existing religion to Islam. However, non-Muslims may voluntarily accept Islam. The various pockets of minorities which continue to exist in Muslim countries are testimony enough against theories which propound forced conversions and persecution of non-Muslims.

Unfortunately, in certain instances, Muslim countries have misused Shariah laws as a tool for injustice; however, that does not discount the fact that Shariah laws were sent by God to establish justice on earth. God's original laws and their intent remain free of human blemishes. At the same time, authoritative people in the West are recognizing the value of Shariah laws and the right for Muslims to have a choice in legal disputes regarding family and finances: from the Archbishop of Canterbury Rowan Williams to Ontario's former attorney general Marion Boyd to Harold Koh, the Legal Adviser of the Department of State under the Obama administration.

#### Shariah: Its Essence

Khurram Murad, the late Director General of the The Islamic Foundation, Leicester, United Kingdom, explained that there are three major themes in the Shariah: the individual, the society, and the family. The individual has been given a free will, a moral sense, and the knowledge of right and wrong; now it is up to him/her to realize his/her potential. Meanwhile, the individual's life, person, freedom, possessions and honor are sacred and inviolable. Anyone who transgresses against her/him is subject to punishment, depending on the crime committed. Similar levels of justice are expected of her/him, if s/he commits the crime or is complicit. The individual(s) must take responsibility for his/her action – this is why confessing is so important in the Shariah. And, the harsh punishments commensurate to the crime (whether *hadd* or *tazir*) serve as a definitive deterrent, specifically, for the criminal and his/her future actions and, generally, for the public. In fact, because the *hadd* punishments are already known, their severity is a preventive measure against lawlessness to begin with.

After all, it is the larger society which is at stake. "Social order and individual good should stand together – fused and harmonious, co-operating and assisting, interdependent and in equilibrium," wrote Khurram Murad. He further likened family as the "cradle of the individual and the cornerstone of society." Indeed, Shariah places great importance on all three of these "institutions" of life, returning over and over again to both the accountability and the inviolability of the human being – for a crime is essentially an act of injustice to one's own self, a sin against God.

God wishes for us to internalize His concept of justice so we do not upset the balance of society. Our accountability with God will take place on the Day of Judgment, but our accountability to aggrieved members of the society has to be carried out here. While some may continue to deem such punishments as harsh, Muslims believe they are divinely-ordained by the Creator for His creation.

"And perfect are the words of your Lord in truthfulness, and in justice; His words cannot be changed; He is the All-hearing, All-knowing." [6:116]

When the people of his tribe wanted pardon for a wealthy woman who was convicted of theft, Prophet Muhammad responded to their pleas thus: "O people, those who have gone before you were destroyed, because if any one of high rank committed theft amongst them, they spared him; and if anyone of low rank committed theft, they inflicted the prescribed punishment upon him. By Allah, if Fatima, daughter of Muhammad, were to steal, I would have her hand cut off."

6

Umar, the second caliph of Islam, was renowned for his justice. Any of his subjects could easily approach him with a question or a complaint. He also used to walk through his city in the cover of darkness to check upon the welfare of his subjects. Once, when he tried to put a ceiling on the marriage-gift given to women upon marriage, a woman stood up and protested, using a Quranic verse as support. He recognized his mistake and responded, "The woman is right and Umar is wrong." When the third caliph, Uthman, sued a Jewish subject in court for stealing his court of armor, the caliph lost the case because the judge dismissed his two sons' testimonies as insufficient due to their direct relationship to him.  
By Saulat Pervez

Understanding what is not Jihad according to Islam.

If you open a modern Oxford English dictionary, you would probably find the definition of Jihad as "a holy war undertaken by Muslims against non-believers". This is a very poor definition. Before trying to define what Jihad is, we should first define what it is NOT.

Jihad is NOT Holy War

Jihad is NOT blowing up one's self (Suicide is a sin in Islam)

Hadith : Shahi Bukhari.

Book 23. Funerals (Al-Janaa'iz).

Volumn 002, Book 023, Hadith Number 445.

-----  
Narated By Thabit bin Ad-Dahhak : The Prophet (p.b.u.h) said, "Whoever intentionally swears falsely by a religion other than Islam, then he is what he has said, (e.g. if he says, 'If such thing is not true then I am a Jew,' he is really a Jew). And whoever commits suicide with piece of iron will be punished with the same piece of iron in the Hell Fire." Narrated Jundab the Prophet said, "A man was inflicted with wounds and he committed suicide, and so Allah said: My slave has caused death on himself hurriedly, so I forbid Paradise for him."

Jihad is NOT killing innocent people

Jihad is NOT flying a plane into a building packed with civilians

Jihad is NOT fighting out of anger and hatred

Jihad is NOT killing others just because they don't agree with you

Jihad is NOT killing others just because they are not Muslims

The real meaning of Jihad

Jihad is an Arabic word from the root Jee Ha Da. It literally means to struggle or strive. Jihad is struggling or striving in the way or sake of Allah. Jihad takes a very important status in the doctrine of Islam and is one of the basic duties for every Muslim.

Though, it has nothing whatsoever to do with the term Holy War. Such a term, or its equivalent doesn't exist in the Islamic doctrine. The Christian Crusaders in the mid-ages invented this ideology of Holy War.

There is nothing "Holy" about wars. Wars only involve killings and disasters!

Jihad has many forms,

Jihad of the heart/soul (jihad bin nafs/qalb)

Jihad by the tongue (jihad bil lisan)

Jihad by the pen/knowledge (jihad bil qalam/ilm)

Jihad by the hand (jihad bil yad)

Jihad by the sword (jihad bis saif)

Jihad of the Heart/Soul

Jihad of the heart/soul; in Arabic: jihad bin nafs/qalb. It is referred as "the greater Jihad" (al-jihad al-akbar).

It is one's inner struggle of good against evil; refraining oneself from the whispers of Shaitan (Satan).

This process involves allowing Islam to transform one's soul to achieving internal peace; and forgoing the hatred and anger.

“Jihad is ordained for you (Muslims) though you dislike it, and it may be that you dislike a thing which is good for you and that you like a thing which is bad for you. Allah knows but you do not know.”

{Quran, Surah 2: Al-Baqarah, Verse 216; Mohsin Translation}

**Jihad by the tongue**

Jihad by the tongue; in Arabic: *jihad bil lisan*.

It is defending Islam and spreading Islam by scholarly lectures, speeches and debates. It often overlaps with Da'awah (invitation to Islam, or spreading the message of Islam).

In The Last Sermon, Prophet Mohammed (peace be upon him) asked the listeners whether he has passed on the message to them; and they confirmed affirmatively.

Then the Messenger of Allah ordered all those present today to pass on the same message to those who are not here today; and the last person to hear the message should understand it better than the people here.

**Jihad by the pen/knowledge**

Jihad by the pen/knowledge; in Arabic: *jihad bil qalam/ilm*.

This form of Jihad involves scholarly research of Islam in aiding the spread and defence of Islam; and publishing written articles in clearing misconceptions and correction lies against Islam.

Examples of such Jihad include the research and discovery of scientific evidences, literature miracles and mathematical miracles from the Quran. Messenger of Allah once stated that the ink of a scholar is holier than the blood of a martyr; and one who is reading looks handsome in front of Allah.

**Jihad by the hand**

Jihad by the hand; in Arabic: *jihad bil yad*.

This is a Jihad of action rather than words. At certain areas, it overlaps with Zakart (charity) and Hajj (pilgrimage).

Some of its examples include giving charity to the poor and needy, performing Hajj or Ummrah, helping those who need help, saving people's lives, etc. These are more of physical deeds instead of words.

“A person whose feet become dust ridden because of [striving] in the way of Allah will never be touched by the flames of Hell”

{ Sahih Bukhari 2811 }

The most beautiful of all Jihad is a perfect Hajj. It involves testing of one's patience and piety to the apex. The whole period of Hajj, with just one intention and aim, worshiping Allah!

**Jihad by the sword**

Jihad by the sword; in Arabic: *jihad bis saif*. In contrary to Jihad of the heart/soul; this form of Jihad is referred as “the lesser jihad” (*al-jihad alasghar*).

Sometimes it is necessary to undertake Jihad by the sword. This would include usage of arsenals and engaging in a combat. This could be simply a bunch of freedom fighters or an organised campaign of army.

Jihad by the sword is use of arms to engage into a combat. It is not misuse of arms to create violence.

There are only two situations were Jihad by the sword is allowed to be undertaken.

- 1) For self-defence. When someone attacks you or when your nation has been attacked. Engaging into combat due to self defence.
- 2) Fighting against evil and unjust. It is also a sin if a Muslim sees unjust been done, capable of stopping it, yet not doing anything about it. This can include war on drug, war on child

The American administration today seems to be launching a global war on terror, but are they the first to launch the war on terror?

The Muslims already announced the war on terror fourteen centuries ago, under the name of Jihad bis saif!

There are many rules and limitations when engaging in combat under the title of Jihad. For example, civilians are not to be harmed; trees are not to be cut down; asylum should be granted to surrendering enemy soldiers; etc.

“And if anyone of the Mushrikun seeks your protection then grant him protection, so that he may hear the Word of Allah, and then escort him to where he can be secure, that is because they are men who know not.”

{Quran, Surah 9: At-Taubah, Verse 6; Mohsin Translation}

The above verse states that when an enemy soldier surrenders during a battle, the Muslim soldiers must grant asylum and in addition, escort him to safety!

The treatment for prisoners of war is also clearly stated in the Quran. Prisoners of war under Muslim prisons are to eat, drink and dress the same Muslim soldiers eat, drink and dress.

And even under the unfortunate event of shortage of food, it is the prisoners who are to eat first before the Muslim soldiers guarding them!

A closer look at the Sword

Despite the fact that Jihad by the sword is the lesser Jihad, it is the only form of Jihad that most of the people in the world perceive Jihad as.

This is unfortunate, especially for the Muslims. Many so-called “teachers of Islam” have been misusing this to assemble their so-called “holy army” to fight their so-called “holy war”.

But you can’t blame the religion for what a few of its people do. In every society, there is a black sheep.

Self-Defence:

Since Jihad by the sword has been overwhelmingly magnified in the wrong angle, let’s take a closer look at it in the right angle. What is wrong with Jihad by the sword if it is fighting for self-defence?

In the early years of revelation of Islam in Mecca, Muslims were not granted permission from Allah to fight. So the Muslims suffered both moral and physical humiliations from the non-Muslims in Mecca.

The first verses regarding Jihad were then revealed allowing Muslims to undertake self-defence.

“And fight in the Way of Allah those who fight you, but transgress not the limits. Truly, Allah likes not the transgressors.

{Quran, Surah 2: Al-Baqarah, Verse 190; Mohsin Translation}

Many of the Quranic verses are being quoted out of context to wrongly justify terrorist actions. Yet, most of those verses are only referring to a particular situation; such as Battle of Badr or Battle of Uhud.

Intention and war against Satan:

“Those who believe, fight in the Cause of Allah, and those who disbelieve, fight in the cause of Satan. So fight against the friends of Satan. Ever feeble indeed is the plot of Satan.”

{Quran, Surah 4: An-Nisa, Verse 76; Mohsin Translation}

Now the second question is, what is wrong in fighting against evil and liberating people from sufferings?

“Once a person came to the Prophet (sws) and said that some people fight for the spoils of war, some for fame and some to show off their valour; he then asked the Prophet (sws): “Which one of them fights in the way of Allah”. The Prophet (sws) replied: “Only that person fights in the way of Allah who sets foot in the battlefield to raise high the name of Allah”.

{ Sahih Bukhari 2810}

**Who is a Holy Warrior?**

According to the Quran, a martyr who died in the way of Jihad is promised Paradise. But what are the criteria of martyr, or in other words, what are the criteria of a Holy Warrior undertaking the True Jihad?

The most famous of all Hadith is the one regarding everything we do are judged by our intentions; so as it is mentioned in the previous chapter.

**So who is an example of a Holy Warrior?**

Ali bin Abu Talib, cousin of Prophet Mohammed (s.a.w) and the fourth Caliph of the Islamic Ummah is a good example.

During one of the battles, Ali was about to give a deathblow to an enemy soldier. Just then, that enemy soldier spat at Ali. Ali then suddenly stopped, threw down his sword and refused to kill that enemy soldier.

After the battle, Ali’s soldiers asked Ali why he suddenly stopped and refused to kill that enemy soldier on the battlefield.

Ali explained that he got angry when that enemy soldier spat at him. So if he had killed that enemy soldier right then, he would be killing out of his own anger and no longer fighting for Justice. In the sight of Allah, he would then be no different from a murderer.

**Brothers and Sisters that is how we should see a Holy Warrior!**

One of the most manipulated concepts in Islam today is the concept of jihad.

The concept of jihad is indeed a Quranic one, but sadly, a false and twisted version of this Quranic concept has been used by terrorists acting in the name of Islam to commit various terrorist acts. These terrorist acts, which occur all over the world, aim at the indiscriminate killing of innocent people. They are being undertaken in the name of “jihad”. These non-Islamic acts have gone a long way towards distorting the image of Islam.

As with any religious concept, it’s correct definition lies in the scripture and not in the interpretation of humans.

To fully understand the Quranic concept of jihad, it is essential to address the following issues:

1- The Quranic definition of the word jihad

2- What is “The cause of God”?

3- Are the ones who explode themselves in 'suicide bombings' really going to Heaven as they have been led to believe?

4- Does the concept of a 'holy war' have Quranic authorisation?

**FIRST: The Quranic definition of the word jihad**

The literal definition of the word jihad is: striving to achieve a goal, while the Quranic definition of the word is “striving with one’s self and one’s money in the cause of God”.

This Quranic definition is confirmed in a number of Quranic verses which speak of jihad. The following are some examples:

“The true believers are those who believe in God and His messenger, then attain the status of having no doubt whatsoever, and strive (jahadu) with their money and their lives in the cause of God. These are the truthful ones.” 49:15

“Those who believe, and emigrate, and strive (jahadu) in the cause of God with their money and their lives, are far greater in rank in the sight of God. These are the winners.” 9:20

“As for the messenger and those who believed with him, they eagerly strive (jahadu) with their money and their lives. These have deserved all the good things; they are the winners.” 9:88

p.s. the word “jahadu” is the verb form of the noun “jihad.

**SECOND : The cause of God**

Now that we have established that jihad means to strive with one's self and one's money in the cause of God, we need to determine what is the Quranic meaning of the phrase: "the cause of God"? Striving to uphold the "cause of God" simply means striving to uphold all God's commandments and a strive to condemn all God's prohibitions. Hence, a jihad in the cause of God is a strive to preach and uphold God's way and God's Law. Since the word jihad has been manipulated to advocate violence and the killing of innocent people, it is necessary to establish, with clear Quranic evidence, that the "cause of God" does not allow unlawful killing or violence.

1- First, we must always be aware of the prime declaration in the Quran which states that God does not advocate sin:

"God never advocates sin. Are you saying about God what you do not know?" 7:28

2- Following from that, the Quran states categorically that killing any innocent soul is a gross sin:

"..... You shall not kill - God has made life sacred - except in the course of justice. These are His commandments to you, that you may understand." 6:151

"You shall not kill any person - for God has made life sacred - except in the course of justice. ...." 17:33

The prohibition to kill any innocent soul has always been the law of God, in the Quran and in all previous scripture:

"....., we decreed for the Children of Israel that anyone who murders any person who had not committed murder or horrendous crimes, it shall be as if he murdered all the people. " 5:32

3- God does not allow fighting (war) except in the case of self defence:

" ..... If they leave you alone, refrain from fighting you, and offer you peace, then God gives you no excuse to fight them" 4:90

"If they resort to peace, so shall you, and put your trust in God. He is the Hearer, the Omniscient." 8:61

"do not aggress; God dislikes the aggressors." 5:87

4- God commands that there will be no compulsion in religion:

"There shall be no compulsion in religion ..." 2:256

"You have your religion and I have mine" 109:6

"Had your Lord willed, all the people on earth would have believed. Do you want to force the people to become believers?" 10:99

The commands in the above verses are very clear. The Quran confirms that belief must be attained voluntarily and not forcibly. If we are forced into becoming Muslims, there would be no credit due. The choice must be a voluntary one.

"Proclaim: "This is the truth from your Lord," then Whoever wills let him believe, and whoever wills let him disbelieve" 18:29

"You shall remind, for your mission is to deliver this reminder. You have no power over them" 88:21-22

The message of no compulsion in religion is once again emphasised in the above Quranic words.

5- Quran advocates pardon, forgiveness and tolerance:

"You shall resort to pardon, advocate tolerance, and disregard the ignorant" 7:199

"Tell those who believe to forgive those who do not long for the days of (meeting) God. He will fully pay everyone for whatever they have earned." 45:14

The Quran condemns the killing or even the persecution of people merely because they embrace a different religion. The Quran mandates absolute freedom of religion among all people. Respect and mutual co-existence must be exercised with those of other religions. The Quran urges Muslims to treat such people kindly and equitably:

"God does not enjoin you from befriending those who do not fight you because of religion, and do not evict you from your homes. You may befriend them and be equitable towards them. God loves the equitable." 60:8

-----  
As all the above verses indicate, the Quran is clear in prohibiting all violence, unlawful killing and also forcing others into Islam.

Attacks on civilians and on innocent people around the world by these terrorist groups is a violation of all the verses quoted above. This is an act that is condemned by all religions including Islam.

THIRD : Are the ones who explode themselves in 'suicide bombings' really going to Heaven as they have been led to believe?



Suicide is a state of disbelief and loss of faith that is condemned by God throughout the Quran. In the Quran, God commands the believers never to despair or lose hope but in stead have faith in God and work for a brighter future:

" ..... none despairs of God's grace except the disbelieving people." 12:87

It is true that many of the youth who commit suicide bombing live in dire situations and there is no denying of their suffering and oppression. But there is no justification for breaking God's commandment. Oppression is not a reason to break God's law. On the contrary, oppression is a good reason to hold tight to these commandments and to show more faith in God. Two wrongs do not make a right.

Sadly, many young people in Islamic countries who get drafted into one of the terrorist groups, are completely brain washed to believe that when they explode themselves in what is known as "suicide bombing" that they die as martyrs and are sent directly to Heaven!

Young male youth, who are easy prey for the devious politically motivated preachers, are totally brain washed into believing that beautiful virgins are waiting for them in Paradise!

Those who kill innocent people in the name of Islam or in the name of God, and who think of themselves as martyrs, should think twice. Their act is categorically condemned by God as per the above verses of the Quran. These people are disobeying God's commandments and in stead upholding the fabricated claims of their teachers/leaders!

"You shall spend in the cause of God; do not throw yourselves with your own hands into destruction. You shall be charitable; God loves the charitable." 2:195

"O you who believe, do not consume each others' properties illicitly - only mutually acceptable transactions are permitted. You shall not kill yourselves. God is Merciful towards you.

"Anyone who commits these transgressions, maliciously and deliberately, we will condemn him to Hell. This is easy for God to do." 4:29-30

As per all the Quranic verses presented, we understand the following:

1- Killing an innocent soul is a great sin in the sight of God

2- Suicide in any form is condemned by God.

3- The Quran does not promise Paradise to those who commit suicide but rather warn of great retribution.

FOURTH : Is there such a thing as a "Holy War" in the Quran?

Various terrorist groups portray "jihad" as a "holy war". The media in the west has been sucked up into accommodating or reporting this false interpretation.

In the light of the Quran, there is no war which is holy; not under any circumstances. In fact, the whole text of the Quran promotes peace rather than war. The word Islam itself is a derivative of the word "salam" which means peace.

There are times, and in specific circumstances, when the option of war is allowed. This stems from the fact that the Quran advocates opposition to aggression and oppression. And thus, in such circumstances war is allowed but only as an act of self defence, but never as an act of aggression.

Whenever there is a possibility to avoid war, then this alternative, as long as it is reasonable, must be taken.

"You shall prepare for them all the power you can muster, and all the equipment you can mobilise, that you may frighten the enemies of God, your enemies, as well as others who are not known to you; God knows them.

Whatever you spend in the cause of God will be repaid to you generously, without the least injustice. If they resort to peace, so shall you, and put your trust in God. He is the Hearer, the Omniscient." 8:60-61

"Permission (to fight) is granted to those who are being persecuted, since injustice has befallen them, and God is certainly able to support them. They were evicted from their homes unjustly, for no reason other than saying, "Our Lord is God." If it were not for God's supporting of some people against others, monasteries, churches, synagogues, and masjids - where the name of God is commemorated frequently - would have been destroyed. Absolutely, God supports those who support Him. God is Powerful, Almighty." 22:39-40

The case made in the Quran for war, and perhaps the most important and often confused as a holy war, is the war "in the cause of God". Fighting an oppressor or aggressor is fighting against oppression or aggression, thus it is fighting for justice and therefore in the cause of God.

"You may fight "in the cause of God" against those who attack you, but do not aggress. God does not love the aggressors." 2:190

12 Clearly as the above verse states, fighting in the cause of God is a case of fighting an aggressor and thus is a case of fighting in self defence.

Fighting oppression "in the cause of God" is also the subject of 4:75

"Those who readily fight in the cause of God are those who forsake this world in favour of the Hereafter.

Whoever fights in the cause of God, then gets killed, or attains victory, we will surely grant him a great recompense. Why should you not fight in the cause of God when weak men, women, and children are imploring:

"Our Lord, deliver us from this community whose people are oppressive, and be You our Lord and Master."

4:74-75

Thus it becomes clear that the concept of a strive "in the cause of God", is not restricted to the case of fighting a war "in the cause of God", it is also about striving with one's self and one's money in the cause of God. This could be a strive to spread the "way of God", or even giving charity as per the words:

"You shall spend in the cause of God; do not throw yourselves with your own hands into destruction. You shall be charitable; God loves the charitable." 2:195

The underlined words confirm the relationship between spending "in the cause of God" and having that money spent towards charitable causes.

-----  
To conclude, it is quite clear that the word jihad has been badly manipulated by those with political aims, and in violation of the Quranic truth. The word 'holy' has never been used in the Quran in connection with war. There simply is no reference anywhere in the Quran for what they call "holy war".

There are times when war is permitted, but as we have seen in all the Quranic words, it is only permitted as a practise of self defence, and it is never called a "holy war". Islam resolves around the concept of peace:

"If they resort to peace, so shall you, and put your trust in God. He is the Hearer, the Omniscient." 8:61

Islam and Women

Oppressed, inferior, and unequal – for many people, these are the first words that come to mind when thinking about women in Islam. These stereotypes confuse Islam with cultural practices and fail to recognize that Islam has empowered women with the most progressive rights since the 7th century. In Islam, women are not inferior or unequal to men. This brochure presents the actual teachings of Islam regarding the rights, roles, and responsibilities of women, with a special focus on gender equality in Islam.

At a time when female children were buried alive in Arabia and women were considered transferable property, Islam honored women in society by elevating them and protecting them with unprecedented rights. Islam gave women the right to education, to marry someone of their choice, to retain their identity after marriage, to divorce, to work, to own and sell property, to seek protection by the law, to vote, and to participate in civic and political engagement.

In 610 C.E., God began to reveal the message of Islam to Prophet Muhammad, peace be upon him (pbuh), in Mecca. Muhammad (pbuh) called people towards the belief in one God and encouraged them to be just and merciful to one another. In reforming the pagan Arab society, he particularly transformed their mindset regarding the treatment of women. Islam abolished the practice of killing female children and raised the stature of women in society to one of dignity, esteem, and privilege.

God devotes an entire chapter of the Quran, the holy book of Islam, to women. In addition, God directly addresses women repeatedly throughout the Quran. Islam proclaims that all human beings, men and women, are born in a pure state. The goal of every Muslim is to preserve this purity by shunning evil tendencies and beautifying their inner being with virtuous traits.

Islam further confirms that both men and women are equal in the sight of God. In the Quran, God declares, "...Indeed, the most noble of you in the sight of Allah is the most righteous of you..." (49:13) At another place in the Quran, God clearly states that all humans are equal: "To whoever, male or female, does good deeds and has faith, We shall give a good life and reward them according to the best of their actions." (16:97)

While Islam clearly establishes that men and women are equal, it does recognize that they are not identical. God created men and women with unique physiological and psychological attributes. In Islam, these differences are embraced as vital components to a healthy family and community structure with each individual contributing their own distinctive talents to society.

Hence, God's rules apply to both genders, but in diverse ways. For example, God commanded women to cover certain parts of their body, including their hair, to preserve their modesty. Men are also required to cover parts

13 of their body out of modesty, but not in the same way as women. Therefore, God commanded both men and women to be modest; yet, the manner in which they observe it is different. Similarly, the rights, roles, and responsibilities of women are evenly balanced with those of men but are not necessarily the same. As Islam has granted individual identities to men and women, a constant comparison between the two is futile. Each plays a unique role to mutually uphold social morality and societal balance. The following overview details a wide range of women's rights in Islam. It addresses some common misconceptions and provides insight into the diverse roles and responsibilities women fulfill in society. It must also be mentioned here that Muslims are not always representative of Islam and may follow their cultural influences or personal interests. In so doing, they not only disenfranchise women, they also go against the clear guidelines laid out in Islam regarding the treatment of women. Therefore, their practices go against the liberties and entitlements which Islam empowers women with, as shown below.

#### Education

Back in the 7th century, Muhammad (pbuh) declared that the pursuit of knowledge is obligatory on every Muslim – male and female. This declaration was very clear and was largely implemented by Muslims throughout history. One of the most influential scholars of Islam was Muhammad's wife, Aisha. After his death, men and women would travel to learn from her because she was considered a great scholar of Islam. The recognition of female scholarship and women's participation in academia has been encouraged and practiced throughout the majority of Islamic history. For instance, al-Qarawiyyin Mosque and University, the oldest running university, was funded by a woman, Fatima al-Fihri, in Morocco in 859 C.E.

#### Motherhood

In Islam, God clearly gives mothers a high status and elevates their position in the family. In the Quran, God mentions all the sacrifices mothers make in bearing children to remind people to treat their mothers with love, respect, and care. Emphasizing the importance of mothers, the Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) said, "Heaven lies under the feet of your mother."

On another occasion, a man repeatedly asked Muhammad (pbuh), "Who amongst the people is the most worthy of my good companionship?" Each time, the Prophet (pbuh) replied, "Your mother." When the man asked for the fourth time, he replied, "Your father."

#### Politics and Social Services

Among the early Muslims, women were active participants in the cohesive functioning of the society. Women expressed their opinions freely and their advice was actively sought. Women nursed the wounded during battles, and some even participated on the battlefield. Women traded openly in the marketplace, so much so that the second caliph, Umar, appointed a woman, Shaffa bint Abdullah, as the supervisor of the bazaar. In Islamic history, women participated in government, public affairs, lawmaking, scholarship, and teaching. To continue to uphold this tradition, women are encouraged to actively participate in improving, serving, and leading the different aspects of the community.

#### Inheritance

Before Islam, women all across the globe were deprived of inheritance and were themselves considered property to be inherited by men. Islam gave women the right to own property and inherit from relatives, which was a revolutionary concept in the seventh century.

Whether a woman is a wife, mother, sister, or daughter, she receives a certain share of her deceased relative's property. This share depends on her degree of relationship to the deceased and the number of heirs. While many societies around the world denied women inheritance, Islam assured women this right, illustrating the universal justice of Islam's divine law.

#### Financial Responsibilities

In Islam, women are not obligated to earn or spend any money on housing, food, or general expenses. If a woman is married, her husband must fully support her financially and if she's not married, that responsibility belongs to her closest male relative (father, brother, uncle, etc).

She also has the right to work and spend the money she earns as she wishes. She has no obligation to share her money with her husband or any other family members, although she may choose to do so out of good will. For instance, Khadija, the wife of the Prophet Muhammad (pbuh), was one of the most successful businesswomen of Mecca, and she freely spent from her wealth to support her husband and the cause of Islam.

At the time of marriage, a woman is entitled to a financial gift (dowry) from her husband.

14 This dowry is legally owned by her and cannot be used by anyone else. In the case of divorce, she has the right to keep whatever she owned before the divorce and anything she personally earned after marriage. The former husband has no right whatsoever to any of her belongings. This ensures a woman's financial security and independence, allowing her to support herself in the case of divorce.

#### Marriage

A woman has the right to accept or reject marriage proposals and her approval is required to complete the marriage contract. She cannot be forced to marry someone against her will and if this occurs for cultural reasons, it is in direct opposition of Islam. By the same principle, women also have the right to seek divorce if they are dissatisfied with their marriage.

In Islam, marriage is based on mutual peace, love, and compassion. God says about Himself, "And of His signs is that He created for you from yourselves mates that you may find tranquility in them; and He placed between you affection and mercy..." (Quran 30:21) Muhammad (pbuh) embodied the best character and is a role model for all Muslims. His example of being helpful around the household and treating his family with compassion and love is a tradition that Muslims strive to implement in their daily lives. Muhammad (pbuh) treated his wives with the utmost respect and honor and was never abusive towards them. One of his traditions clearly states, "The best of you are those who are best to their wives."

#### Dignity and Protection from Harm

Any form of emotional, physical, or psychological abuse is prohibited in Islam and the improper treatment of women is no exception to this rule. Indeed, there is no teaching in Islam, when studied in its complete context, which condones any kind of domestic violence. Islam clearly disallows any form of oppression or abuse, according to Dr. Zainab Alwani, a leading female Muslim scholar. It cannot be stated enough times that anyone who exercises unjust authority in the name of Islam is actually doing so to uphold their own cultural influences or personal interests. All of God's creation is dignified and protected under Islamic law.

#### Modesty

In an environment which constantly emphasizes the physical form through various media, women are constantly faced with an unattainable standard of beauty. Although Muslim women are falsely classified as oppressed based on their modest dress, they are in fact liberated from such objectification by the society around them. This modest appearance, which includes veiling, highlights a woman's personality and character instead of her physical figure and promotes a deeper appreciation for who she is as a person. In this regard, Muslim women identify with Mary, the mother of Jesus (pbuh), who is known for her piety and modesty.

\*\*\*

In conclusion, Islam has an extensive tradition of protecting the civil liberties of women based on the guidelines set forth by God and His Prophet. Women are empowered with many rights and protections under Islamic law and are honored with a dignified stature in society.

#### QUESTION: WHY WOMEN CAN'T HAVE 4 HUSBANDS?

Answer: if a man has 4 wives & they have a child there would be 1 father & that's the husband only. If a woman has 4 husbands & she gives birth it would be confusing to know who is father out of 4. but now with DNA test u can find out. And if suddenly all 4 wives want to be a mom. they can go to 1 husband make love, wait couple of more months & finally give birth of their childs. in the same time 4 husbands want to have their own baby with 1 wife & only she can give birth the husband can't give birth & they don't want their baby in a test tube or other women to give birth except their own married wife. Now they will either kill each other to have 1 to make love with his wife or divorce her or leave her forever or even worst rape & kill her simply creating the most dangerous situation. A man is allowed to marry up to 4 only not 5 or 6. first the rule is to marry only 1. & then if he can do justice & treat all 4 100% equally and of course take her all responsibility meaning can effort her 100% only then he can marry up to 4. Prophet Muhammad said the best of man is the 1 who is the best to his wife. A man asked the prophet who should I do the most favor to 1st he replied your mother man asked 2nd he replied your mother man asked 3rd he replied your mother, man asked for 4th time he replied your father. The mother has 3 times more right then the father. He also said the heaven is in beneath the foot of your mother. A wife's heaven is beneath the foot of her husband. In Quran it says men are like the clothes to their wives & wives are like the clothes to their husbands. It means they are both equal to Allah god even though their physical shapes & purpose are different. & clothes were very important things in that time & still are. It's a grace a mercy & a

blessing of god Allah that a woman can give birth and be a mother which man can never do or earn that right & respect & position of a woman in Islam. But in Christianity and Judaism giving birth and having the monthly period or mens was seen as a punishment & a curse from god. In the past they even dared to ask if a woman had a soul ? Again the maximum wives a man can have are 4 not anymore. The bible has no restrictions on how many wives or husband can a person have it's the church's decision to have 1 husband & 1 wife. In Islam a woman can have only 1 husband. For more information search in Google by your own self & believe in the evidence from god the holy Quran which provides peace & protection for humanity. May Allah guide & protect all. Only love peace & god bless for all.

**Life of Muhammad (pbuh) by a Non-Muslim**

by By Prof. K. S. Ramakrishna Rao, Head of the Dept. of Philosophy, Govt. College for Women, University of Mysore, Mandya-571401 (Karnataka, India).

*Re-printed from "Islam and Modern age", Hyderabad, March 1978.*

In the desert of Arabia was Mohammad born, according to Muslim historians, on April 20, 571. The name means highly praised. He is to me the greatest mind among all the sons of Arabia. He means so much more than all the poets and kings that preceded him in that impenetrable desert of red sand.

When he appeared Arabia was a desert — a nothing. Out of nothing a new world was fashioned by the mighty spirit of Mohammad — a new life, a new culture, a new civilization, a new kingdom which extended from Morocco to Indies and influenced the thought and life of three continents — Asia, Africa and Europe. When I thought of writing on Mohammad the prophet, I was a bit hesitant because it was to write about a religion I do not profess and it is a delicate matter to do so for there are many persons professing various religions and belonging to diverse school of thought and denominations even in same religion. Though it is sometimes, claimed that religion is entirely personal yet it can not be gain-said that it has a tendency to envelop the whole universe seen as well unseen. It somehow permeates something or other our hearts, our souls, our minds their conscious as well as subconscious and unconscious levels too. The problem assumes overwhelming importance when there is a deep conviction that our past, present and future all hang by the soft delicate, tender silked cord. If we further happen to be highly sensitive, the center of gravity is very likely to be always in a state of extreme tension. Looked at from this point of view, the less said about other religion the better. Let our religions be deeply hidden and embedded in the resistance of our innermost hearts fortified by unbroken seals on our lips.

But there is another aspect of this problem. Man lives in society. Our lives are bound with the lives of others willingly or unwillingly, directly or indirectly. We eat the food grown in the same soil, drink water, from the same the same spring and breathe the same air. Even while staunchly holding our own views, it would be helpful, if we try to adjust ourselves to our surroundings, if we also know to some extent, how the mind our neighbor moves and what the main springs of his actions are. From this angle of vision it is highly desirable that one should try to know all religions of the world, in the proper spirit, to promote mutual understanding and better appreciation of our neighborhood, immediate and remote.

Further, our thoughts are not scattered as appear to be on the surface. They have got themselves crystallized around a few nuclei in the form of great world religions and living faiths that guide and motivate the lives of millions that inhabit this earth of ours. It is our duty, in one sense if we have the ideal of ever becoming a citizen of the world before us, to make a little attempt to know the great religions and system of philosophy that have ruled mankind.

In spite of these preliminary remarks, the ground in these field of religion, where there is often a conflict between intellect and emotion is so slippery that one is constantly reminded of fools that rush in where angels fear to tread. It is also not so complex from another point of view. The subject of my writing is about the tenets of a religion which is historic and its prophet who is also a historic personality. Even a hostile critic like Sir William Muir speaking about the holy Quran says that. "There is probably in the world no other book which has remained twelve centuries with so pure text." I may also add Prophet Mohammad is also a historic personality, every event of whose life has been most carefully recorded and even the minutest details preserved intact for the posterity. His life and works are not wrapped in mystery.

My work today is further lightened because those days are fast disappearing when Islam was highly misrepresented by some of its critics for reasons political and otherwise. Prof. Bevan writes in Cambridge Medieval History, "Those account of Mohammad and Islam which were published in Europe before the beginning of 19th century are now to be regarded as literary curiosities." My problem is to write this

monograph is easier because we are now generally not fed on this kind of history and much time need be spent on pointing out our misrepresentation of Islam.

The theory of Islam and Sword for instance is not heard now frequently in any quarter worth the name. The principle of Islam that there is no compulsion in religion is well known. Gibbon, a historian of world repute says, "A pernicious tenet has been imputed to Mohammadans, the duty of extirpating all the religions by sword." This charge based on ignorance and bigotry, says the eminent historian, is refuted by Quran, by history of Musalman conquerors and by their public and legal toleration of Christian worship. The great success of Mohammad's life had been effected by sheer moral force, without a stroke of sword.

But in pure self-defense, after repeated efforts of conciliation had utterly failed, circumstances dragged him into the battlefield. But the prophet of Islam changed the whole strategy of the battlefield. The total number of casualties in all the wars that took place during his lifetime when the whole Arabian Peninsula came under his banner, does not exceed a few hundreds in all. But even on the battlefield he taught the Arab barbarians to pray, to pray not individually, but in congregation to God the Almighty. During the dust and storm of warfare whenever the time for prayer came, and it comes five times a every day, the congregation prayer had not to be postponed even on the battlefield. A party had to be engaged in bowing their heads before God while other was engaged with the enemy. After finishing the prayers, the two parties had to exchange their positions. To the Arabs, who would fight for forty years on the slight provocation that a camel belonging to the guest of one tribe had strayed into the grazing land belonging to other tribe and both sides had fought till they lost 70,000 lives in all; threatening the extinction of both the tribes to such furious Arabs, the Prophet of Islam taught self-control and discipline to the extent of praying even on the battlefield. In an aged of barbarism, the Battlefield itself was humanized and strict instructions were issued not to cheat, not to break trust, not to mutilate, not to kill a child or woman or an old man, not to hew down date palm nor burn it, not to cut a fruit tree, not to molest any person engaged in worship. His own treatment with his bitterest enemies is the noblest example for his followers. At the conquest of Mecca, he stood at the zenith of his power. The city which had refused to listen to his mission, which had tortured him and his followers, which had driven him and his people into exile and which had unrelentingly persecuted and boycotted him even when he had taken refuge in a place more than 200 miles away, that city now lay at his feet. By the laws of war he could have justly avenged all the cruelties inflicted on him and his people. But what treatment did he accord to them? Mohammad's heart flowed with affection and he declared, "This day, there is no REPROOF against you and you are all free." "This day" he proclaimed, "I trample under my feet all distinctions between man and man, all hatred between man and man."

This was one of the chief objects why he permitted war in self defense, that is to unite human beings. And when once this object was achieved, even his worst enemies were pardoned. Even those who killed his beloved uncle, Hamazah, mangled his body, ripped it open, even chewed a piece of his liver.

The principles of universal brotherhood and doctrine of the equality of mankind which he proclaimed represents one very great contribution of Mohammad to the social uplift of humanity. All great religions have preached the same doctrine but the prophet of Islam had put this theory into actual practice and its value will be fully recognized, perhaps centuries hence, when international consciousness being awakened, racial prejudices may disappear and greater brotherhood of humanity come into existence.

Miss. Sarojini Naidu speaking about this aspect of Islam says, "It was the first religion that preached and practiced democracy; for in the mosque, when the minaret is sounded and the worshipers are gathered together, the democracy of Islam is embodied five times a day when the peasant and the king kneel side by side and proclaim, God alone is great." The great poetess of India continues, "I have been struck over and over again by this indivisible unity of Islam that makes a man instinctively a brother. When you meet an Egyptian, an Algerian and Indian and a Turk in London, it matters not that Egypt is the motherland of one and India is the motherland of another."

Mahatma Gandhi, in his inimitable style, says "Some one has said that Europeans in South Africa dread the advent Islam — Islam that civilized Spain, Islam that took the torch light to Morocco and preached to the world the Gospel of brotherhood. The Europeans of South Africa dread the Advent of Islam. They may claim equality with the white races. They may well dread it, if brotherhood is a sin. If it is equality of colored races then their dread is well founded."

Every year, during the Haj, the world witnesses the wonderful spectacle of this international Exhibition of Islam in leveling all distinctions of race, color and rank. Not only the Europeans, the African, the Arabian, the Persian, the Indians, the Chinese all meet together in Medina as members of one divine family, but they are clad in one dress every person in two simple pieces of white seamless cloth, one piece round the loin the other piece over the shoulders, bare head without pomp or ceremony, repeating "Here am I O God; at thy

command; thou art one and alone; Here am I." Thus there remains nothing to differentiate the high from the low and every pilgrim carries home the impression of the international significance of Islam.

In the opinion of Prof. Hurgronje "the league of nations founded by prophet of Islam put the principle of international unity of human brotherhood on such Universal foundations as to show candle to other nations." In the words of same Professor "the fact is that no nation of the world can show a parallel to what Islam has done the realization of the idea of the League of Nations."

The prophet of Islam brought the reign of democracy in its best form. The Caliph Caliph Ali and the son in-law of the prophet, the Caliph Mansur, Abbas, the son of Caliph Mamun and many other caliphs and kings had to appear before the judge as ordinary men in Islamic courts. Even today we all know how the black Negroes were treated by the civilized white races. Consider the state of BILAL, a Negro Slave, in the days of the prophet of Islam nearly 14 centuries ago. The office of calling Muslims to prayer was considered to be of status in the early days of Islam and it was offered to this Negro slave. After the conquest of Mecca, the Prophet ordered him to call for prayer and the Negro slave, with his black color and his thick lips, stood over the roof of the holy mosque at Mecca called the Ka'ba the most historic and the holiest mosque in the Islamic world, when some proud Arabs painfully cried loud, "Oh, this black Negro Slave, woe be to him. He stands on the roof of holy Ka'ba to call for prayer." At that moment, the prophet announced to the world, this verse of the holy QURAN for the first time.

"O mankind, surely we have created you, families and tribes, so you may know one another. Surely, the most honorable of you with God is MOST RIGHTEOUS AMONG you. Surely, God is Knowing, Aware."

And these words of the holy Quran created such a mighty transformation that the Caliph of Islam, the purest of Arabs by birth, offered their daughter in marriage to this Negro Slave, and whenever, the second Caliph of Islam, known to history as Umar the great, the commander of faithful, saw this Negro slave, he immediately stood in reverence and welcomed him by "Here come our master; Here come our lord." What a tremendous change was brought by Quran in the Arabs, the proudest people at that time on the earth. This is the reason why Goethe, the greatest of German poets, speaking about the Holy Quran declared that, "This book will go on exercising through all ages a most potent influence." This is also the reason why George Bernard Shaw says, "If any religion has a chance or ruling over England, say, Europe, within the next 100 years, it is Islam". It is this same democratic spirit of Islam that emancipated women from the bondage of man. Sir Charles Edward Archibald Hamilton says "Islam teaches the inherent sinlessness of man. It teaches that man and woman and woman have come from the same essence, possess the same soul and have been equipped with equal capabilities for intellectual, spiritual and moral attainments."

The Arabs had a very strong tradition that one who can smite with the spear and can wield the sword would inherit. But Islam came as the defender of the weaker sex and entitled women to share the inheritance of their parents. It gave women, centuries ago right of owning property, yet it was only 12 centuries later, in 1881, that England, supposed to be the cradle of democracy adopted this institution of Islam and the act was called "the married woman act", but centuries earlier, the Prophet of Islam had proclaimed that "Woman are twin halves of men. The rights of women are sacred. See that women maintained rights granted to them." Islam is not directly concerned with political and economic systems, but indirectly and in so far as political and economic affairs influence man's conduct, it does lay down some very important principles to govern economic life. According to Prof. Massignon, it maintains the balance between exaggerated opposites and has always in view the building of character which is the basis of civilization. This is secured by its law of inheritance, by an organized system of charity known as Zakat, and by regarding as illegal all anti-social practices in the economic field like monopoly, usury, securing of predetermined unearned income and increments, cornering markets, creating monopolies, creating an artificial scarcity of any commodity in order to force the prices to rise. Gambling is illegal. Contribution to schools, to places of worship, hospitals, digging of wells, opening of orphanages are highest acts of virtue. Orphanages have sprung for the first time, it is said, under the teaching of the prophet of Islam. The world owes its orphanages to this prophet born an orphan. "Good all this" says Carlyle about Mohammad. "The natural voice of humanity, of pity and equity, dwelling in the heart of this wild son of nature, speaks."

A historian once said a great man should be judged by three tests: Was he found to be of true metal by his contemporaries? Was he great enough to raise above the standards of his age? Did he leave anything as permanent legacy to the world at large? This list may be further extended but all these three tests of greatness are eminently satisfied to the highest degree in case of prophet Mohammad. Some illustrations of the last two have already been mentioned.

The first is: Was the Prophet of Islam found to be of true metal by his contemporaries?

Historical records show that all the contemporaries of Mohammad both friends and foes, acknowledged the sterling qualities, the spotless honesty, the noble virtues, the absolute sincerity and every trustworthiness of the apostle of Islam in all walks of life and in every sphere of human activity. Even the Jews and those who did not believe in his message, adopted him as the arbiter in their personal disputes by virtue of his perfect impartiality. Even those who did not believe in his message were forced to say "O Mohammad, we do not call you a liar, but we deny him who has given you a book and inspired you with a message." They thought he was one possessed. They tried violence to cure him. But the best of them saw that a new light had dawned on him and they hastened him to seek the enlightenment. It is a notable feature in the history of prophet of Islam that his nearest relation, his beloved cousin and his bosom friends, who know him most intimately, were not thoroughly imbued with the truth of his mission and were convinced of the genuineness of his divine inspiration. If these men and women, noble, intelligent, educated and intimately acquainted with his private life had perceived the slightest signs of deception, fraud, earthliness, or lack of faith in him, Mohammad's moral hope of regeneration, spiritual awakening, and social reform would all have been foredoomed to a failure and whole edifice would have crumbled to pieces in a moment. On the contrary, we find that devotion of his followers was such that he was voluntarily acknowledged as dictator of their lives. They braved for him persecutions and danger; they trusted, obeyed and honored him even in the most excruciating torture and severest mental agony caused by excommunication even unto death. Would this have been so, had they noticed the slightest backsliding in their master?

Read the history of the early converts to Islam, and every heart would melt at the sight of the brutal treatment of innocent Muslim men and women.

Sumayya, an innocent woman, is cruelly torn into pieces with spears. An example is made of "Yassir whose legs are tied to two camels and the beast were driven in opposite directions", Khabbab bin Arth is made lie down on the bed of burning coal with the brutal legs of their merciless tyrant on his breast so that he may not move and this makes even the fat beneath his skin melt. "Khabban bin Adi is put to death in a cruel manner by mutilation and cutting off his flesh piece-meal." In the midst of his tortures, being asked whether he did not wish Mohammad in his place while he was in his house with his family, the sufferer cried out that he was gladly prepared to sacrifice himself his family and children and why was it that these sons and daughters of Islam not only surrendered to their prophet their allegiance but also made a gift of their hearts and souls to their master? Is not the intense faith and conviction on part of immediate followers of Mohammad, the noblest testimony to his sincerity and to his utter self-absorption in his appointed task?

And these men were not of low station or inferior mental caliber. Around him in quite early days, gathered what was best and noblest in Mecca, its flower and cream, men of position, rank, wealth and culture, and from his own kith and kin, those who knew all about his life. All the first four Caliphs, with their towering personalities, were converts of this period.

The Encyclopedia Britannica says that "Mohammad is the most successful of all Prophets and religious personalities".

But the success was not the result of mere accident. It was not a hit of fortune. It was a recognition of fact that he was found to be true metal by his contemporaries. It was the result of his admirable and all compelling personality.

The personality of Mohammad! It is most difficult to get into the truth of it. Only a glimpse of it I can catch. What a dramatic succession of picturesque scenes. There is Mohammad the Prophet, there is Mohammad the General; Mohammad the King; Mohammad the Warrior; Mohammad the Businessman; Mohammad the Preacher; Mohammad the Philosopher; Mohammad the Statesman; Mohammad the Orator; Mohammad the reformer; Mohammad the Refuge of orphans; Mohammad the Protector of slaves; Mohammad the Emancipator of women; Mohammad the Law-giver; Mohammad the Judge; Mohammad the Saint.

And in all these magnificent roles, in all these departments of human activities, he is like, a hero..

Orphanhood is extreme of helplessness and his life upon this earth began with it; Kingship is the height of the material power and it ended with it. From an orphan boy to a persecuted refugee and then to an overlord, spiritual as well as temporal, of a whole nation and Arbiter of its destinies, with all its trials and temptations, with all its vicissitudes and changes, its lights and shades, its up and downs, its terror and splendor, he has stood the fire of the world and came out unscathed to serve as a model in every face of life. His achievements are not limited to one aspect of life, but cover the whole field of human conditions.

If for instance, greatness consist in the purification of a nation, steeped in barbarism and immersed in absolute moral darkness, that dynamic personality who has transformed, refined and uplifted an entire nation, sunk low as the Arabs were, and made them the torch-bearer of civilization and learning, has every claim to greatness. If greatness lies in unifying the discordant elements of society by ties of brotherhood and



19 charity, the prophet of the desert has got every title to this distinction. If greatness consists in reforming those warped in degrading and blind superstition and pernicious practices of every kind, the prophet of Islam has wiped out superstitions and irrational fear from the hearts of millions. If it lies in displaying high morals, Mohammad has been admitted by friend and foe as Al Amin, or the faithful. If a conqueror is a great man, here is a person who rose from helpless orphan and an humble creature to be the ruler of Arabia, the equal to Chosroes and Caesars, one who founded great empire that has survived all these 14 centuries. If the devotion that a leader commands is the criterion of greatness, the prophet's name even today exerts a magic charm over millions of souls, spread all over the world.

He had not studied philosophy in the school of Athens of Rome, Persia, India, or China. Yet, He could proclaim the highest truths of eternal value to mankind. Illiterate himself, he could yet speak with an eloquence and fervor which moved men to tears, to tears of ecstasy. Born an orphan blessed with no worldly goods, he was loved by all. He had studied at no military academy; yet he could organize his forces against tremendous odds and gained victories through the moral forces which he marshaled. Gifted men with genius for preaching are rare. Descartes included the perfect preacher among the rarest kind in the world. Hitler in his Mein Kamp has expressed a similar view. He says "A great theorist is seldom a great leader. An Agitator is more likely to possess these qualities. He will always be a great leader. For leadership means ability to move masses of men. The talents to produce ideas has nothing in common with capacity for leadership." "But", he says, "The Union of theorists, organizer and leader in one man, is the rarest phenomenon on this earth; Therein consists greatness."

In the person of the Prophet of Islam the world has seen this rarest phenomenon walking on the earth, walking in flesh and blood.

And more wonderful still is what the reverend Bosworth Smith remarks, "Head of the state as well as the Church, he was Caesar and Pope in one; but, he was pope without the pope's claims, and Caesar without the legions of Caesar, without an standing army, without a bodyguard, without a palace, without a fixed revenue. If ever any man had the right to say that he ruled by a right divine It was Mohammad, for he had all the power without instruments and without its support. He cared not for dressing of power. The simplicity of his private life was in keeping with his public life."

After the fall of Mecca, more than one million square miles of land lay at his feet, Lord of Arabia, he mended his own shoes and coarse woolen garments, milked the goats, swept the hearth, kindled the fire and attended the other menial offices of the family. The entire town of Medina where he lived grew wealthy in the later days of his life. Everywhere there was gold and silver in plenty and yet in those days of prosperity many weeks would elapse without a fire being kindled in the hearth of the king of Arabia, His food being dates and water. His family would go hungry many nights successively because they could not get anything to eat in the evening. He slept on no soften bed but on a palm mat, after a long busy day to spend most of his night in prayer, often bursting with tears before his creator to grant him strength to discharge his duties. As the reports go, his voice would get choked with weeping and it would appear as if a cooking pot was on fire and boiling had commenced. On the very day of his death his only assets were few coins a part of which went to satisfy a debt and rest was given to a needy person who came to his house for charity. The clothes in which he breathed his last had many patches. The house from where light had spread to the world was in darkness because there was no oil in the lamp.

Circumstances changed, but the prophet of God did not. In victory or in defeat, in power or in adversity, in affluence or in indigence, he is the same man, disclosed the same character. Like all the ways and laws of God, Prophets of God are unchangeable.

An honest man, as the saying goes, is the noblest work of God, Mohammad was more than honest. He was human to the marrow of his bones. Human sympathy, human love was the music of his soul. To serve man, to elevate man, to purify man, to educate man, in a word to humanize man-this was the object of his mission, the be-all and end all of his life. In thought, in word, in action he had the good of humanity as his sole inspiration, his sole guiding principle.

He was most unostentatious and selfless to the core. What were the titles he assumed? Only true servant of God and His Messenger. Servant first, and then a messenger. A Messenger and prophet like many other prophets in every part of the world, some known to you, many not known you. If one does not believe in any of these truths one ceases to be a Muslim. It is an article of faith.

"Looking at the circumstances of the time and unbounded reverence of his followers" says a western writer "the most miraculous thing about Mohammad is, that he never claimed the power of working miracles."

Miracles were performed but not to propagate his faith and were attributed entirely to God and his inscrutable ways. He would plainly say that he was a man like others. He had no treasures of earth or heaven.

Nor did he claim to know the secrets of that lie in womb of future. All this was in an age when miracles were supposed to be ordinary occurrences, at the beck and call of the commonest saint, when the whole atmosphere was surcharged with supernaturalism in Arabia and outside Arabia.

He turned the attention of his followers towards the study of nature and its laws, to understand them and appreciate the Glory of God. The Quran says,

“God did not create the heavens and the earth and all that is between them in play. He did not create them all but with the truth. But most men do not know.”

The world is not illusion, nor without purpose. It has been created with the truth. The number of verses inviting close observation of nature are several times more than those that relate to prayer, fasting, pilgrimage etc. all put together. The Muslim under its influence began to observe nature closely and this gave birth to the scientific spirit of the observation and experiment which was unknown to the Greeks. While the Muslim Botanist Ibn Baitar wrote on Botany after collecting plants from all parts of the world, described by Myer in his *Gesch. der Botanik*, a monument of industry, while Al Byruni traveled for forty years to collect mineralogical specimens, and Muslim Astronomers made some observations extending even over twelve years. Aristotle wrote on Physics without performing a single experiment, wrote on natural history, carelessly stating without taking the trouble to ascertain the most verifiable fact that men have more teeth than animal. Galen, the greatest authority on classical anatomy informed that the lower jaw consists of two bones, a statement which is accepted unchallenged for centuries till Abdul Lateef takes the trouble to examine a human skeleton. After enumerating several such instances, Robert Priffault concludes in his well known book *The making of humanity*, “The debt of our science to the Arabs does not consist in starting discoveries or revolutionary theories. Science owes a great more to Arabs culture; it owes its existence.” The same writer says “The Greeks systematized, generalized and theorized but patient ways of investigation, the accumulation of positive knowledge, the minute methods of science, detailed and prolonged observation, experimental inquiry, were altogether alien to Greek temperament. What we call science arose in Europe as result of new methods of investigation, of the method of experiment, observation, measurement, of the development of Mathematics in form unknown to the Greeks. That spirit and these methods, concludes the same author, were introduced into the European world by Arabs.”

It is the same practical character of the teaching of Prophet Mohammad that gave birth to the scientific spirit, that has also sanctified the daily labors and the so called mundane affairs. The Quran says that God has created man to worship him but the word worship has a connotation of its own. Gods worship is not confined to prayer alone, but every act that is done with the purpose of winning approval of God and is for the benefit of the humanity comes under its purview. Islam sanctifies life and all its pursuits provided they are performed with honesty, justice and pure intents. It obliterates the age-long distinction between the sacred and profane. The Quran says if you eat clean things and thank God for it, it is an act of worship. It is saying of the prophet of Islam that Morsel of food that one places in the mouth of his wife is an act of virtue to be rewarded by God. Another tradition of the Prophet says “He who is satisfying the desire of his heart will be rewarded by God provided the methods adopted are permissible.” A person was listening to him exclaimed ‘O Prophet of God, he is answering the calls of passions, is only satisfying the craving of his heart. Forthwith came the reply, “Had he adopted an awful method for the satisfaction of his urge, he would have been punished; then why should he not be rewarded for following the right course.”

This new conception of religion that it should also devote itself to the betterment of this life rather than concern itself exclusively with super mundane affairs, has led to a new orientation of moral values. Its abiding influence on the common relations of mankind in the affairs of every day life, its deep power over the masses, its regulation of their conception of rights and duty, its suitability and adaptability to the ignorant savage and the wise philosopher are characteristic features of the teaching of the Prophet of Islam.

But it should be most carefully born in mind this stress on good actions is not the sacrifice correctness of faith. While there are various school of thought, one praising faith at the expense of deeds, another exhausting various acts to the detriment of correct belief, Islam is based on correct faith and righteous actions. Means are important as the end and ends are as important as the means. It is an organic Unity. Together they live and thrive. Separate them and both decay and die. In Islam faith can not be divorced from the action. Right knowledge should be transferred into right action to produce the right results. How often the words came in Quran — Those who believe and do good thing, they alone shall enter paradise. Again and again, not less than fifty times these words are repeated as if too much stress can not be laid on them.

Contemplation is encouraged but mere contemplation is not the goal. Those who believe and do nothing can not exist in Islam. These who believe and do wrong are inconceivable. Divine law is the law of effort and not

21 of ideals. It chalks out for the men the path of eternal progress from knowledge to action and from action to satisfaction.

But what is the correct faith from which right action spontaneously proceeds resulting in complete satisfaction. Here the central doctrine of Islam is the Unity of God. There is no God but God is the pivot from which hangs the whole teaching and practice of Islam. He is unique not only as regards his divine being but also as regards his divine attributes.

As regards the attributes of God, Islam adopts here as in other things too, the law of golden mean. It avoids on the one hand, the view of God which divests the divine being of every attribute and rejects, on the other, the view which likens him to things material. The Quran says, On the one hand, there is nothing which is like him, on the other, it affirms that he is Seeing, Hearing, Knowing. He is the King who is without a stain of fault or deficiency, the mighty ship of His power floats upon the ocean of justice and equity. He is the Beneficent, the Merciful. He is the Guardian over all. Islam does not stop with this positive statement. It adds further which is its most special characteristic, the negative aspects of problem. There is also no one else who is guardian over everything. He is the meander of every breakage, and no one else is the meander of any breakage. He is the restorer of every loss and no one else is the restorer of any loss what-so-ever. There is no God but one God, above any need, the maker of bodies, creator of souls, the Lord of the day of judgment, and in short, in the words of Quran, to him belong all excellent qualities.

Regarding the position of man in relation to the Universe, the Quran says:

“God has made subservient to you whatever is on the earth or in universe. You are destined to rule over the Universe.”

But in relation to God, the Quran says:

“O man God has bestowed on you excellent faculties and has created life and death to put you to test in order to see whose actions are good and who has deviated from the right path.”

In spite of free will which he enjoys, to some extent, every man is born under certain circumstances and continues to live under certain circumstances beyond his control. With regard to this God says, according to Islam, it is my will to create any man under condition that seem best to me. cosmic plans finite mortals can not fully comprehend. But I will certainly test you in prosperity as well in adversity, in health as well as in sickness, in heights as well as in depths. My ways of testing differ from man to man, from hour to hour. In adversity do not despair and do resort to unlawful means. It is but a passing phase. In prosperity do not forget God. God-gifts are given only as trusts. You are always on trial, every moment on test. In this sphere of life there is not to reason why, there is but to do and die. If you live in accordance with God; and if you die, die in the path of God. You may call it fatalism. but this type of fatalism is a condition of vigorous increasing effort, keeping you ever on the alert. Do not consider this temporal life on earth as the end of human existence. There is a life after death and it is eternal. Life after death is only a connection link, a door that opens up hidden reality of life. Every action in life however insignificant, produces a lasting effect. It is correctly recorded somehow. Some of the ways of God are known to you, but many of his ways are hidden from you. What is hidden in you and from you in this world will be unrolled and laid open before you in the next. the virtuous will enjoy the blessing of God which the eye has not seen, nor has the ear heard, nor has it entered into the hearts of men to conceive of they will march onward reaching higher and higher stages of evolution. Those who have wasted opportunity in this life shall under the inevitable law, which makes every man taste of what he has done, be subjugated to a course of treatment of the spiritual diseases which they have brought about with their own hands. Beware, it is terrible ordeal. Bodily pain is torture, you can bear somehow. Spiritual pain is hell, you will find it almost unbearable. Fight in this life itself the tendencies of the spirit prone to evil, tempting to lead you into iniquities ways. Reach the next stage when the self-accusing spirit in your conscience is awakened and the soul is anxious to attain moral excellence and revolt against disobedience. This will lead you to the final stage of the soul at rest, contented with God, finding its happiness and delight in him alone. The soul no more stumbles. The stage of struggle passes away. Truth is victorious and falsehood lays down its arms. All complexes will then be resolved. Your house will not be divided against itself. Your personality will get integrated round the central core of submission to the will of God and complete surrender to his divine purpose. All hidden energies will then be released. The soul then will have peace. God will then address you:

“O thou soul that art at rest, and restand fully contented with thy Lord return to thy Lord. He pleased with thee and thou pleased with him; So enter among my servants and enter into my paradise.”

This is the final goal for man; to become, on the, one hand, the master of the universe and on the other, to see that his soul finds rest in his Lord, that not only his Lord will be pleased with him but that he is also pleased with his Lord. Contentment, complete contentment, satisfaction, complete satisfaction, peace, complete peace.

The love of God is his food at this stage and he drinks deep at the fountain of life. Sorrow and defeat do not overwhelm him and success does not find him in vain and exulting.

The western nations are only trying to become the master of the Universe. But their souls have not found peace and rest.

Thomas Carlyle, struck by this philosophy of life writes "and then also Islam-that we must submit to God; that our whole strength lies in resigned submission to Him, whatsoever he does to us, the thing he sends to us, even if death and worse than death, shall be good, shall be best; we resign ourselves to God." The same author continues "If this be Islam, says Goethe, do we not all live in Islam?" Carlyle himself answers this question of Goethe and says "Yes, all of us that have any moral life, we all live so. This is yet the highest wisdom that heaven has revealed to our earth."

At Muhammad's own death an attempt was made to deify him, but the man who was to become his administrative successor killed the hysteria with one of the noblest speeches in religious history: If there are any among you who worshipped Muhammad, he is dead. But if it is God you worshipped, He lives forever. [James A. Michener, *Islam The Misunderstood Religion.*, In the Reader's Digest (American Edition) for May 1955, pp. 68-70.]

### Conclusion

He said: "I am indeed a servant of God: He hath given me revelation and made me a prophet; 019.031 "And He hath made me blessed wheresoever I be, and hath enjoined on me Prayer and Charity as long as I live; 019.032 "(He) hath made me kind to my mother, and not overbearing or miserable; 019.033 "So peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die, and the day that I shall be raised up to life (again)"! 019.034 Such (was) Jesus the son of Mary: (it is) a statement of truth, about which they (vainly) dispute. 019.035 It is not befitting to (the majesty of) God that He should beget a son. Glory be to Him! when He determines a matter, He only says to it, "Be", and it is. Al-Quran.

God forbids you not, with regards to those who fight you not for (your) faith nor drive you out of your homes, from dealing kindly and justly with them; for God loveth those who are just (Qur'an, 60:8)

Adam, Abraham ,Noah, Moses ,Jesus , Muhammad were all messengers & prophets of 1 God Allah so Islam is the 1st religion & it's the last religion because God is Allah & God is forever so is God's religion which is only Islam & it is also forever. Finally Islam always existed even before Adam, Abraham ,Noah, Moses ,Jesus & Muhammad because it's the only true religion from God Allah.

Question: Does Quran mention that Prophet Muhammad is the last prophet? Muhammad is not the father of any of your men, but [he is] the messenger of God and seal(last,finish,end,final) of the prophets and God has the knowledge of everything. (Quran 33:40)

Information arranged and organized BY MR.FAISAL FAHIM

PROVING THE EXISTENCE OF ALLAH (SWT) TO AN ATHEIST

by Dr. Zakir Naik

### CONGRATULATING AN ATHEIST

Normally, when I meet an atheist, the first thing I like to do is to congratulate him and say, " My special congratulations to you", because most of the people who believe in God are doing blind belief - he is a Christian, because his father is a Christian; he is a Hindu, because his father is a Hindu; the majority of the people in the world are blindly following the religion of their fathers. An atheist, on the other hand, even though he may belong to a religious family, uses his intellect to deny the existence of God; what ever concept or qualities of God he may have learnt in his religion may not seem to be logical to him.

My Muslim brothers may question me, "Zakir, why are you congratulating an atheist?" The reason that I am congratulating an atheist is because he agrees with the first part of the Shahada i.e. the Islamic Creed, 'La ilaaha' - meaning 'there is no God'.

So half my job is already done; now the only part left is 'il lallah' i.e. 'BUT ALLAH' which I shall do Insha Allah. With others (who are not atheists) I have to first remove from their minds the wrong concept of God they may have and then put the correct concept of one true God.

## **LOGICAL CONCEPT OF GOD**

My first question to the atheist will be: "What is the definition of God?" For a person to say there is no God, he should know what is the meaning of God. If I hold a book and say that 'this is a pen', for the opposite person to say, 'it is not a pen', he should know what is the definition of a pen, even if he does not know nor is able to recognise or identify the object I am holding in my hand. For him to say this is not a pen, he should at least know what a pen means. Similarly for an atheist to say 'there is no God', he should at least know the concept of God. His concept of God would be derived from the surroundings in which he lives. The god that a large number of people worship has got human qualities - therefore he does not believe in such a god. Similarly a Muslim too does not and should not believe in such false gods.

If a non-Muslim believes that Islam is a merciless religion with something to do with terrorism; a religion which does not give rights to women; a religion which contradicts science; in his limited sense that non-Muslim is correct to reject such Islam. The problem is he has a wrong picture of Islam. Even I reject such a false picture of Islam, but at the same time, it becomes my duty as a Muslim to present the correct picture of Islam to that non-Muslim i.e. Islam is a merciful religion, it gives equal rights to the women, it is not incompatible with logic, reason and science; if I present the correct facts about Islam, that non-Muslim may Inshallah accept Islam.

Similarly the atheist rejects the false gods and the duty of every Muslim is to present the correct concept of God which he shall Insha Allah not refuse.

(You may refer to my article, 'Concept of God in Islam', for more details)

## **QUR'AN AND MODERN SCIENCE**

The methods of proving the existence of God with usage of the material provided in the 'Concept of God in Islam' to an atheist may satisfy some but not all.

Many atheists demand a scientific proof for the existence of God. I agree that today is the age of science and technology. Let us use scientific knowledge to kill two birds with one stone, i.e. to prove the existence of God and simultaneously prove that the Qur'an is a revelation of God.

If a new object or a machine, which no one in the world has ever seen or heard of before, is shown to an atheist or any person and then a question is asked, "Who is the first person who will be able to provide details of the mechanism of this unknown object? After little bit of thinking, he will reply, 'the creator of that object.' Some may say 'the producer' while others may say 'the manufacturer.' What ever answer the person gives, keep it in your mind, the answer will always be either the creator, the producer, the manufacturer or some what of the same meaning, i.e. the person who has made it or created it. Don't grapple with words, whatever answer he gives, the meaning will be same, therefore accept it.

SCIENTIFIC FACTS MENTIONED IN THE QUR'AN: for details on this subject please refer to my book, 'THE QUR'AN AND MODERN SCIENCE – COMPATIBLE OR INCOMPATIBLE?'

## **THEORY OF PROBABILITY**

In mathematics there is a theory known as 'Theory of Probability'. If you have two options, out of which one is right, and one is wrong, the chances that you will chose the right one is half, i.e. one out of the two will be correct. You have 50% chances of being correct. Similarly if you toss a coin the chances that your guess will be correct is 50% (1 out of 2) i.e. 1/2. If you toss a coin the second time, the chances that you will be correct in the second toss is again 50% i.e. half. But the chances that you will

24 be correct in both the tosses is half multiplied by half ( $1/2 \times 1/2$ ) which is equal to  $1/4$  i.e. 50% of 50% which is equal to 25%. If you toss a coin the third time, chances that you will be correct all three times is ( $1/2 \times 1/2 \times 1/2$ ) that is  $1/8$  or 50% of 50% of 50% that is 12½%.

A dice has got six sides. If you throw a dice and guess any number between 1 to 6, the chances that your guess will be correct is  $1/6$ . If you throw the dice the second time, the chances that your guess will be correct in both the throws is ( $1/6 \times 1/6$ ) which is equal to  $1/36$ . If you throw the dice the third time, the chances that all your three guesses are correct is ( $1/6 \times 1/6 \times 1/6$ ) is equal to  $1/216$  that is less than 0.5 %.

Let us apply this theory of probability to the Qur'an, and assume that a person has guessed all the information that is mentioned in the Qur'an which was unknown at that time. Let us discuss the probability of all the guesses being simultaneously correct.

At the time when the Qur'an was revealed, people thought the world was flat, there are several other options for the shape of the earth. It could be triangular, it could be quadrangular, pentagonal, hexagonal, heptagonal, octagonal, spherical, etc. Lets assume there are about 30 different options for the shape of the earth. The Qur'an rightly says it is spherical, if it was a guess the chances of the guess being correct is  $1/30$ .

The light of the moon can be its own light or a reflected light. The Qur'an rightly says it is a reflected light. If it is a guess, the chances that it will be correct is  $1/2$  and the probability that both the guesses i.e the earth is spherical and the light of the moon is reflected light is  $1/30 \times 1/2 = 1/60$ .

Further, the Qur'an also mentions every living thing is made of water. Every living thing can be made up of either wood, stone, copper, aluminum, steel, silver, gold, oxygen, nitrogen, hydrogen, oil, water, cement, concrete, etc. The options are say about 10,000. The Qur'an rightly says that everything is made up of water. If it is a guess, the chances that it will be correct is  $1/10,000$  and the probability of all the three guesses i.e. the earth is spherical, light of moon is reflected light and everything is created from water being correct is  $1/30 \times 1/2 \times 1/10,000 = 1/60,000$  which is equal to about .0017%.

The Qur'an speaks about hundreds of things that were not known to men at the time of its revelation. Only in three options the result is .0017%. I leave it upto you, to work out the probability if all the hundreds of the unknown facts were guesses, the chances of all of them being correct guesses simultaneously and there being not a single wrong guess. It is beyond human capacity to make all correct guesses without a single mistake, which itself is sufficient to prove to a logical person that the origin of the Qur'an is Divine.

## **CREATOR IS THE AUTHOR OF THE QUR'AN**

The only logical answer to the question as to who could have mentioned all these scientific facts 1400 years ago before they were discovered, is exactly the same answer initially given by the atheist or any person, to the question who will be the first person who will be able to tell the mechanism of the unknown object. It is the 'CREATOR', the producer, the Manufacturer of the whole universe and its contents. In the English language He is 'God', or more appropriate in the Arabic language, 'ALLAH'.

## **QUR'AN IS A BOOK OF SIGNS AND NOT SCIENCE**

Let me remind you that the Qur'an is not a book of Science, 'S-C-I-E-N-C-E' but a book of Signs 'S-I-G-N-S' i.e. a book of ayaats. The Qur'an contains more than 6,000 ayaats, i.e. 'signs', out of which more than a thousand speak about Science. I am not trying to prove that the Qur'an is the word of God using scientific knowledge as a yardstick because any yardstick is supposed to be more superior than what is being checked or verified. For us Muslims the Qur'an is the Furqan i.e. criteria to judge right from wrong and the ultimate yardstick which is more superior to scientific knowledge.

But for an educated man who is an atheist, scientific knowledge is the ultimate test which he believes in. We do know that science many a times takes 'U' turns, therefore I have restricted the examples only to

25 scientific facts which have sufficient proof and evidence and not scientific theories based on assumptions. Using the ultimate yardstick of the atheist, I am trying to prove to him that the Qur'an is the word of God and it contains the scientific knowledge which is his yardstick which was discovered recently, while the Qur'an was revealed 1400 year ago. At the end of the discussion, we both come to the same conclusion that God though superior to science, is not incompatible with it.

## SCIENCE IS ELIMINATING MODELS OF GOD BUT NOT GOD

Francis Bacon, the famous philosopher, has rightly said that a little knowledge of science makes man an atheist, but an in-depth study of science makes him a believer in God. Scientists today are eliminating models of God, but they are not eliminating God. If you translate this into Arabic, it is La illaha illal la, There is no god, (god with a small 'g' that is fake god) but God (with a capital 'G').

Surah Fussilat:

"Soon We will show them our signs in the (farthest) regions (of the earth), and in their own souls, until it becomes manifest to them that this is the Truth. Is it not enough that thy Lord doth witness all things?"  
[Al-Quran 41:53]

### 55. Surah Ar-Rahman (The Most Gracious)



1. The Most Beneficent (Allah)!
2. Has taught (you mankind) the Qur'an (by His Mercy).
3. He created man.
4. He taught him eloquent speech.
5. The sun and the moon run on their fixed courses (exactly) calculated with measured out stages for each (for reckoning, etc.).
6. And the herbs (or stars) and the trees both prostrate.
7. And the heaven He has raised high, and He has set up the Balance.
8. In order that you may not transgress (due) balance.
9. And observe the weight with equity and do not make the balance deficient.
10. And the earth He has put for the creatures.
11. Therein are fruits, date-palms producing sheathed fruit-stalks (enclosing dates).
12. And also corn, with (its) leaves and stalk for fodder, and sweet-scented plants.
13. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
14. He created man (Adam) from sounding clay like the clay of pottery.
15. And the jinns did He create from a smokeless flame of fire.
16. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

- 26**                    **17.** (He is) the Lord of the two easts (places of sunrise during early summer and early winter) and the Lord of the two wests (places of sunset during early summer and early winter).
- 18.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 19.** He has let loosed the two seas (the salt water and the sweet) meeting together.
- 20.** Between them is a barrier which none of them can transgress.
- 21.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 22.** Out of them both come out pearl and coral.
- 23.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 24.** And His are the ships going and coming in the seas, like mountains.
- 25.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 26.** Whatsoever is on it (the earth) will perish.
- 27.** And the Face of your Lord full of Majesty and Honour will abide forever.
- 28.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 29.** Whosoever is in the heavens and on earth begs of Him (its needs from Him). Every day He has a matter to bring forth (such as giving honour to some, disgrace to some, life to some, death to some, etc.)!
- 30.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 31.** We shall attend to you, O you two classes (jinns and men)!
- 32.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 33.** O assembly of jinns and men! If you have power to pass beyond the zones of the heavens and the earth, then pass (them)! But you will never be able to pass them, except with authority (from Allah)!
- 34.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 35.** There will be sent against you both, smokeless flames of fire and (molten) brass, and you will not be able to defend yourselves.
- 36.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 37.** Then when the heaven is rent asunder, and it becomes rosy or red like red-oil, or red hide.
- 38.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 39.** So on that Day no question will be asked of man or jinn as to his sin, (because they have already been known from their faces either white or black).
- 40.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 41.** The *Mujrimun* (polytheists, criminals, sinners, etc.) will be known by their marks (black faces), and they will be seized by their forelocks and their feet.
- 42.** Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?
- 43.** This is Hell which the *Mujrimun* (polytheists, criminals, sinners, etc.) denied.



27

44. They will go between it (Hell) and the boiling hot water!

45. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

46. But for him who [the true believer of Islamic Monotheism who performs all the duties ordained by Allah and His Messenger Muhammad ﷺ, and keeps away (abstain) from all kinds of sin and evil deeds prohibited in Islam and] fears the standing before his Lord, there will be two Gardens (i.e. in Paradise).

47. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

48. With spreading branches;

49. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

50. In them (both) will be two springs flowing (free)

51. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

52. In them (both) will be every kind of fruit in pairs.

53. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

54. Reclining upon the couches lined with silk brocade, and the fruits of the two Gardens will be near at hand.

55. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

56. Wherein both will be those (maidens) restraining their glances upon their husbands, whom no man or jinn *yatmithhunna* (has opened their hymens with sexual intercourse) before them.

57. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

58. (In beauty) they are like rubies and coral.

59. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

60. Is there any reward for good other than good?

61. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

62. And besides these two, there are two other Gardens (i.e. in Paradise).

63. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

64. Dark green (in colour).

65. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

66. In them (both) will be two springs gushing forth water.

67. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

68. In them (both) will be fruits, and date- palms and pomegranates.

69. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

70. Therein (gardens) will be fair (wives) good and beautiful;

71. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

28

72. *Houris* (beautiful, fair females) restrained in pavilions;

73. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

74. Whom no man or jinn *yatmithhunna* (has opened their hymens with sexual intercourse) before them.

75. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

76. Reclining on green cushions and rich beautiful mattresses.

77. Then which of the Blessings of your Lord will you both (jinns and men) deny?

78. Blessed be the Name of your Lord (Allah), the Owner of Majesty and Honour.

### 19. Surah Maryam (Mary)



1. *Kaf- Ha-Ya-'Ain-Sad*.

[These letters are one of the miracles of the Qur'an, and none but Allah (Alone) knows their meanings].

2. (This is) a mention of the mercy of your Lord to His slave Zakariya (Zachariah).

3. When he called out his Lord (Allah) a call in secret,

4. Saying: "My Lord! Indeed my bones have grown feeble, and grey hair has spread on my head, And I have never been unblest in my invocation to You, O my Lord!

5. "And Verily! I fear my relatives after me, since my wife is barren. So give me from Yourself an heir,

6. "Who shall inherit me, and inherit (also) the posterity of Ya'qub (Jacob) (inheritance of the religious knowledge and Prophethood, not the wealth, etc.). And make him, my Lord, one with whom You are Well-pleased!"

7. (Allah said) "O Zakariya (Zachariah)! Verily, We give you the glad tidings of a son, His name will be Yahya (John). We have given that name to none before (him)."

8. He said: "My Lord! How can I have a son, when my wife is barren, and I have reached the extreme old age."

9. He said: "So (it will be). Your Lord says; It is easy for Me. Certainly I have created you before, when you had been nothing!"

10. [Zakariya (Zachariah)] said: "My Lord! Appoint for me a sign." He said: "Your sign is that you shall not speak unto mankind for three nights, though having no bodily defect."

11. Then he came out to his people from *Al-Mihrab* (a praying place or a private room, etc.), he told them by signs to glorify Allah's Praises in the morning and in the afternoon.

12. (It was said to his son): "O Yahya (John)! Hold fast the Scripture [the Taurat (Torah)]." And We gave him wisdom while yet a child.

13. And (made him) sympathetic to men as a mercy (or a grant) from Us, and pure from sins [i.e. Yahya (John)] and he was righteous,

**29**                    **14.** And dutiful towards his parents, and he was neither an arrogant nor disobedient (to Allah or to his parents).

**15.** And *Salamun* (peace) be on him the day he was born, the day he dies, and the day he will be raised up to life (again)!

**16.** And mention in the Book (the Qur'an, O Muhammad ﷺ, the story of) Maryam (Mary), when she withdrew in seclusion from her family to a place facing east.

**17.** She placed a screen (to screen herself) from them; then We sent to her Our *Ruh* [angel Jibrael (Gabriel)], and he appeared before her in the form of a man in all respects.

**18.** She said: "Verily! I seek refuge with the Most Beneficent (Allah) from you, if you do fear Allah."

**19.** (The angel) said: "I am only a Messenger from your Lord, (to announce) to you the gift of a righteous son."

**20.** She said: "How can I have a son, when no man has touched me, nor am I unchaste?"

**21.** He said: "So (it will be), your Lord said: 'That is easy for Me (Allah): And (We wish) to appoint him as a sign to mankind and a mercy from Us (Allah), and it is a matter (already) decreed, (by Allah).' "

**22.** So she conceived him, and she withdrew with him to a far place (i.e. Bethlehem valley about 4-6 miles from Jerusalem).

**23.** And the pains of childbirth drove her to the trunk of a date-palm. She said: "Would that I had died before this, and had been forgotten and out of sight!"

**24.** Then [the babe 'Iesa (Jesus) or Jibrael (Gabriel)] cried unto her from below her, saying: "Grieve not! Your Lord has provided a water stream under you;

**25.** "And shake the trunk of date-palm towards you, it will let fall fresh ripe-dates upon you."

**26.** "So eat and drink and be glad, and if you see any human being, say: 'Verily! I have vowed a fast unto the Most Beneficent (Allah) so I shall not speak to any human being this day.'"

**27.** Then she brought him (the baby) to her people, carrying him. They said: "O Mary! Indeed you have brought a thing *Fariya* (an unheard mighty thing).

**28.** "O sister (i.e. the like) of Harun (Aaron) [not the brother of Musa (Moses), but he was another pious man at the time of Maryam (Mary)]! Your father was not a man who used to commit adultery, nor your mother was an unchaste woman."

**29.** Then she pointed to him. They said: "How can we talk to one who is a child in the cradle?"

**30.** "He ['Iesa (Jesus)] said: Verily! I am a slave of Allah, He has given me the Scripture and made me a Prophet;"

**31.** "And He has made me blessed wheresoever I be, and has enjoined on me *Salat* (prayer), and *Zakat*, as long as I live."

**32.** "And dutiful to my mother, and made me not arrogant, unblest.

**33.** "And *Salam* (peace) be upon me the day I was born, and the day I die, and the day I shall be raised alive!"

**34.** Such is 'Iesa (Jesus), son of Maryam (Mary). (it is) a statement of truth, about which they doubt (or dispute).

- 30**                    **35.** It befits not (the Majesty of) Allah that He should beget a son [this refers to the slander of Christians against Allah, by saying that 'Iesa (Jesus) is the son of Allah]. Glorified (and Exalted be He above all that they associate with Him). When He decrees a thing, He only says to it, "Be!" and it is.
- 36.** ['Iesa (Jesus) said]: "And verily Allah is my Lord and your Lord. So worship Him (Alone). That is the Straight Path. (Allah's Religion of Islamic Monotheism which He did ordain for all of His Prophets)." [Tafsir At-Tabari]
- 37.** Then the sects differed [i.e. the Christians about 'Iesa (Jesus)], so woe unto the disbelievers [those who gave false witness by saying that 'Iesa (Jesus) is the son of Allah] from the meeting of a great Day (i.e. the Day of Resurrection, when they will be thrown in the blazing Fire).
- 38.** How clearly will they (polytheists and disbelievers in the Oneness of Allah) see and hear, the Day when they will appear before Us! But the *Zalimun*(polytheists and wrong-doers) today are in plain error.
- 39.** And warn them (O Muhammad ﷺ) of the Day of grief and regrets, when the case has been decided, while (now) they are in a state of carelessness, and they believe not.
- 40.** Verily! We will inherit the earth and whatsoever is thereon. And to Us they all shall be returned,
- 41.** And mention in the Book (the Qur'an) Ibrahim (Abraham). Verily! He was a man of truth, a Prophet.
- 42.** When he said to his father: "O my father! Why do you worship that which hears not, sees not and cannot avail you in anything?"
- 43.** "O my father! Verily! There has come to me of knowledge that which came not unto you. So follow me. I will guide you to a Straight Path.
- 44.** "O my father! Worship not *Shaitan* (Satan). Verily! *Shaitan* (Satan) has been a rebel against the Most Beneficent (Allah).
- 45.** "O my father! Verily! I fear lest a torment from the Most Beneficent (Allah) overtake you, so that you become a companion of *Shaitan* (Satan) (in the Hell-fire)." [Tafsir Al-Qurtubi]
- 46.** He (the father) said: "Do you reject my gods, O Ibrahim (Abraham)? If you stop not (this), I will indeed stone you. So get away from me safely before I punish you."
- 47.** Ibrahim (Abraham) said: "Peace be on you! I will ask Forgiveness of my Lord for you. Verily! He is unto me, Ever Most Gracious.
- 48.** "And I shall turn away from you and from those whom you invoke besides Allah. And I shall call on my Lord; and I hope that I shall not be unblest in my invocation to my Lord."
- 49.** So when he had turned away from them and from those whom they worshipped besides Allah, We gave him Ishaque (Isaac) and Ya'qub (Jacob), and each one of them We made a Prophet.
- 50.** And We gave them of Our Mercy (a good provision in plenty), and We granted them honour on the tongues (of all the nations, i.e everybody remembers them with a good praise).
- 51.** And mention in the Book (this Qur'an) Musa (Moses). Verily! He was chosen and he was a Messenger (and) a Prophet.
- 52.** And We called him from the right side of the Mount, and made him draw near to Us for a talk with him [Musa (Moses)].
- 53.** And We bestowed on him his brother Harun (Aaron), (also) a Prophet, out of Our Mercy.

- 31**                    **54.** And mention in the Book (the Qur'an) Isma'il (Ishmael). Verily! He was true to what he promised, and he was a Messenger, (and) a Prophet.
- 55.** And he used to enjoin on his family and his people *As-Salat* (the prayers) and the *Zakat*, and his Lord was pleased with him.
- 56.** And mention in the Book (the Qur'an) Idris (Enoch). Verily! He was a man of truth, (and) a Prophet.
- 57.** And We raised him to a high station.
- 58.** Those were they unto whom Allah bestowed His Grace from among the Prophets, of the offspring of Adam, and of those whom We carried (in the ship) with Nuh (Noah), and of the offspring of Ibrahim (Abraham) and Israel and from among those whom We guided and chose. When the Verses of the Most Beneficent (Allah) were recited unto them, they fell down prostrating and weeping.
- 59.** Then, there has succeeded them a posterity who have given up *As-Salat* (the prayers) [i.e. made their *Salat* (prayers) to be lost, either by not offering them or by not offering them perfectly or by not offering them in their proper fixed times, etc.] and have followed lusts. So they will be thrown in Hell.
- 60.** Except those who repent and believe (in the Oneness of Allah and His Messenger Muhammad ﷺ), and work righteousness. Such will enter Paradise and they will not be wronged in aught.
- 61.** (They will enter) 'Adn (Eden) Paradise (everlasting Gardens), which the Most Beneficent (Allah) has promised to His slaves in the unseen: Verily! His Promise must come to pass.
- 62.** They shall not hear therein (in Paradise) any *Laghw* (dirty, false, evil vain talk), but only *Salam* (salutations of peace). And they will have therein their sustenance, morning and afternoon. [See (V.40:55)].
- 63.** Such is the Paradise which We shall give as an inheritance to those of Our slaves who have been *Al-Muttaqun* (pious and righteous persons - See V.2:2).
- 64.** And we (angels) descend not except by the Command of your Lord (O Muhammad ﷺ). To Him belongs what is before us and what is behind us, and what is between those two, and your Lord is never forgetful,
- 65.** Lord of the heavens and the earth, and all that is between them, so worship Him (Alone) and be constant and patient in His worship. Do you know of any who is similar to Him? (of course none is similar or coequal or comparable to Him, and He has none as partner with Him). [There is nothing like unto Him and He is the All-Hearer, the All-Seer].
- 66.** And man (the disbeliever) says: "When I am dead, shall I then be raised up alive?"
- 67.** Does not man remember that We created him before, while he was nothing?
- 68.** So by your Lord, surely, We shall gather them together, and (also) the *Shayatin* (devils) (with them), then We shall bring them round Hell on their knees.
- 69.** Then indeed We shall drag out from every sect all those who were worst in obstinate rebellion against the Most Beneficent (Allah).
- 70.** Then, verily, We know best those who are most worthy of being burnt therein.
- 71.** There is not one of you but will pass over it (Hell); this is with your Lord; a Decree which must be accomplished.
- 72.** Then We shall save those who use to fear Allah and were dutiful to Him. And We shall leave the *Zalimun* (polytheists and wrongdoers, etc.) therein (humbled) to their knees (in Hell).

**32**                    **73.** And when Our Clear Verses are recited to them, those who disbelieve (the rich and strong among the pagans of Quraish who live a life of luxury) say to those who believe (the weak, poor companions of Prophet Muhammad ﷺ who have a hard life): "Which of the two groups (i.e. believers and disbelievers) is best in (point of) position and as regards station (place of council for consultation)."

**74.** And how many a generation (past nations) have We destroyed before them, who were better in wealth, goods and outward appearance?

**75.** Say (O Muhammad ﷺ) whoever is in error, the Most Beneficent (Allah) will extend (the rope) to him, until, when they see that which they were promised, either the torment or the Hour, they will come to know who is worst in position, and who is weaker in forces. [This is the answer for the Verse No.19:73]

**76.** And Allah increases in guidance those who walk aright [true believers in the Oneness of Allah who fear Allah much (abstain from all kinds of sins and evil deeds which He has forbidden), and love Allah much (perform all kinds of good deeds which He has ordained)]. And the righteous good deeds that last, are better with your Lord, for reward and better for resort.

**77.** Have you seen him who disbelieved in Our *Ayat* (this Qur'an and Muhammad ﷺ) and (yet) says: "I shall certainly be given wealth and children [if I will be alive (again)],"

**78.** Has he known the unseen or has he taken a covenant from the Most Beneficent (Allah)?

**79.** Nay! We shall record what he says, and We shall increase his torment (in the Hell);

**80.** And We shall inherit from him (at his death) all that he talks of (i.e. wealth and children which We have bestowed upon him in this world), and he shall come to Us alone.

**81.** And they have taken (for worship) *aliha* (gods) besides Allah, that they might give them honour, power and glory (and also protect them from Allah's Punishment etc.).

**82.** Nay, but they (the so-called gods) will deny their worship of them, and become opponents to them (on the Day of Resurrection).

**83.** See you not that We have sent the *Shayatin* (devils) against the disbelievers to push them to do evil.

**84.** So make no haste against them; We only count out to them a (limited) number (of the days of the life of this world and delay their term so that they may increase in evil and sins).

**85.** The Day We shall gather the *Muttaqun* (pious - see V.2:2) unto the Most Beneficent (Allah), like a delegate (presented before a king for honour).

**86.** And We shall drive the *Mujrimun* (polytheists, sinners, criminals, disbelievers in the Oneness of Allah, etc.) to Hell, in a thirsty state (like a thirsty herd driven down to water),

**87.** None shall have the power of intercession, but such a one as has received permission (or promise) from the Most Beneficent (Allah).

**88.** And they say: "The Most Beneficent (Allah) has begotten a son (or offspring or children) [as the Jews say: 'Uzair (Ezra) is the son of Allah, and the Christians say that He has begotten a son [Iesa (Christ)], and the pagan Arabs say that He has begotten daughters (angels, etc.)]."

**89.** Indeed you have brought forth (said) a terrible evil thing.

**90.** Whereby the heavens are almost torn, and the earth is split asunder, and the mountains fall in ruins,

33

91. That they ascribe a son (or offspring or children) to the Most Beneficent (Allah).

92. But it is not suitable for (the Majesty of) the Most Beneficent (Allah) that He should beget a son (or offspring or children).

93. There is none in the heavens and the earth but comes unto the Most Beneficent (Allah) as a slave.

94. Verily, He knows each one of them, and has counted them a full counting.

95. And everyone of them will come to Him alone on the Day of Resurrection (without any helper, or protector or defender).

96. Verily, those who believe [in the Oneness of Allah and in His Messenger (Muhammad ﷺ)] and work deeds of righteousness, the Most Beneficent (Allah) will bestow love for them (in the hearts of the believers).

97. So We have made this (the Qur'an) easy in your own tongue (O Muhammad ﷺ), only that you may give glad tidings to the *Muttaqun* (pious and righteous persons - See V.2:2), and warn with it the *Ludda* (most quarrelsome) people.

98. And how many a generation before them have We destroyed! Can you (O Muhammad ﷺ) find a single one of them or hear even a whisper of them?

255. Allah! *La ilaha illa Huwa* (none has the right to be worshipped but He), the Ever Living, the One Who sustains and protects all that exists. Neither slumber, nor sleep overtake Him. To Him belongs whatever is in the heavens and whatever is on earth. Who is he that can intercede with Him except with His Permission? He knows what happens to them (His creatures) in this world, and what will happen to them in the Hereafter. And they will never compass anything of His Knowledge except that which He wills. His *Kursi* extends over the heavens and the earth, and He feels no fatigue in guarding and preserving them. And He is the Most High, the Most Great. [This Verse 2:255 is called *Ayat-ul-Kursi*.]

#### 112. Surah Al-Ikhlaas or At-Tauhid (The Purity)

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

1. Say (O Muhammad ﷺ): "He is Allah, (the) One.

2. "*Allah-us-Samad* (The Self-Sufficient Master, Whom all creatures need, He neither eats nor drinks).

3. "He begets not, nor was He begotten;

4. "And there is none co-equal or comparable unto Him."

## بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

1. Whatsoever is in the heavens and whatsoever is on the earth glorifies Allah. And He is the All-Mighty, the All-Wise.
2. He it is Who drove out the disbelievers among the people of the Scripture (i.e. the Jews of the tribe of Bani An-Nadir) from their homes at the first gathering. You did not think that they would get out. And they thought that their fortresses would defend them from Allah! But Allah's (Torment) reached them from a place whereof they expected it not, and He cast terror into their hearts, so that they destroyed their own dwellings with their own hands and the hands of the believers. Then take admonition, O you with eyes (to see).
3. And had it not been that Allah had decreed exile for them, He would certainly have punished them in this world, and in the Hereafter theirs shall be the torment of the Fire.
4. That is because they opposed Allah and His Messenger (Muhammad ﷺ). And whosoever opposes Allah, then verily, Allah is Severe in punishment.
5. What you (O Muslims) cut down of the palm-trees (of the enemy), or you left them standing on their stems, it was by Leave of Allah, and in order that He might disgrace the *Fasiqun* (rebellious, disobedient to Allah).
6. And what Allah gave as booty (*Fai'*) to His Messenger (Muhammad ﷺ) from them, for which you made no expedition with either cavalry or camelry. But Allah gives power to His Messengers over whomsoever He wills. And Allah is Able to do all things.
7. What Allah gave as booty (*Fai'*) to His Messenger (Muhammad ﷺ) from the people of the townships, - it is for Allah, His Messenger (Muhammad ﷺ), the kindred (of Messenger Muhammad ﷺ), the orphans, *Al-Masakin* (the poor), and the wayfarer, in order that it may not become a fortune used by the rich among you. And whatsoever the Messenger (Muhammad ﷺ) gives you, take it, and whatsoever he forbids you, abstain (from it) , and fear Allah. Verily, Allah is Severe in punishment.
8. (And there is also a share in this booty) for the poor emigrants, who were expelled from their homes and their property, seeking Bounties from Allah and to please Him. And helping Allah (i.e. helping His religion) and His Messenger (Muhammad ﷺ). Such are indeed the truthful (to what they say);-
9. And those who, before them, had homes (in Al-Madinah) and had adopted the Faith, love those who emigrate to them, and have no jealousy in their breasts for that which they have been given (from the booty of Bani An-Nadir), and give them (emigrants) preference over themselves, even though they were in need of that. And whosoever is saved from his own covetousness, such are they who will be the successful.
10. And those who came after them say: "Our Lord! Forgive us and our brethren who have preceded us in Faith, and put not in our hearts any hatred against those who have believed. Our Lord! You are indeed full of kindness, Most Merciful.
11. Have you (O Muhammad ﷺ) not observed the hypocrites who say to their friends among the people of the Scripture who disbelieve: "(By Allah) If you are expelled, we (too) indeed will go out with you, and we shall never



35 obey any one against you, and if you are attacked (in fight), we shall indeed help you." But Allah is Witness, that they verily, are liars.

**12.** Surely, if they (the Jews) are expelled, never will they (hypocrites) go out with them, and if they are attacked, they will never help them. And if they do help them, they (hypocrites) will turn their backs, so they will not be victorious.

**13.** Verily, you (believers in the Oneness of Allah - Islamic Monotheism) are more awful as a fear in their (Jews of Bani An-Nadir) breasts than Allah. That is because they are a people who comprehend not (the Majesty and Power of Allah).

**14.** They fight not against you even together, except in fortified townships, or from behind walls. Their enmity among themselves is very great. You would think they were united, but their hearts are divided, that is because they are a people who understand not.

**15.** They are like their immediate predecessors (the Jews of Bani Qainuqa', who suffered), they tasted the evil result of their conduct, and (in the Hereafter, there is) for them a painful torment;-

**16.** (Their allies deceived them) like *Shaitan* (Satan), when he says to man: "Disbelieve in Allah." But when (man) disbelieves in Allah, *Shaitan* (Satan) says: "I am free of you, I fear Allah, the Lord of the '*Alamin* (mankind, jinns and all that exists)!"

**17.** So the end of both will be that they will be in the Fire, abiding therein. Such is the recompense of the *Zalimun* (i.e. polytheists, wrong-doers, disbelievers in Allah and in His Oneness, etc.).

**18.** O you who believe! Fear Allah and keep your duty to Him. And let every person look to what he has sent forth for the morrow, and fear Allah. Verily, Allah is All-Aware of what you do .

**19.** And be not like those who forgot Allah (i.e. became disobedient to Allah) and He caused them to forget their own selves, (let them to forget to do righteous deeds). Those are the *Fasiqun* (rebellious, disobedient to Allah).

**20.** Not equal are the dwellers of the Fire and the dwellers of the Paradise. It is the dwellers of Paradise that will be successful.

**21.** Had We sent down this Qur'an on a mountain, you would surely have seen it humbling itself and rending asunder by the fear of Allah. Such are the parables which We put forward to mankind that they may reflect .

**22.** He is Allah, than Whom there is *La ilaha illa Huwa* (none has the right to be worshipped but He) the All-Knower of the unseen and the seen (open). He is the Most Beneficent, the Most Merciful.

**23.** He is Allah than Whom there is *La ilaha illa Huwa* (none has the right to be worshipped but He) the King, the Holy, the One Free from all defects, the Giver of security, the Watcher over His creatures, the All-Mighty, the Compeller, the Supreme. Glory be to Allah! (High is He) above all that they associate as partners with Him.

**24.** He is Allah, the Creator, the Inventor of all things, the Bestower of forms. To Him belong the Best Names . All that is in the heavens and the earth glorify Him. And He is the All-Mighty, the All-Wise.

## بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

1. I swear by the Day of Resurrection;
2. And I swear by the self-reproaching person (a believer).
3. Does man (a disbeliever) think that We shall not assemble his bones?
4. Yes, We are Able to put together in perfect order the tips of his fingers.
5. Nay! (Man denies Resurrection and Reckoning. So) he desires to continue committing sins.
6. He asks: "When will be this Day of Resurrection?"
7. So, when the sight shall be dazed,
8. And the moon will be eclipsed,
9. And the sun and moon will be joined together (by going one into the other or folded up or deprived of their light, etc.)
10. On that Day man will say: "Where (is the refuge) to flee?"
11. No! There is no refuge!
12. Unto your Lord (Alone) will be the place of rest that Day.
13. On that Day man will be informed of what he sent forward (of his evil or good deeds), and what he left behind (of his good or evil traditions).
14. Nay! Man will be a witness against himself [as his body parts (skin, hands, legs, etc.) will speak about his deeds].
15. Though he may put forth his excuses (to cover his evil deeds).
16. Move not your tongue concerning (the Qur'an, O Muhammad ﷺ) to make haste therewith.
17. It is for Us to collect it and to give you (O Muhammad ﷺ) the ability to recite it (the Qur'an),
18. And when We have recited it to you [O Muhammad ﷺ through Jibrael (Gabriel)], then follow you its (the Qur'an's) recital.
19. Then it is for Us (Allah) to make it clear to you,
20. Not [as you think, that you (mankind) will not be resurrected and recompensed for your deeds], but (you men) love the present life of this world,
21. And leave (neglect) the Hereafter.
22. Some faces that Day shall be *Nadirah* (shining and radiant).
23. Looking at their Lord (Allah);

- 37                    24. And some faces, that Day, will be *Basirah* (dark, gloomy, frowning, and sad),
25. Thinking that some calamity was about to fall on them;
26. Nay, when (the soul) reaches to the collar bone (i.e. up to the throat in its exit),
27. And it will be said: "Who can cure him and save him from death?"
28. And he (the dying person) will conclude that it was (the time) of departing (death);
29. And leg will be joined with another leg (shrouded)
30. The drive will be, on that Day, to your Lord (Allah)!
31. So he (the disbeliever) neither believed (in this Qur'an, in the Message of Muhammad ﷺ) nor prayed!
32. But on the contrary, he belied (this Qur'an and the Message of Muhammad ﷺ) and turned away!
33. Then he walked in full pride to his family admiring himself!
34. Woe to you [O man (disbeliever)]! And then (again) woe to you!
35. Again, woe to you [O man (disbeliever)]! And then (again) woe to you!
36. Does man think that he will be left *Suda* [neglected without being punished or rewarded for the obligatory duties enjoined by his Lord (Allah) on him]?
37. Was he not a *Nutfah* (mixed male and female discharge of semen) poured forth?
38. Then he became an '*Alaqa* (a clot); then (Allah) shaped and fashioned (him) in due proportion.
39. And made him in two sexes, male and female.
40. Is not He (Allah Who does that), Able to give life to the dead? (Yes! He is Able to do all things)

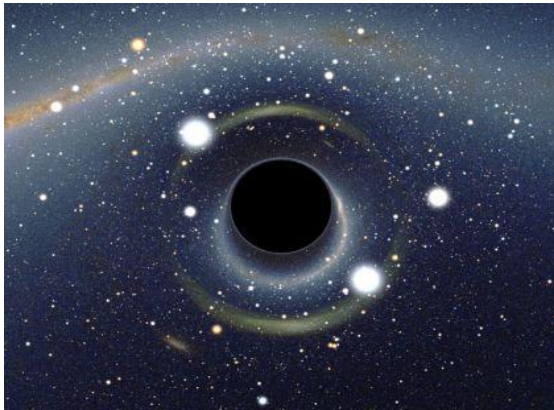
### The Piercing Star and Black holes



The holy Quran is word of god. The Almighty revealed it to his final prophet to humanity. When prophets were inviting their people to the truth,

**God endowed them with miracles to convince their people. Moses was given a miracle that excelled magic and dazzled magicians in ancient Egypt. Jesus was given a miracle that excelled medicine and he could cure people from incurable diseases. The only people who could see these miracles are the ones who were there. Because the prophet Muhammad was the final prophet his miracle had to be continuous and immortal, this immortal miracle is the holy Quran itself.**

At the age of revealing the holy Quran Arabs were excelled in poetry and prose, so the holy Quran challenged them by its eloquence. Now miracles of the holy Quran appeared in the scientific signs mentioned in a lot of verses, these verses indicate to scientific facts which have been discovered since only few decades, So humanity must know that the holy Quran is the word of Allah. One of the scientific signs mentioned in the holy Quran is the piercing star. (1) The Almighty says in the beginning of surat Al-Tarek: (By the heaven and the Tarik (The Knocker) \* Ah, what will tell thee what the Tarik (The knocker) is! \* The piercing Star!) (Quran 86:1-3) These verses speak about a star which has two significant features. The first one is that it is a piercing star the other is that it knocks something hard enough to make sound. Allah (SWT) in these verses coupled His oath by heaven regarding its greatness with the piercing star which means that there is a relationship between both. The question now is How do these verses indicate to black holes? Black holes are the most violent and mysterious phenomenon in the sky. Black holes are the evolutionary endpoints of stars at least 10 to 15 times as massive as the Sun. If a star that massive or larger undergoes a supernova explosion, it may leave behind a fairly massive burned out stellar remnant. With no outward forces to oppose gravitational forces, the remnant will collapse in on itself. The star eventually collapses to the point of zero volume and infinite density, creating what is known as a "singularity". As the gravitational field is so powerful that nothing, including light, can escape its pull, the black hole has a one-way surface, called the event horizon, into which objects can fall, but out of which nothing can come out. At this we have to clarify very important point – which causes confusion to a lot of people- that we must distinguish between the event horizon of the black hole at which any matter or light can not escape and the point at which the matter of the exploded star is collapsed. If the sun become a black hole it will have an event horizon with radius about 3 km but all its matter will be condensed in a point at the center of the black hole. (General relativity describes a black hole as a region of empty space with a point like singularity at the center and an event horizon at the outer edge). (2)



The piercing star describes the matter of star condensed in singularity and the hole of empty space caused by this condensed matter.

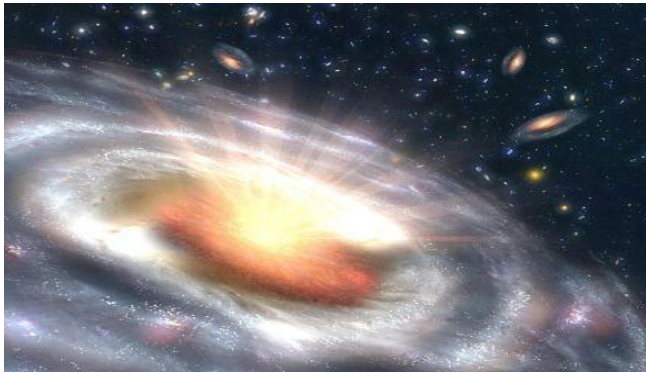
*The verse indicates to the black hole* The verse describes this phenomenon as the piercing star and this is more accurate description because the matter of the collapsed star which is condensed in singularity is the reason of forming the black hole. So the star itself still there condensed causing the existence of this empty space called black hole. When you describe this phenomenon as a black hole you actually are describing only the empty space but if

you describe it the piercing star, then you are describing the matter of star condensed in singularity and the hole of empty space caused by this matter.

*Types of black holes* There are two main types of black holes the first one is the stellar black holes and the second is actually the biggest and greatest phenomenon in the sky, it is the supermassive black holes. This confirms to us why the oath of the piercing star in the holy Quran is great enough to be coupled with the oath of heaven regarding its greatness.

***The properties of supermassive black holes*** The most significant feature of the supermassive black hole is its mass which exceed all limits of imagination if you know that the mass of stellar black holes can reach 30 times solar mass, the mass of a supermassive black hole can reach ten billion times solar mass. It is formed also as result of collapse of the matter of supermassive star at the beginning of formation of galaxies, so the piercing star which is condensed in a tiny volume causing this supermassive black hole is considered to be the most massive star in the universe. (3)

***The story begins with Quasars*** It has got along time for scientists to discover the supermassive black holes and the beginning was the discovery of quasars. The QUASi-stellar radio source (quasar) is a powerfully energetic and distant active galactic nucleus. The most luminous quasars radiate at a rate that can exceed the output of average galaxies, equivalent to one trillion (10<sup>12</sup>) suns. Scientist for along time have wondered how does a quasar produce such tremendous luminosity despite its distance from us which reaches billions of light years and the answer came from the most violent thing in sky it is the supermassive black hole. The huge luminosity of quasars results from the accretion discs of central supermassive black holes, which can convert on the order of 10% of the mass of an object into energy as compared to 0.7% for the p-p chain nuclear fusion process that dominates the energy production in sun-like stars. (4)



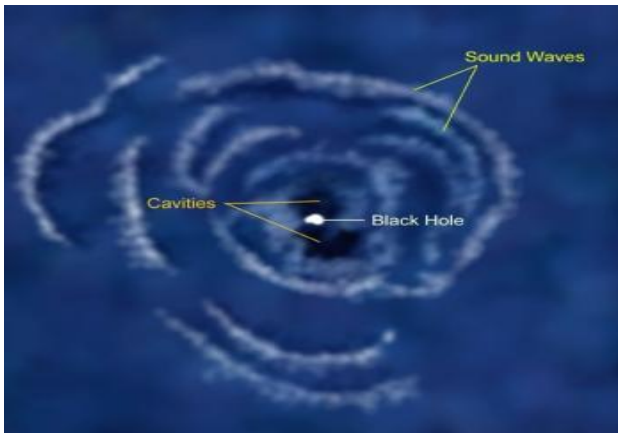
The huge luminosity of quasars results from the accretion discs of central supermassive black holes

***The cosmic knocks resulted from supermassive black holes*** The mentioned verses (By the heaven and the Tarik (The Knocker) \* Ah, what will tell thee what the Tarik (The knocker) is! \* The piercing Star!) (Quran 86:1-3) stated that the piercing star which we explained its relation to supermassive black hole has another significant feature as the verses called it Al-Tarik (The knocker) so how does the piercing star and the resulted supermassive black hole knock? Part of the matter of accretion disk rotating supermassive black hole which is about to fall in the supermassive black hole is re-emitted as Relativistic jets which are extremely powerful twin jets of plasma being shot along the axis of spin of the accretion disk having a velocity approaching the speed of light. This jet knocks hardly and strongly any thing in its way and for long distances. And due to the movement of this plasma jet it knocks the interstellar and the intergalactic medium producing real sound waves.



A real jet of plasma produced by a supermassive black hole in the galaxy (M87) recorded by Hubble space telescope. It knocks every thing in its way for a distance (5000 light years).

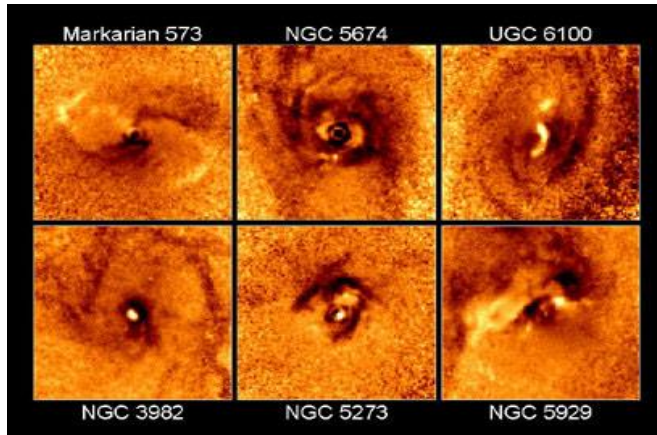
**In Sept. 9, 2003: Astronomers using NASA's Chandra X-ray Observatory have found, for the first time, sound waves from a supermassive black hole. This supermassive black hole resides in the Perseus cluster of galaxies located 250 million light years from Earth. The "note" is the deepest ever detected from any object in our Universe. (5)**



Real sound waves resulted from jets knocking the intergalactic medium. Now imagine how great the miracle in the verses is. The piercing star and the resulted supermassive black hole knocks the intergalactic medium with relativistic jets and as result of this knocking real sound is produced. (By the heaven and the Tarik (The Knocker) \* Ah, what will tell thee what the Tarik (The knocker) is! \* The piercing Star!) (Quran 86:1-3) *The piercing star and heaven* Allah (SWT) in these verses coupled His oath by heaven regarding its greatness with the piercing star which means that there is a fundamental relationship between this type of stars and all what we see in the sky from stars and galaxies.

*The piercing star is in the core of all galaxies* Quasar and related supermassive black holes have been associated to a type of galaxies called active galaxies, but the other type of galaxies called inactive galaxies which includes our galaxy the Milky way are thought for a long time to have no supermassive black holes in their cores, but from about two decades scientists have found a method to determine the existence of supermassive black hole by determining the velocities of stars close to the galactic nuclei and they were surprised when they found a supermassive black hole in all galaxies.

What remained is to know is there a supermassive black hole in our galaxy the Milky way or not. In 2003 American astrophysicist Andrea Ghez and its teamwork (UCLA) and by using high spatial resolution imaging techniques have confirmed the existence of a supermassive black hole in our own galaxy. (6) The image is now complete each galaxy has its own supermassive black hole, but why there are active galaxies and inactive ones. The answer of this question related to the development of galaxies.



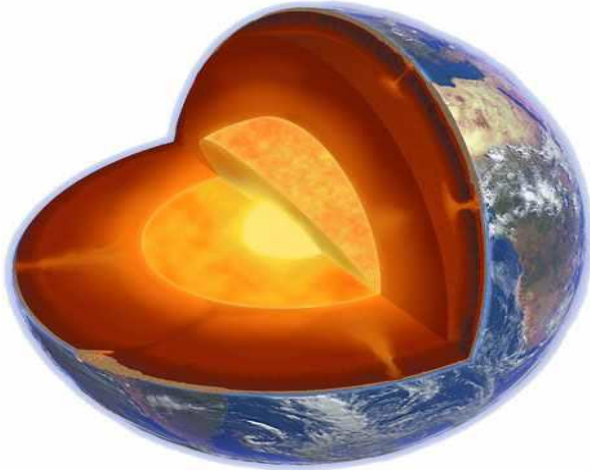
There is a supermassive black hole in each galaxy *Supermassive black hole and the birth of galaxies* Scientists have found a relationship between the velocity of stars at the edges of galaxies and the mass of the supermassive black holes in the core of these galaxies and because the distance between them are very large so this relation formed in a previous time, the time of galaxy birth as it thought that the galaxies are formed when a huge cloud of gas is collapsed at its core forming supermassive black hole which start to feed on the neighboring gas forming a quasar. This quasar triggers the formation of new stars in the entire galaxy so a new active galaxy is formed, but with time the gas start to get far from the supermassive black hole so it has nothing to feed on and the active galaxy converts to inactive one.

So science today makes a relation between the piercing star and all what we see in the sky from stars and galaxies. For this reason Allah (SWT) in these verses coupled His oath by heaven regarding its greatness with the piercing star which means that there is a fundamental relationship between this type of stars and all what we see in the sky from stars and galaxies. (By the heaven and the Tarik (The Knocker) \* Ah, what will tell thee what the Tarik (The knocker) is! \* The piercing Star!) (Quran 86:1-3)

#### References

Dr. Zagloul El-Naggar 2001. Al-Ahram 12, 14 (6, 20 /8 /2001).  
[http://www.physics.hku.hk/~nature/CD/regular\\_e/lectures/chap17.html](http://www.physics.hku.hk/~nature/CD/regular_e/lectures/chap17.html)  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Supermassive\\_black\\_hole](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Supermassive_black_hole)  
[http://imagine.gsfc.nasa.gov/docs/science/known\\_11/active\\_galaxies.html](http://imagine.gsfc.nasa.gov/docs/science/known_11/active_galaxies.html)  
[http://science.nasa.gov/headlines/y2003/09sep\\_blackholesounds.htm](http://science.nasa.gov/headlines/y2003/09sep_blackholesounds.htm)  
<http://www.astro.ucla.edu/~ghezgroup/gc/index.shtml>

Universe By: Chem. Gamal Abdel-Nasser



The Sunnah of Prophet Muhammad is the second revealed source of Islam. Like the Quran, it contains scientific information unavailable 1400 years ago. From these miracles is the “seven” earths, mentioned by the Prophet in several of his sayings. From them are the following two: Hadith 1 It was narrated on the authority of Abu Salamah that a dispute arose between him and some other people (about a piece of land). When he told Aisha (the Prophet’s wife) about it, she said, ‘O Abu Salamah! Avoid taking the land unjustly, for the Prophet said: “Whoever usurps even one span of land of somebody, its depth through the seven earths will be collared to his neck.” (Saheeh Al-Bukhari, ‘Book of Oppression.’)

Hadith 2 Salim narrated on the authority of his father that the Prophet said: “Whoever takes a piece of land of others unjustly, he will sink down the seven earths on the Day of Resurrection.” (Saheeh Al-Bukhari, ‘Book of Oppression.’) The aforementioned hadith prohibits oppression in general, especially the taking of a piece of land belonging to others unjustly. What might the seven earths refer to? Studies in geology have proven that the earth is composed of seven zones, identified from the inner to the outer layers as follows:

(1) The Solid Inner Core of Earth: 1.7% of the Earth’s mass; depth of 5,150 - 6,370 kilometers (3,219 - 3,981 miles) The inner core is solid and unattached to the mantle, suspended in the molten outer core. It is believed to have solidified as a result of pressure-freezing which occurs to most liquids when temperature decreases or pressure increases.

(2) The Liquid Outer core: 30.8% of Earth’s mass; depth of 2,890 - 5,150 kilometers (1,806 - 3,219 miles)

The outer core is a hot, electrically conducting liquid within which convective motion occurs. This conductive layer combines with Earth’s rotation to create a dynamo effect that maintains a system of electrical currents known as the Earth’s magnetic field. It is also responsible for the subtle jerking of Earth’s rotation. This layer is not as dense as pure molten iron, which indicates the presence of lighter elements. Scientists suspect that about 10% of the layer is composed of sulfur and/or oxygen because these elements are abundant in the cosmos and dissolve readily in molten iron.

(3) The “D” Layer: 3% of Earth’s mass; depth of 2,700 - 2,890 kilometers (1,688 - 1,806 miles) This layer is 200 to 300 kilometers (125 to 188 miles) thick and represents about 4% of the mantle-crust mass. Although it is often identified as part of the lower mantle, seismic discontinuities suggest the “D” layer might differ chemically from the lower mantle lying above it. Scientists theorize that the material either dissolved in the core, or was able to sink through the mantle but not into the core because of its density.

(4) Lower Mantle: 49.2% of Earth’s mass; depth of 650 - 2,890 kilometers (406 - 1,806 miles)



43

The lower mantle contains 72.9% of the mantle-crust mass and is probably composed mainly of silicon, magnesium, and oxygen. It probably also contains some iron, calcium, and aluminum. Scientists make these deductions by assuming the Earth has a similar abundance and proportion of cosmic elements as found in the Sun and primitive meteorites.

(5) Middle Mantle (Transition region): 7.5% of Earth's mass; depth of 400 - 650 kilometers (250-406 miles)

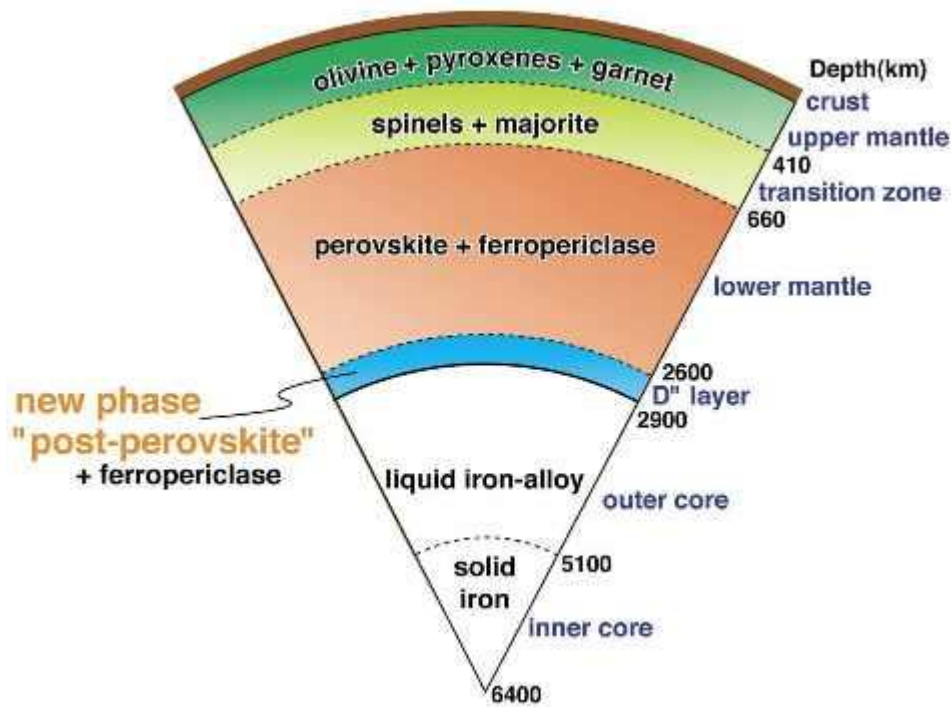
The transition region or mesosphere (for middle mantle), sometimes called the fertile layer, contains 11.1% of the mantle-crust mass and is the source of basaltic magmas. It also contains calcium, aluminum, and garnet, which is a complex aluminum-bearing silicate mineral. This layer is dense when cold because of the garnet. It is buoyant when hot because these minerals melt easily to form basalt which can then rise through the upper layers as magma.

(6) Upper Mantle: 10.3% of Earth's mass; depth of 10 - 400 kilometers (6 - 250 miles)

The upper mantle contains 15.3% of the mantle-crust mass. Fragments have been excavated for our observation by eroded mountain belts and volcanic eruptions. Olivine  $(\text{Mg,Fe})_2\text{SiO}_4$  and pyroxene  $(\text{Mg,Fe})\text{SiO}_3$  have been the primary minerals found in this way. These and other minerals are refractory and crystalline at high temperatures; therefore, most settle out of rising magma, either forming new material or never leaving the mantle. Part of the upper mantle called the asthenosphere might be partially molten.

(7) Lithosphere Oceanic crust: 0.099% of Earth's mass; depth of 0-10 kilometers (0 - 6 miles) The rigid, outermost layer of the Earth comprising the crust and upper mantle is called the lithosphere. The oceanic crust contains 0.147% of the mantle-crust mass. The majority of the Earth's crust was made through volcanic activity. The oceanic ridge system, a 40,000-kilometer (25,000 mile) network of volcanoes, generates new oceanic crust at the rate of 17 km<sup>3</sup> per year, covering the ocean floor with basalt. Hawaii and Iceland are two examples of the accumulation of basalt piles.

The continental crust contains 0.554% of the mantle-crust mass. This is the outer part of the Earth composed essentially of crystalline rocks. These are low-density buoyant minerals dominated mostly by quartz ( $\text{SiO}_2$ ) and feldspars (metal-poor silicates). The crust (both oceanic and continental) is the surface of the Earth; as such, it is the coldest part of our planet. Because cold rocks deform slowly, we refer to this rigid outer shell as the lithosphere (the rocky or strong layer).



### Conclusion

The layers of the earth coincide with the above mentioned hadith of the Prophet. The miracle is in two matters:

- (1) The expression of the hadith, 'He will sink down the seven earths on the Day of Resurrection,' indicates the stratification of these "earths" around one center.
- (2) The accuracy with which the Prophet of Islam referred to the seven inner layers of earth. The only way for a desert dweller to have known these facts 1400 years ago is through revelation from God.

**References** Beatty, J. K. and A. Chaikin, eds. The New Solar System. Massachusetts: Sky Publishing, 3rd Edition, 1990. Press, Frank and Raymond Siever. Earth. New York: W. H. Freeman and Company, 1986. Seeds, Michael A. Horizons. Belmont, California: Wadsworth, 1995. El-Najjar, Zaghoul. Treasures In The Sunnah: A Scientific Approach: Cairo, Al-Falah Foundation, 2004. Sunnah & Science By: admin

### Apostates: Should they be killed or saved?

The sections of this article are:

- 1- Who are the Apostates in Islam?
- 2- The absolute freedom of religion in Islam.
- 3- So how come Muslim Fundamentalists execute those who desert Islam then?
- 4- **My rebuttal about the historical Muslims' battles with the Apostates.**
- 5- Does Islam really mean to force someone to Islam or else kill him?
- 6- **Renowned Muslim scholars agreeing with not all apostates to be killed.**
- 7- Conclusion.

**Note:** Some of the notes in this article were taken from the commentary of the Noble Quran translation of Abdullah Yusuf Ali; may Allah Almighty rest his soul. Ameen.

### 1- Who are the Apostates in Islam?

Apostates or Renegades are those who decide to leave the religion of Islam. There is a widely prevailing misconception about this issue. It is generally thought that the Holy Quran (The Muslims Holy Scripture) provides the death sentence for those who desert the religion of Islam. There is not the least ground for such a supposition. The Holy Quran speaks repeatedly of people going back to unbelief after believing, but never once does it say that they should be killed or punished. Although the Holy Quran does provide the death sentence for some situations such as putting a murderer to death, but it never provided death sentence or ordered the death of those who leave Islam.

Let us look at Noble Verse 2:217 "They ask thee (Mohammed) Concerning fighting In the Prohibited Month. Say: Fighting therein Is a grave (offence); but graver is it In the sight of Allah to prevent access to the path of Allah, to deny Him, to prevent access to the sacred Mosque, and drive out its members. Tumult and oppression are worse than slaughter. Nor will they cease fighting you until they turn you back from your faith if they can. And if any of you **turn back** from their faith (Islam) and die in unbelief, their works will bear no fruit in this life and in the hereafter; they will be companions of the fire and will abide therein." Here in this Holy Verse we see that Allah Almighty talks about those who leave Islam, and promises them punishment in the day of judgment. Allah Almighty doesn't order the death of those people.

Let also look at Noble Verse 5:54 "O ye who believe! If any from among you **turn back from his faith**, soon will Allah produce a people whom He (Allah) will love as they will love Him lowly with the believers, Mighty against the rejecters, fighting in the way of Allah, and never afraid of the reproachers of such as find fault. That is the Grace of Allah which He will bestow on whom He (Allah) pleaseth. And Allah encompasseth all, and He knoweth all things." Here in this Holy Verse we see again Allah Almighty strengthening the faith of the Muslims in Islam by assuring them that whenever they see Muslims leaving Islam they will also see those who join Islam with strong faith and love to Allah Almighty.

"As most men are rebellious." (5:49), it is inevitable that there should be apostates even from such a religion of reason and common-sense as Islam. In Verse 5:54 above there is a warning to the Muslims that they should not repeat the history of the Jews, and become so self-satisfied or arrogant as to depart from the spirit of Allah's teaching. If they do, the loss will be their own. Allah's bounty is not confined to one group or section of humanity. He can always raise up people who will follow the true spirit of Islam. That spirit is defined in two ways:

1- They will love Allah Almighty and Allah Almighty will love them.

2- Amongst the Brethren, their attitude will be that of humility, but to wrongdoers they will offer no compromises, and they will always strive and fight for the truth and right. They will know no fear, either physical, or that more insidious form. They are too great in mind to be haunted by any such thought.

Let us look at Noble Verse 5:55 "(O Muslims) Your (real) friends are (No less than) Allah, His Messenger, and the (Fellowship Of) Believers, those who establish regular prayers and regular charity, and they bow down humbly (in worship)." Here we see Allah Almighty telling Muslims after he warned them from apostates in (5:54) that their real friends are: Allah Almighty, Prophet Mohammed peace be upon him, and the good Muslims who keep up with their prayers and charity, and who humbly worship their God.

46 Let us look at Noble Verse 3:90 "**But those who reject faith after they accepted it**, and then go on adding to their defiance of faith never will their repentance be accepted; for they are those who have (of set purpose) gone astray." Here in this holy verse we see Allah Almighty rejecting the faith of those who keep coming back and forth to Islam. In order for a human being to accept Islam as his religion, he must be certain about it first. Allah Almighty's path is wide open, and his mercy is greater than this universe. This Holy Verse also does not order the death of those who leave Islam.

The path to Allah Almighty is always open and Allah Almighty will be your friend as in verse (5:55) above, and he will forgive your sins for you once you repent as in the following verse: "Except for those that repent (Even) after that, And make amends; for Allah is Oft-Forgiving Most Merciful." (3:89).

## 2- The absolute freedom of religion in Islam:

Some group of Muslims believe in killing apostates because they follow a Hadith (Saying) from Prophet Mohammed peace be upon him regarding the apostates. While Islam was weak and still growing among Jews, Christians and Pagans, Muslims did not have the full and complete religion that they needed. Some Jews and Christians wanted to take advantage of such situation to destroy Islam. They had a plan to adopt Islam first and then desert it, thus creating the impression that Islam was not a religion worth adopting.

Let us look at Noble Verse 3:72 "A section of the People of the Book (Jews and Christians) say: Believe in the morning what is revealed to the believers (Muslims), but reject it at the end of the day; perchance they may (themselves) turn back (from Islam)." To protect Islam from such Satanic attempts done by a group of the people of the book (Jews and Christians), Prophet Mohammed peace be upon him ordered the death of those who enter Islam and leave it. This temporary law that was put by our Prophet had stopped the hypocrites from the People of the Book who carried so much hatred toward Islam to enter Islam and desert it afterwards.

Allah Almighty ordered the Muslims to kill the pagans who fought against the Muslims. The following Noble Verse talks about all of the enemies who fought the Muslims long and bloody battles:

Let us look at Noble Verse 2:191 "And slay them wherever ye catch them, and turn them out from where they have Turned you out; for tumult and oppression are worse than slaughter; but fight them not at the Sacred Mosque, unless they (first) fight you there; but if they fight you, slay them. Such is the reward of those who suppress faith." The killing of the pagans who fought the Muslims during the time when Islam was not yet complete was essential.

**Important Note:** Noble Verse 2:191 above is not dedicated to the apostates as some Muslims use it to prove that the Noble Quran orders the killing of apostates. In fact, it doesn't even mention the apostates. It talks in general about slaying the pagans who declare wars on the Muslims. The pagans would obviously include the apostates who deserted Islam, but the Noble Verse certainly doesn't DIRECTLY order the killing of anyone who deserts Islam.

Allah Almighty promised that He will protect the Noble Quran from any corruption:

"We have, without doubt, sent down the Message; and We will assuredly Guard it (from corruption). (The Noble Quran, 15:9)"

"Nay, this is a Glorious Quran, (inscribed) in a Tablet Preserved! (The Noble Quran, 85:21-22)"

Let us look at Noble Verse 5:3 ".....This day those who reject faith given up all hope of your religion: Yet fear them not But fear Me (Allah). **This day have I (Allah) perfected your religion for you**, completed my favour upon you, and have chosen for you Islam as your (complete) religion....". So long as Islam was not organized, with its own

community and its own laws, the unbelievers and the Hypocrites from the People of the Book and the Pagan Arabs had hoped to wean the believers from the new teaching. Now that hope is gone forever with the complete organization of Islam.

Let us look at Noble Verses 15:2-3 "Again and again will those who disbelieve, wish that they had bowed (to God's will) in Islam. **Leave them alone**, to enjoy (the good things of this life) and to please themselves: let (false) hope amuse them: soon will knowledge (undeceive them)."

Let us look at Noble Verses 10:99-100 "If it had been thy Lord's will, they would all have believed, all who are on earth! wilt thou then compel mankind, against their will, to believe! **No soul can believe, except by the will of God**, and He will place doubt (or obscurity) on those who will not understand."

Let us look at Noble Verse 18:29 "Say, 'The truth is from your Lord': **Let him who will believe, and let him who will, reject (it)**: for the wrong doers We have prepared a Fire whose (smoke and flames), like the walls and roof of a tent, will hem them in: if they implore relief they will be granted water like melted brass, that will scald their faces, how dreadful the drink! How uncomfortable a couch to recline on!"

Let us look at Noble Verse 27:92 "And to rehearse the Qur'an: and if any accept guidance, they do it for the good of their own souls, and if any stray, say: **'I am only a Warner.'**"

Let us look at Noble Verse 10:99 "If it had been thy Lord's will, they would all have believed,- all who are on earth! **wilt thou then compel mankind, against their will, to believe!**" Allah Almighty doesn't like us to compel people into belief.

**"No soul can believe, except by the will of God**, and He will place doubt (or obscurity) on those who will not understand. (The Noble Quran, 10:100)" Allah Almighty helps those whom He likes to be guided to His Straight Path. If anyone doesn't believe, or reverts back from Islam, it is then his loss and it is the Will of Allah Almighty.

"Say: 'Behold all that is in the heavens and on earth'; but neither Signs nor Warners profit those who believe not. Do they then expect (any thing) but (what happened in) the days of the men who passed away before them? **Say: 'Wait ye then: for I, too, will wait with you.'** (The Noble Quran, 10:101-102)" Notice how Allah Almighty orders us to say "Wait" to those who reject Islam. This clearly says that we can't force anyone into Islam, or punish anyone for leaving Islam.

Let us look at Noble Verse 10:108 "Say: 'O ye men! Now Truth hath reached you from your Lord! those who receive guidance, do so for the good of their own souls; those who stray, do so to their own loss: **and I am not (set) over you to arrange your affairs.**" Whoever believes benefits his soul and whoever doesn't, harms it, and Prophet Muhammad peace be upon him is not in charge of people to arrange their affairs. Only Allah Almighty is.

"Say: 'Obey Allah, and obey the Messenger: but if ye turn away, he is only responsible for the duty placed on him and ye for that placed on you. If ye obey him, ye shall be on right guidance. **The Messenger's duty is only to preach the clear (Message).** (The Noble Quran, 24:54)" Prophet Muhammad's duty was only to preach.

"Those who pervert the Truth in Our Signs are not hidden from Us. Which is better? he that is cast into the Fire, or he that comes safe through, on the Day of Judgement? **Do what ye will:** Verily He seeth (clearly) all that ye do. (The Noble Quran, 41:40)" Here we clearly see Allah Almighty giving a freedom of choice for people to choose or refuse Islam.

"And those who take as protectors others besides Him - Allah doth watch over them; and **thou art not the disposer of their affairs.** (The Noble Quran, 42:6)" Again, Allah Almighty here told Prophet Muhammad that he has no authority over those who reject Islam.

"It is true thou wilt not be able to guide every one whom thou lovest; **but Allah Guides those whom He will and He Knows those who receive guidance.** (The Noble Quran, 28:56)" Again, no authority to Prophet Muhammad over those who accept or reject Islam.

Let us look at Noble Verse 2:256 "**Let there be no compulsion in religion:** Truth stands out clear from error: whoever rejects evil and believes in Allah hath grasped the most trustworthy handhold, that never breaks. And Allah heareth and knoweth all things." The Holy Quran prohibits Muslims to force any person into Islam. Muslims must not let people resent Islam and Muslims. They must leave people decide for themselves because the "Truth stands out clear from error" (2:256).

Compulsion is incompatible with religion: Because (1) religion depends upon faith and will, and these would be meaningless by force; (2) Truth and Error have been so clearly shown up by the mercy of Allah Almighty that there should be no doubt in the minds of any persons of good will as to the fundamentals of faith; (3) Allah Almighty's protection is continuous, and His Plan is always to lead us from the depths of darkness into the clearest light.

The following was sent to me from "Vipor Poison"; may Allah Almighty always be pleased with him:

"I found another verse in the Quran that dealt with apostates. Noble Verse 4:137 "Those who believe, then reject faith, then believe (again) and (again) reject faith, and go on increasing in unbelief, - Allah will not forgive them nor guide them nor guide them on the way."

Notice that the Quran says those who reject faith and then BELIEVE and again DISBELIEVE. if a Muslim rejects faith and is then killed for doing so how will he live to again BELIEVE and then DISBELIEVE. The atmosphere of this verse is that of free will and freedom of choice to everyone. If Allah wanted he would have said something about the punishment, if there was any, of those who reject Islam after accepting it. but Allah takes this to be clearly a private matter between them and Allah.

I found many verses in the Quran that teach us NO PUNISHMENT for an apostate BUT I found no verse that says the contrary.

Here is another verse about the freedom of expression in the Quran. many translators translate this wrongly and kill the meaning of the word making it a bogus and strange statement. Noble Verse 39:18 "Those who listen to the word, then follow the best of it; those are they whom Allah has guided, and those it is who are the men of understanding."

The Quran tells the Muslims to listen to every thing and follow only the best of what is said. it does not tell them to kill people if they say something that is not according to the cultural norm."

The following two sets of Noble Verses were sent to me by brother Rached Blijj; may Allah Almighty always be pleased with him.

Let us look at Noble Verses 109:1-6 "Say : O ye that reject Faith! I worship not that which ye worship, Nor will ye worship that which I worship. And I will not worship that which ye have been wont to worship, Nor will ye worship that which I worship. **To you be your Way, and to me mine.**"

Let us look at Noble Verse 42:15 "Now then, for that (reason), call (them to the Faith), and stand steadfast as thou art commanded, nor follow thou their vain desires; but say: '**I believe in the Book which God has sent down; and I am commanded to judge justly between you.** God is our Lord and your Lord: for us (is the responsibility for) our deeds, and for you for your deeds. **There is no contention between us and you.** God will bring us together, and to Him is (our) Final Goal.'"

The Noble Quran in all of the above Noble Verses is crystal clear about providing freedom of religion and choice to all people, Muslims and non-Muslims.

### **3- So how come Muslim Fundamentalists execute those who desert Islam then?**

The interpretation of those who prohibit women from education, even though Islam clearly allows education for women, and prohibit them also from driving, and oppress men by forcing them to grow beards, even though beards are NOT mandatory in Islam, doesn't mean much to me.

As we've seen above, it is quite clear, and beyond any questioning that Allah Almighty prohibited compulsion in religion and allowed the absolute freedom of religion to everyone. When Prophet Muhammad peace be upon him executed apostates, he did it because Muslims were at war time and because Islam was still partial, and Muslims needed protection from the **hypocrites** of the Jews and Christians who purposely entered Islam and deserted it later to create confusion among the Muslims as shown below in the Noble Verse.

The Sayings of Prophet Muhammad, peace be upon him, regarding killing the renegades came when Islam was partial and the Muslims were dealing with wars all the time. So if the person wasn't with the Muslims, then he was certainly with his people, the pagans and the other non-Muslims, and he would've then had to join the evil forces to fight the Muslims. So the case back then was different than today.

I have no sympathy for those hypocrites of the Jews and Christians who got executed:

"A section of the People of the Book (Jews and Christians) say: Believe in the morning what is revealed to the believers (Muslims), but reject it at the end of the day; perchance they may (themselves) turn back (from Islam). (The Noble Quran, 3:72)"

Please read "The absolute freedom of religion in Islam" section above for more details and explanations.

Please visit [Islam prohibits forming alliance with Jews and Christians and non-Muslims.](#)

[Why do some Muslims call Americans and Westerners "Great Satan"?](#)

[What is the Wisdom of Islam?](#)

### **4- My rebuttal about the historical Muslims' battles with the Apostates:**

According to the Islamic history, when Prophet Muhammad peace be upon him died, some of the Muslims had deserted Islam for several reasons. The biggest of those reasons was that they opposed paying the Zakah (2.5% of annual income of Islamic taxes for the poor). Keep in mind that Allah Almighty constantly Warning the Prophet and the Muslims from the hypocrites (false believers). The Arabs before Islam were used to exploiting each others. The strong ate the poor, and high interest rates were enforced on loans given to the poor to ultimately force them to sell of their cattle, sons, daughters and/or wives as slaves.

After the death of our Prophet, some of the rich hypocrites decided to join with the Pagan Arab tribes to fight the Muslims and end Islam. The leader of the apostates/renegades was Musylama Al-Kath-thab or Musylama the liar

50 in English, started his army of infidels in what we call today the country of Oman, which is more than 1,000 miles away from Mecca and Medina where the Muslims resided.

After Musylama became strong and popular and was able to gather a big amount of pagans and hypocrites to form an army, he led them to march to Mecca and Medina to fight the Muslims. When his army finally reached the mountains near Mecca, the Muslims had fought them several battles until he ultimately was killed and his army was soundly defeated.

The objection that I have with some Muslims is for the following reasons:

- 1- It was the renegades or apostates that declared the war on the Muslims. The Muslims did not start the war.
- 2- We can't use the story of Musylama Al-Kath-thab to prove that it is ok today to kill any person who deserts Islam. Musylama was not a peaceful renegade. He wanted to destroy the Muslims through war. He had to be fought and killed. We can't use him as a standard and kill all renegades, especially those in the West for instance, who might embrace Islam and then desert it later due to the overwhelming anti-Islamic media and lies.
- 3- As I proved in this article, Allah Almighty in the Noble Quran talked about the apostates several times, and not a single command exists in the Noble Quran that orders the killing of any of them.
- 4- The Sayings of Prophet Muhammad, peace be upon him, regarding killing the renegades came when Islam was partial and the Muslims were dealing with wars all the time. As I said above, if the person wasn't with the Muslims, then he was certainly with his people, the pagans and the other non-Muslims, and he would've then had to join the evil forces to fight the Muslims. So the case back then was different than today.
- 5- Today, if a weak-hearted and easily persuaded person for instance decides to embrace Islam and then gets easily persuaded to leave Islam, and then gets easily persuaded to embrace Islam again, and then gets easily persuaded to leave it and so on, then how is it right for us to apply the things that were applied to the hypocrites and Musylama Al-Kath-thab during and after our Prophet's time to this innocent individual?
- 6- We must never forget Allah Almighty's Command that honors the freedom of religion and choice in Islam in Noble Verse 2:256 and the others as shown in this article.
- 7- Some Muslims claim that the Caliphs did not apply Noble Verse 2:256 and others to the renegades, because the Caliphs knew that these Noble Verses are not applicable to them. My response to this is that we:
  1. Don't know if the Caliphs had any choice to apply them back in the hostile environment that they existed in back then.
  2. The Caliphs are not the measuring stick that the Muslims today have to follow, especially after knowing that the Caliphs themselves **did things different from each others** several times before on very major Islamic issues: [1] [2].

##### **5- Does Islam really mean to force someone to Islam or else kill him?**

Please visit [Does Islam really mean to force someone to Islam or else kill him?](#)

##### **6- Renowned Muslim scholars agreeing with not all apostates to be killed:**



**Emphasis below are mine.**

From: "Just Flow" <just\_flow11@hotmail.com>  
 To: quransearch\_com@yahoo.com, islam\_defender@hotmail.com, sami-zaatari@hotmail.com, b\_zawadi@hotmail.com, islamtttd786@yahoo.com, Munir0728@yahoo.com  
 Subject: Apostacy-Support from orthodox scholars, hanafi, maliki, hanbali scholars agree  
 Date: Tue, 28 Mar 2006 01:29:47 +0200

There are too orthodox scholars who agree with you, i don't mean just some scholars, but famous renowned orthodox scholars, like Ibn tamiyya and the maliki scholar Abul Walid al-Baji support our stance on apostacy, therefor your article is and stance is also a right orthodox view, where no one has the right to criticize you, since renowned scholars confirmed our stance. Check the article below, let me know what you think of it, and if you would add it to the article.

---

Volume 4, Book 52, Number 260:

Narrated Ikrima:

Ali burnt some people and this news reached Ibn 'Abbas, who said, "Had I been in his place I would not have burnt them, as the Prophet said, 'Don't punish (anybody) with Allah's Punishment.' No doubt, I would have killed them, for the **Prophet said, 'If somebody (a Muslim) discards his religion, kill him.'** "

Many prominent scholars throughout the centuries have held the view that apostasy is not a hadd (singular for hudud = capital) offence. This view is founded on the fact that the Qur'an is completely silent on the death penalty for apostasy. In fact, freedom of religion is a fundamental tenet of Islam. In Surah al-Baqarah, 2:256, Allah explicitly states: "Let there be no compulsion in religion". This Medinan verse was revealed when some Companions asked the Prophet for permission to compel their relatives to profess Islam. It has been widely interpreted to mean that no one can be compelled to embrace Islam because religion depends upon faith and will, and this would be meaningless if induced by force. Islam itself means submission to the will of God; and the willing submission of the self to faith and belief must be attained through conviction and reason, not through coercion and duress.

Islam began by inviting and persuading people to embrace it on the merit of its rationality and truth. In Surah Yunus, 10:99, a verse revealed in Mecca at the advent of Islam, Allah says: "Had your Lord willed, everyone on earth would have believed. Do you then force people to become believers?" This and verse 2:256, together with the norm of Shari'a which affirms freedom of religion, have led many Muslim countries today to include in its Constitution an article on freedom of religion as a fundamental right.

In his book, The Punishment for Apostasy in Islam, the former Chief Justice of Pakistan, SA Rahman, noted that even though the subject of apostasy occurred no less than 20 times in the Qur'an, the Holy Book remained silent on death as a punishment. Surah An-Nisa', 4:137-138, state that "Verily, those who believe, then disbelieve, then believe again, then disbelieve, and then increase in their disbelief - Allah will never forgive them nor guide them to the path. Give to the hypocrites the tidings that there is for them a painful torment." If indeed it was Allah's intention to impose the death penalty for apostasy, then such occasion of repeated apostasy could have provoked such a punishment. But neither the first instance of apostasy, nor repeated apostasy brought about capital punishment.

Those who advocate the death penalty for apostasy based their reasoning on a hadith which proclaims, "kill whoever changes his religion". But this hadith is open to varying interpretations on several grounds.

**52**            **First, this hadith is considered a weak hadith** with just a single isnad (this means there is only one chain of transmission or narration) and thus according to the rules of Islamic jurisprudence, it is not enough to validate the death penalty.

**Second, this hadith is also considered a general ('amm) hadith** in that it is in need of specification (takhsis); for it would otherwise convey a meaning that is not within its purpose. The obvious reading of the hadith would, for example, make liable the death punishment on a Hindu or Christian who converts to Islam. This is obviously not the intention of the hadith. According to the rules of Islamic jurisprudence, when a text is interpreted once, it becomes open to further interpretation and specification. Therefore, many scholars interpret this hadith to apply only to cases of high treason (hirabah), which means declaring war against Islam, the Prophet, or God or the legitimate leadership of the ummah.

**Third, and most importantly,** there is no evidence to show that Prophet Muhammad saw or his Companions ever compelled anyone to embrace Islam, nor did they sentence anyone to death solely for renunciation of the faith.

Based on these three reasons and the Qur'anic principle of freedom of religion, prominent ulama (scholars) from the seventh to the twentieth centuries have come out with the position that there can be no death penalty for apostasy. According to Professor Hashim Kamali in his award-winning book, *Freedom of Expression in Islam*, two leading jurists of the generation succeeding the Companions, Ibrahim al-Nakha'i and Sufyan al-Thawri, both held that the apostate should be re-invited to Islam, but should never be condemned to death. The renowned Hanafi jurist, Shams al-Din al-Sarakhsi wrote that even though renunciation of faith is the greatest of offences, it is a matter between man and his Creator, and its punishment is postponed to the Day of Judgement. The Maliki jurist Abul Walid al-Baji and the renowned Hanbali jurist Ibn Taymiyyah have both held that apostasy is a sin which carries no hadd punishment.

In modern times, the celebrated Sheikh of al-Azhar University, the late Mahmud Shaltut who was esteemed for his vast knowledge of Islamic jurisprudence and Qur'anic interpretation, wrote that many ulama are in agreement that hudud cannot be established by a solitary hadith and that unbelief by itself does not call for the death penalty. The current Sheikh of al-Azhar, who was Egypt's former Grand Mufti, Dr Mohammed Sayed Tantawi, also declared that apostasy is not a capital crime.

Many scholars, including Ibn Taymiyyah, Shaltut and Tantawi, said that the death penalty was not meant to apply to a simple change of faith, but to hirabah, that is, when apostasy is accompanied by rebellion against the community and its legitimate leadership.

·    [www.answering-christianity.com](http://www.answering-christianity.com)

## **7- Conclusion:**

As we clearly see from the Noble Verses above, apostates are no longer to be killed in Islam. I am not here promoting apostates, but there is no reason to kill someone who doesn't deserve to be killed. Certainly if the apostate is hostile toward the Muslims and joins the enemy in a war against them, or tries to corrupt the Muslims in the Muslim lands by trying to convert them to his/her new deviant religion, then the matter becomes different. But if a Westerner today for instance embraces Islam for a while and then changes his position due to the overwhelming false anti-Islamic media, then certainly killing that person would be a grave sin and a big mistake.

**(Please review these questions, it might sound offensive but it's a way to reveal the truth if you really believe in God read the Quran and bible and ask these questions to the church, priests & your self so you can find out what is truth about God & what are against the truth from God. Dont get emotional or angry but think with cool brain what is really real & the only truth of God. Dare to explore, dare to ask & dare to know. God is truth & truth is above all.Faisal)**

**By Abdalla S. Alothman**

### **101 Proofs that the Quran is Not Copied from the Bible**

In the Name of Allah,

the Most Compassionate,

the Ever Merciful

{Do they not then think deeply in the Qur'ân, or are their hearts locked up (from understanding it)?} [Quran 47:24]

{Nay, We fling (send down) the truth (this Qur'ân) against the falsehood (disbelief), so it destroys it, and behold, it (falsehood) is vanished. And woe to you for that (lie) which you ascribe (to Us)}. [Quran 21:18]

Time and time again, we Muslims have to endure accusations that our Qur'an is copied from the Bible. Below are 101 proofs that makes it impossible for the Qur'an to be copied from the Bible.

- 1 - Who was created first, Adam or Satan? The Quran says Satan, the Bible doesn't say anything.
- 2 - Who was created first, Adam or the Angles? The Quran says the Angels, the Bible doesn't say anything.
- 3 - Why doesn't the Bible mention that Noah had two wives, one was disobedient, and she died. And another which was saved.
- 4 - Why does the Bible say that Noah's ark is in Ararat but it was discovered in Al-Judyy, as the Quran says so?
- 5 - Why does the Bible say that God afflicted women for Eve's sin, and the Quran doesn't tell us such thing.
- 6 - Where does the Bible tell us about the story of Aad and Thamood ? The town of Thamoud has been discovered in Saudi Arabia—it's located in a place called Mada-in Saleh. And recently, the town of Aad has been discovered with the help of NASA's satellites. Check the link : <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/nova/ubar/>
- 7 - Where does the Bible mention Prophet Saleh ?
- 8 - Where does the Bible mention Prophet Huud ?
- 9 - Where does the Bible mention Prophet Shu'ayb ?
- 10 - Where does the Bible refer to Al-Khidr ?

12 - Why doesn't the Bible mention the story of the Cow that happened between Moses and the Jews.

13 - Where do you find in the Quran any reference to Hosea, Malachi, Micha, Jude, Nahum, Nehemiah, Obadaiah, Esther, Joel, Ruth, etc ?

14 - Why doesn't the Bible mention the story of Thul-Qarnayn.

15 - Why doesn't the Bible mention the story of the People of the Cave?.

16 - Why doesn't the Bible mention the story of Antioch in Surat Yasin?.

17 - Why does the Bible say that Jesus was crucified, and the Quran says that he was saved?

18 - Why does the Bible say that Abraham sacrificed his only begotten son, Isaac, and forgets that he had another son called Ishamael, who is older than Isaac?.

19 - Regarding the dream Joseph had in Genesis 37, why is it fulfilled in the Quran and not fulfilled in the Bible? Could it be because that Joseph's mother died before Joseph had his dream? Bad prophecy.

20 - Why is it that the Bible tells us that the Holy Spirit had sex with Mary, and the Quran tells us that the Angel who visited Mary told her that she will bear a son, and he is ONLY informing her of what God has decreed?

21 - Why is it that the Bible tells us that Moses was adopted by Pharaoh's daughter, and the Quran tells us it was Pharaoh's wife?.

22 - Why is it that the Quran tells us that Lut was a pious prophet, and the Bible tells us that he had sex with his daughters?

23 - Why is it that the Quran tells us in Sura 19 and 20 that Moses was a special chosen prophet who was raised under God's supervision, and the Bible tells us that he died because he didn't disobey God?

24 - Why is it that the Bible says that it is written with the false pen of the scribe in Jeremiah 8:8, and the Quran tells us that it has no discrepancies?

25 - Why is it that the Bible tells us that Pharaoh did not drown, and the Quran tells us that he drowned, but Allah left his body as a sign to mankind. When they dissected Pharaoh's body, they found out that his body had too much salt inside it. You say the Quran is copied from the Bible? I say you are ignorant! Read the Quran 10:92.

26 - Why does the Bible tell us in Genesis that God had to take a walk to find Adam, and the Quran tells us that God's knowledge doesn't require that He walks?

27 - Why is it that the Quran tells us that Jesus spoke in the cradle, but the Bible knows nothing about the childhood of Jesus?

28 - Why is it that the Quran tells us that Jesus made miracles by giving life to statues made from clay?

29 - The Quran tells us that Aaron is innocent; he did not make the golden calf, but a man called Al-Samirri (A person who organizes songs and joy) made it, while the Bible tells us that Aaron made the Golden calf.

30 - why is it that the Quranic Laws state that the thief's hands should be chopped, and the laws of Moses say something else?

31 - Why does the Quran say lash the fornicators 100 times, and the Bible says stone them.

32 - Why does the Quran orders us to fast in Ramadhan and the Bible doesn't.

55                    33 - Why does the Quran tells us that the inheritance share of the man is as twice as much as the woman, and the Bible has no such law?

34 - Why does the Quran tells us not to transgress in wars, and the Bible teaches us to kill every living thing including plants (Joshua 6).

35 - The Bible teaches us to kill unbelievers, and leave to ourselves YOUNG virgins who never knew a man (Numbers 31). Why isn't such thing present in the Quran?

36 - The Quran tells us to free slaves to enter heaven in Surat Al-Balad. Why doesn't the Bible say such thing?

37 - Why is Satan called a FALLEN ANGEL in the Bible, and not in the Quran?

38 – Why does the Quran tells us there are Jinn (Some are good and others are bad), but the Bible doesn't mention Jinn?

39 – Why is it that the Quran tells us to perform Hajj to Makkah, and the Bible doesn't tell us such thing?

40 – Why does the Quran tells us that Abraham and Ishmael built the Kaaba, while the Bible says no such thing?

41 - Why is it that the Bible condemns David as a murderer, and the Quran tells us that he was a pious sinless prophet?

42 - Why doesn't the Bible tell us the story of Solomon and Balqees?

43 - Why doesn't the Bible tell us that Solomon had Jinns who worked for him, and the Quran says so?

44 - Why is it that the Quran tells us that Solomon had soldiers from the Jinn and the Bible doesn't say so?

45 - Why is it that the Quran tells us that Solomon understood the speech of the birds and the Bible doesn't say so?

46 – Why is it that the Quran tells us that Solomon understood the speech of the ants and the Bible doesn't say so?

47 - Why is it that the Quran tells us that ONLY female bees get the honey, and the Bible doesn't say so?

48 – Why is it that the Quran tells us that the Quran mentions different levels in Paradise, and the Bible doesn't say so?

49 - Why is it that the Quran tells us that there is a tree in hell called Zaqqum, and the Bible doesn't say so?

50 - The Quran mentions Thal-Kifl as one of the prophets. Can you find his name in the Bible?

51 - Why is it that the Quran was finalized and approved by Prophet Mohammad (s), and the Bible was never approved by any prophet?

52 – Why didn't Mohammad make the Quran in chronological order just like the Bible? Why doesn't the Quran include the boring genealogies that are all over the Bible?

53 - Why is it that the Quran mentions Ishmael as an honorable prophet, and the Bible refers to him as the son of the slave woman (Galatians 4)?

54 - Why doesn't the Quran mention the story of the people of Tyre, while the Bible does?

55 - Why doesn't the Quran mentions the story of David and how he killed one of his enemies to marry his wife as the Bible did in I Samuel 25?

- 56 - Why is it that the Bible does not mention the story of David and Solomon with the sheep, and the Quran does?
- 57 - Why does the Bible mention Abraham's father by name, and the Quran mentions him by his nick?
- 58 - Why doesn't the Bible mention the story when Abraham was put into a fire by his people and the Quran does?
- 59 - Why doesn't the Quran mention the interesting events that happened to Abraham in Egypt? (See BONUS #15 for one amazing example.)
- 60 - Why is it that the Bible tells us that John's mother was the daughter of Aaron, and the Quran doesn't say so?
- 61 - Why doesn't the Bible mention the story of how Mary was raised, and the Quran does?
- 62 - Why doesn't the Quran and the Bible have the same story about the birth of Jesus? The Quran says that he was born under the remnants of a palm tree, but the Bible says he was born in a stable.
- 63 - According to the Bible, who are the Sabians?
- 64 - Where does the Bible mention the Magians?
- 65 - In Genesis, the Bible tells us that Jacob had a fight with God, and the Quran tells us in Surat Al-Baqara that whoever takes the Angels as enemies, he becomes an enemy of God. Why do we see this contradiction? Moreover, why didn't Mohammad (s) tell us that Jacob wrestled with God?
- 66 - Why is it that the Quran tells us in Surat Taaha that the staff of Moses became a REAL snake, and the Bible tells us that it only appeared to be a snake?
- 67 - Why is it that Moses was the one who threw his staff during the contest with the magicians, and the Bible tells us that Aaron is the one who threw it?
- 68 - The story of Moses and the bronze snake in Numbers 21 is pretty interesting. Why is it mentioned in the Bible and not in the Quran?
- 69 - The Quran tells us to follow a certain procedure to cleanse ourselves before prayers in 4:43. Why doesn't the Bible give us the same instructions?
- 70 - The Quran tells us that Earth is round, but the Bible tells us that the Earth is flat. Why?
- 71 - The Quran tells us about Haroot and Maroot in Surat Al-Baqara. Who are those characters according to the Bible?
- 72 - Why is the story of Gog and Magog different in the Quran and the Bible?
- 73 - The Bible tells us that Prophet Elijah was raised to God. Why doesn't the Quran say the same thing?
- 74 - The Bible tells us that Solomon had many wives. Why doesn't the Quran say the same thing?
- 75 - The Bible tells us that God RESTED after he created the world. The Quran says that nothing makes God tired. Why?
- 76 - The Quran details embryology, why doesn't the Bible?
- 77 - The Quran mentions the names of the Gods during Noah's time in Surat Nuuh, why aren't those names present in the Bible?
- 78 - The Bible tells us that the whole Earth was flooded, why doesn't the Quran say the same thing?

57                    79 – The Quran tells us that hell has 7 doors in Surat Al-Hijr (Ch. 15), why doesn't the Bible mention such thing?

80 - Why does the Quran say that Lot's wife was a bad woman, but God punishes Lot's wife in the Bible just for accidentally turning back to see what was happening in Sodom?

81 - Why does the Bible accuse Noah for getting drunk in Genesis 9, and the Quran frees him from such accusation?

82 - Anyone who curses his mother shall be put to death, according to Leviticus 20, why don't we find such a law in the Quran?

83 - Why is it that apostates are killed according to the Bible, and not killed according to the Quran?  
See <http://www.systemoflife.com/answering-islamophobes/abul-kasem/235-refuting-muhammad-said-death-converting-to-other-religion>

84 – Why is it that tattoos are forbidden in the Bible (Leviticus 19), and no tattoos are mentioned in the Quran?

85 – The Quran instructs us to treat those who are born from an illegal sexual intercourse as Brothers. But the Bible tells us in Leviticus 23 that they should NOT even enter the assembly of the Lord. Why didn't Mohammad (s) copy this beautiful law?

86 – The Bible tells us in Deuteronomy 25, that if two men were beating up each other, and the wife of one of them interfered, she should have her hand chopped off. Why didn't Mohammad (s) copy this beautiful law?

87 - Why does the Bible encourage Bribery in Proverbs 17, and the Quran never encourages such thing?

88 – Why does the Bible say that wisdom is a source of sorrow in Ecclesiastes 1:18, and the Quran calls wisdom a gift in 2:269?

89 - Why does God in the Quran tells us to avoid bloodshed, and the Bible God curses the sword which doesn't do bloodshed (Jeremiah 48)?

90 - When God told Zachariah that he will have a son, Zachariah asked for a sign, and God gave him a sign in Sura 19. Does the Bible mention that sign? The Bible says that he could not speak, but it's detailed to us in the Sunnah that he was able to speak when he was praying. But, when it came to communicating with others, he did so by signs. Further more, the Bible says that Zakariyya was not able to speak because he was punished by Gabriel because he did not believe the angel, while the Quran tells us that it was a sign given to him—he asked God for a sign, and God gave him a sign, not a punishment.

91 - The Bible God in Leviticus 21 tells us that hunchbacks, dwarfs, cripples, blind people, people who are deformed or disfigured, or have damaged testicles—all those people cannot become priests. The Quran tells us that there is no difference between a man and another except in piety. Why didn't Mohammad (s) copy this BEAUTIFUL law from the Bible?

92 - Why does the Bible God in Leviticus 21 forbid priests from marrying divorced women, and the Quran doesn't say such thing?

93 - Why is it that the Bible tells the people to call a person who doesn't listen to his father or mother "stubborn and a drunkard"? The Quran does not tell us that we should call a person who is disobedient to his parents as a drunkard. Furthermore, the Biblical law is that this person should be stoned to death, but the Quran approves no such thing. Why?

94 - The Quran tells us that we are not above the Law. We must adhere to the Laws of God. But the Bible God tells the Christians in Galatians 2 that they are under no LAW!! In other words, God made all these laws, so that

58 Christians can see them and smile. Why didn't Mohammad tell his people that the Quranic laws are only for non-Muslims?

95 - The Bible God tells us that He will let us see the sex organs of the Jews, but the Quran mentions no such thing. Mohammad (s) had serious problems with the Jews, so why didn't he make fun of them with something similar with what we read in Nahum 3?

96 - In Romans 6, the Bible tells us that Jesus will never die again. But The Quran tells us that he will die and he will be raised at Judgment day. Why didn't Mohammad copy from Romans 6?

97 - The Bible teaches Christians to drink wine, the Quran forbids Muslims drinking. Why?

98 - 1 Corinthians 6 tells us that our bodies are members of Christ. The Quran tells us that our bodies belong to Allah, Christ has nothing to do with our bodies. Why didn't Mohammad (s) copy that from the Bible?

99 - In Ezekiel 20, the Bible God tells us that he wanted to decimate all the Israelites, but He didn't do so because it would hurt his reputation. In the Quran God tells us that He does indeed take away all the people if they were wrongful (Like the people of Noah, Sodom, Aad, and Thamood) if He wills.

100 - The Bible God has a beautiful punishment in Malachi 2. He threatens an Israelite that He would fill his face with feces!! In the Quran, God never says such things.

101 - The Bible says that the Original Sin was committed by Adam and Eve when they ate from the forbidden tree. The Quran tells us that the Original Sin was Satan's arrogance when he didn't obey God, when God ordered him to do So.

#### BONUS:

1 - The Quran tells us about an argument in 2:258 about Abraham and the King. Does the Bible have this story?

2 - The Quran handles divorce with care. A divorced woman stays in her house; a man should provide for her; a man should not return his wife to give her a hard time, etc. Does the Bible have the same laws regarding divorce as the Quran?

3 - The Quran tells us that Sins are not inherited. But, the Bible tells us that sins are inherited.

4 - The Quran tells us that God forgave Adam's sin after he ate from the forbidden tree. Does the Bible say that?

5 - The Quran tells us in Sura 36, that the sun and the moon are independent from one another. Does the Bible say such thing?

6 - In 25:53 and 55:19-20 the Quran tells us about how salty and pure water bodies mix. Does the Bible say such thing?

7 - In Islam we believe that there are signs to Judgment Day. Most of these signs are mentioned in the Sunnah, however, one interesting sign is a Beast/animal that would appear to the people and inform them of their status. We find this beast mentioned in the Quran in 27:82. Does the Bible say such thing?

8 - The Quran tells us that man and women are created from ONE SOUL. Does the Bible say that man and women are created from one soul? No, the Bible says in 1 Corinthians 11:7 that man is the image and glory of God, while women are the glory of man.



59 9 - The Bible contains lots of contradictions. Why don't we find those contradictions copied in the Quran? For a list of few of the contradictions in the Bible see:  
[http://www.bibleislam.com/bible\\_contradictions.php](http://www.bibleislam.com/bible_contradictions.php)

10 - The Quran says that one of Noah's sons was not saved from the flood because he was an unbeliever (Sura 11). Does the Bible say such thing?

11 - The Quran (10:90) tells us that Pharaoh tried to seek forgiveness from God. Does the Bible say the same thing?

12 - Ishmael, the son of Abraham, is considered a Prophet and a Messenger in the Quran. Does the Bible say that "Ishmael is a prophet"?

13 – We read in Surat Al-Nahl in the Quran, that the honey bee produces honey with different hues which is healthy and beneficial for mankind. Just recently, Apitherapy came up with a fantastic cure for arthritist and other chronic diseases–this therapy is called bee sting therapy, where the bee stings the patient and the venom would cure the pain. In addition, the Quran also says that the female bee is responsible for building the hive and collecting the honey. All that is proved by science today. I wonder which book of the Bible says such thing! Search the web for "Bee Sting Therapy" or "Apitherapy" to find out more.

14 - In the 16th verse of Surat Al-'Alaq, we read: {A lying sinful forelock!} Psychologists and neurologists have confirmed that it is in this area of the brain where morals and behavior are processed. Therefore, when someone decides to lie, this decision comes from that front part of the brain, and the Quran refers to that specific part when it refers to lying. Now, I wonder from which Bible passage did Mohammad (s) copy that from.

15 - In the book of Genesis we read the story about what happened to Abraham when he went to Egypt. The Bible tells us that he sold his honor by allowing his wife to become Pharaoh's concubine, so that he could be treated well instead of being killed. Now there is nowhere in the Quran where such accusation is attributed to Prophet Abraham. I wonder why didn't Prophet Mohammad (s) copy such thing from the Bible.

Walhamdulilahi Rabbil Alameen

**Question: Does Quran mention that Prophet Muhammad is the last prophet? Muhammad is not the father of any of your men, but [he is] the messenger of God and seal(last,finish,end,final) of the prophets and God has the knowledge of everything. (Quran 33:40)**

## Jesus in Islam & Quran

**"And mention in the Book (the Quran), Mary, when she withdrew in seclusion from her family to a place facing east. She placed a screen**

**(to screen herself) from them; then We sent to her a spirit from Us, (the angel Gabriel), and he appeared before her in the form of a man in all respects. She said: 'Verily, I seek refuge with the Most Gracious (God) from you, if you do fear God.' (The angel) said: 'I am only a messenger from your Lord, (to announce) to you the gift of a righteous son.' She said: 'How can I have a son, when no man hath touched me, nor am I unchaste?' He said: 'So (it will be), your Lord said That is easy for Me (God): And (We wish) to appoint him as a sign to mankind and a mercy from Us (God), and it is a matter (already) decreed (by God).'" (Quran 19:16-21)**

**“Indeed, the likeness of Jesus with God is as the likeness of Adam. He created him of dust, then He said to him: ‘Be!’ and he was.” (Quran 3:59)**

Muslims, like Christians believe that Jesus performed miracles. These miracles were performed by the will and permission of God, Who has power and control over all things.

**“Then will God say: ‘O Jesus the son of Mary! Recount My favor to you and to your mother. Behold! I strengthened you with the Holy Spirit (the angel Gabriel) so that you did speak to the people in childhood and in maturity. Behold! I taught you the Book and Wisdom, the Torah and the Gospel. And behold: you make out of clay, as it were, the figure of a bird, by My leave, and you breathe into it, and it becomes a bird by My leave, and you heal those born blind, and the lepers by My leave. And behold! You bring forth the dead by My leave. And behold! I did restrain the Children of Israel from (violence to you) when you did show them the Clear Signs, and the unbelievers among them said: ‘This is nothing but evident magic.’” (Quran 5:110)**

God sent all prophets with miracles specific to the nation to whom they were sent to prove the veracity of their message. These miracles were not performed of their own accord; rather, they were only manifest in their hands by God's will. The miracles performed by Jesus were no different. The Jews

were well advanced in the field of medicine, and the miracles which Jesus brought were of this nature, proving the truth of His message and in order to convince the Jews.

**“They have certainly disbelieved who say, ‘God is the Messiah, the son of Mary’ while the Messiah has said, ‘O Children of Israel, worship God, my Lord and your Lord...’” (Quran 5:72)**

God says about the belief that Jesus is part of a “Trinity”:

**“They have certainly disbelieved who say, ‘God is the third of three.’ (Rather) there is none worthy of worship except One (God). And if they do not desist from what they are saying, there will surely afflict the disbelievers among them a painful punishment. So will they not repent to God and seek His forgiveness? And God is Forgiving and Merciful. The Messiah (Jesus), son of Mary, was no more than a Messenger before whom many Messengers have passed away; and his mother adhered wholly to truthfulness, and they both ate food (as other mortals do). See how We make Our signs clear to them; and see where they are turning away!” (Quran 5:73-75)**

And also:

**“O People of the Book (Jews and Christians)! Do not exceed the limits in your religion, and attribute to God nothing except the truth. The Messiah, Jesus, son of Mary, was only a Messenger of God, and His command that He conveyed unto Mary, and a spirit from Him. So believe in God and in His Messengers, and do not say: ‘God is a Trinity.’ Give up this assertion; it would be better for you. For God is indeed (the only) One God. Far be it from His glory that He should have a son. To Him belongs all that is in the heavens and in the earth. And God is sufficient for a guardian.” (Quran 4:171)**

God deems this belief as an enormity against His Essence:

**“And they say: ‘The Most Merciful (God) has taken (for Himself) a son.’ Assuredly you utter a hideous thing, whereby almost the heavens are torn, and the earth is split asunder and the mountains fall in ruins; That they ascribe unto the Most Merciful a son, when it is not suitable for (the Majesty of) the Most Merciful that He**

**should take a son. There is none in the heavens and the earth but comes unto the Most Merciful as a slave.” (Quran 19:88-93)**

On the Day of Judgment, Jesus again will free himself from this false attribution. God gives us a glimpse of what he will say when he is asked about why people

worshipped him:

**“And (beware the Day) when God will say, “O Jesus, Son of Mary, did you say to the people, ‘Take me and my mother as deities besides God?’” He will say, ‘Exalted are You! It was not for me to say that to which I have no right. If I had said it, You would have known it. You know what is within myself, and I do not know what is within Yourself. Indeed, it is You who is Knower of the unseen. I said not to them except what you commanded me – to worship God, my Lord and your Lord...”” (Quran 5:116-117)**

**“I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before me.” (Exodus 20:1-3)**

Ascribing a son to God is in clear opposition to that principle for which He created the Creation and sent prophets. God says in the Quran:

**“And I did not create the jinn and mankind except to worship Me.” (Quran 51:56)**

He also said:

**“And We certainly sent into every nation a messenger, (saying), ‘Worship God and avoid all false objects of worship...”” (Quran 16:36)**

**“And (remember) when Jesus, son of Mary, said: ‘O Children of Israel, I am the Messenger of God sent to you, confirming the Torah (which came) before me...”” (Quran 61:6)**

Matthew 5:17-18, Jesus stated:

**“Think not that I have come to abolish the law and the (way of) the prophets; I have come not to abolish them but to fulfill them.”**

another prophet to come after him. God says:

**“And when Jesus, son of Mary, said: ‘O Children of Israel! Indeed I am the messenger of God unto you, confirming that which was (revealed) before me in the Torah, and bringing good tidings of a messenger who will come after me, whose name is the Praised One.”” (Quran 61:6)**

John 14:16-17:“And I will give you another Counselor to be with you forever, even the Spirit of Truth.”

It was told by Jesus so its none other than prophet Mohammad

"...They did not kill him, nor did they crucify him, but (another) was made to resemble him to them..." (Quran 4:157)

"God lifted him up to His presence. God is Almighty, All-Wise."

(Quran 4:158) "No bearer of burdens shall bear the burden of another." (Quran 39:7)

"There is not one of the People of the Scripture but will believe in him (Jesus) before his death, and on the Day of Resurrection he will be a witness against them." (Quran 4: 159)

*God forbids you not, with regards to those who fight you not for (your) faith nor drive you out of your homes, from dealing kindly and justly with them; for God loveth those who are just (Qur'an, 60:8)*

Adam, Abraham ,Noah, Moses ,Jesus , Muhammad were all messengers & prophets of 1 God Allah so Islam is the 1<sup>st</sup> religion & it's the last religion because God is Allah & God is forever so is God's religion which is only Islam & it is also forever. Finally Islam always existed even before Adam, Abraham ,Noah, Moses ,Jesus & Muhammad because it's the only true religion from God Allah.

**Conclusion of the entire book He said: "I am indeed a servant of God: He hath given me revelation and made me a prophet; 019.031 "And He hath made me blessed wheresoever I be, and hath enjoined on me Prayer and Charity as long as I live; 019.032 "(He) hath made me kind to my mother, and not overbearing or miserable; 019.033 "So peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die, and the day that I shall be raised up to life (again)"! 019.034 Such (was) Jesus the son of Mary: (it is) a statement of truth, about which they (vainly) dispute. 019.035 It is not befitting to (the majesty of) God that He should beget a son. Glory be to Him! when He determines a matter, He only says to it, "Be", and it is. Al-Quran. (There is no God but Allah & Adam, Abraham, Noah, Moses, Jesus, Muhammad were all messengers & prophets of 1 God. The Quran is the final testament book of God's words only. The Quran proves God exists .Jesus was born without a father. There is no doubt in the evidences of history that Muhammad & Jesus existed & they were prophets of 1 true God Allah.) 21. Had We sent down this Qur'an on a mountain, verily, thou wouldst have seen it humble itself and cleave asunder for fear of Allah. Such are the similitudes which We propound to men, that they may reflect. 22. Allah is He, than Whom there is no other god;- Who knows (all things) both secret and open; He, Most Gracious, Most Merciful. 23 .Allah is He, than Whom there is no other god;- the Sovereign, the Holy One, the Source of Peace (and Perfection), the Guardian of Faith, the Preserver of Safety, the Exalted in Might, the Irresistible, the Supreme: Glory to Allah! (High is He) above the partners they attribute to Him. 24 .He is Allah, the Creator, the Evolver, the Bestower of Forms (or Colours). To Him belong the Most Beautiful Names: whatever is in the heavens and on earth, doth declare His Praises and Glory: and He is the Exalted in Might, the Wise. {Al-Hashr- Al Quran} 1. Praise be to Allah, to Whom belong all things in the heavens and on earth: to Him be Praise in the Hereafter: and He is Full of Wisdom, acquainted with all things. 2. He knows all that goes into the earth, and all that comes out thereof; all that comes down from the**

*sky and all that ascends thereto and He is the Most Merciful, the Oft-Forgiving. 3 .The Unbelievers say, "Never to us will come the Hour": Say, "Nay! but most surely, by my Lord, it will come upon you;- by Him Who knows the unseen,- from Whom is not hidden the least little atom in the heavens or on earth: Nor is there anything less than that, or greater, but is in the Record Perspicuous: 4 .That He may reward those who believe and work deeds of righteousness: for such is Forgiveness and a Sustenance Most Generous." 5 .But those who strive against Our Signs, to frustrate them,- for such will be a Penalty,- a Punishment most humiliating. 6 .And those to whom knowledge has come see that the (Revelation) sent down to thee from thy Lord - that is the Truth, and that it guides to the Path of the Exalted (in might), Worthy of all praise. (Saba 34 Al-Quran)*

**Surah 3. The Family Of 'Imran, The House Of 'Imran(Quran) 1. A. L. M. 2.** Allah. There is no god but He,-the Living, the Self-Subsisting, Eternal. **3.** It is He Who sent down to thee (step by step), in truth, the Book, confirming what went before it; and He sent down the Law (of Moses) and the Gospel (of Jesus) before this, as a guide to mankind, and He sent down the criterion (of judgment between right and wrong). **4.** Then those who reject Faith in the Signs of Allah will suffer the severest penalty, and Allah is Exalted in Might, Lord of Retribution. **5.** From Allah, verily nothing is hidden on earth or in the heavens. **6.** He it is Who shapes you in the wombs as He pleases. There is no god but He, the Exalted in Might, the Wise. **7.** He it is Who has sent down to thee the Book: In it are verses basic or fundamental (of established meaning); they are the foundation of the Book: others are allegorical. But those in whose hearts is perversity follow the part thereof that is allegorical, seeking discord, and searching for its hidden meanings, but no one knows its hidden meanings except Allah. And those who are firmly grounded in knowledge say: "We believe in the Book; the whole of it is from our Lord:" and none will grasp the Message except men of understanding. **8.** "Our Lord!" (they say), "Let not our hearts deviate now after Thou hast guided us, but grant us mercy from Thine own Presence; for Thou art the Grantor of bounties without measure. **9.** "Our Lord! Thou art He that will gather mankind Together against a day about which there is no doubt; for Allah never fails in His promise." **10.** Those who reject Faith,- neither their possessions nor their (numerous) progeny will avail them aught against Allah. They are themselves but fuel for the Fire.

[Surah Baqarah Quran] **284.** To Allah belongeth all that is in the heavens and on earth. Whether ye show what is in your minds or conceal it, Allah Calleth you to account for it. He forgiveth whom He pleaseth, and punisheth whom He pleaseth, for Allah hath power over all things. **285.** The Messenger believeth in what hath been revealed to him from his Lord, as do the men of faith. Each one (of them) believeth in Allah, His angels, His books, and His apostles. "We make no distinction (they say) between one and another of His apostles." And they say: "We hear, and we obey: (We seek) Thy forgiveness, our Lord, and to Thee is the end of all journeys." **286.** On no soul doth Allah Place a burden greater than it can bear. It gets every good that it earns, and it suffers every ill that it earns. (Pray:) "Our Lord! Condemn us not if we forget or fall into error; our Lord! Lay not on us a burden Like that which Thou didst lay on those before us; Our Lord! Lay not on us a burden greater than we have strength to bear. Blot out our sins, and grant us forgiveness. Have mercy on us. Thou art our Protector; Help us against those who stand against faith." **Some references of the information of this book: 1)www.answering-christianity.com 2)www.islamtomorrow.com 3)http://www.irf.net/irf/comparativereligion/index.htm 4) www.peacetv.tv 5)www.whyislam.org 6)www.guideus.tv 7)www.irf.net 8) www.quranandscience.com**

**Allah (swt) Says :** "Invite to the Way of your Lord (i.e. Islam) with wisdom (i.e. with the Divine Revelation and the Qur'an) and fair preaching, and argue with them in a way that is better. Truly, your Lord knows best who has gone astray from His Path, and He is the Best Aware of those who are guided." [Quran 16:125]

**Allah also says** "Who is better in speech than one who calls to Allah, works righteousness, and says: I am of those who bow in submission?" (Quran 41:33)

**Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) said:** "If Allah guides a person through you, it is better for you than all that is on the earth." (Bukhari No. 2783 & Muslim No. 2406). Convey (my teachings) to the people even if it were a single sentence" (Sahih Bukhari, Vol.4, Hadith 667)

"Therefore listen not to the Unbelievers, but strive against them with the utmost strenuousness, with the (Qur'an)". 25.52 Quran Yet do they worship, besides Allah, things that can neither profit them nor harm them: and the disbeliever is a helper (of Evil), against his own Lord! 25.55 Quran And I have sent you only as a giver of good news and as a warner. 25.56 Say: "No reward do I ask of you for it but this: that each one who will may take a (straight) Path to his Allah." 25.57 Al-Quran

"Verily, those who conceal the clear proofs, evidences and the guidance, which We have sent down, after We have made it clear for the people in the Book, they are the ones cursed by Allah and cursed by the cursers."(Quran, al-Baqarah: 159) **Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) said: "For Allah to guide one man through you is better for you than all that the sun has shined over".**  
**The Prophet (PBUH) has said: "Whoever guides [another] to a good deed will get a reward similar to the one who performs it."**  
**[Saheeh Muslim]**

#### What Do Non-Muslims Say About Muhammad?

His complete biography has been authenticated and circulated amongst scholars around the world starting while he was still alive and continuing up until today. One of the first examples we quote from is from the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, as it confirms: *(Regarding Muhammad) "... a mass of detail in the early sources shows that he was an honest and upright man who had gained the respect and loyalty of others who were likewise honest and upright men."*

[Vol. 12]

Another impressive tribute to Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him is in the very well written work of Michael H. Hart, *"The 100: A Ranking of the Most Influential Persons in History."* He states that the most influential person in all history was Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, with Jesus second. Examine his actual words:

*"My choice of Muhammad to lead the list of the world's most influential persons may surprise some readers and may be questioned by others, but he was the only man in history who was supremely successful on both the religious and secular level."*

[Michael H. Hart, *THE 100: A RANKING OF THE MOST INFLUENTIAL PERSONS IN HISTORY*, New York: Hart Publishing Company, Inc., 1978, page. 33.]

According to the Quran, Prophet Muhammad was the most excellent example for all of humanity. Even non-Muslim historians recognize him to be one of the most successful personalities in history. Read what the Reverend R. Bosworth-Smith wrote in "Mohammed & Mohammedanism" in 1946:

*"Head of the state as well as the Church, he was Caesar and Pope in one; but, he was pope without the pope's claims, and Caesar without the legions of Caesar, without a standing army, without a bodyguard, without a palace, without a fixed revenue. If ever any man had the right to say that he ruled by a Right Divine, it was Mohammad, for he had all the power without instruments and without its support. He cared not for dressing of power. The simplicity of his private life was in keeping with his public life."*

While we are reviewing statements from famous non-Muslims about Prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, consider this:

*"Philosopher, orator, apostle, legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, of a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire, that is Muhammad. As regards all standards by which human greatness may be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?"*

[Lamartine, HISTOIRE DE LA TURQUIE, Paris, 1854, Vol. II, pp. 276-277.]

And then we read what George Bernard Shaw, a famous writer and non-Muslim says:

*"He must be called the Savior of Humanity. I believe that if a man like him were to assume the dictatorship of the modern world, he would succeed in solving its problems in a way that would bring it much needed peace and happiness."*

[The Genuine Islam, Singapore, Vol. 1, No. 8, 1936]

Then we found that K. S. Ramakrishna Rao, an Indian (Hindu) professor of Philosophy, in his booklet *"Muhammad the Prophet of Islam"* calls him the "perfect model for human life." Professor Ramakrishna Rao explains his point by saying:

*"The personality of Muhammad, it is most difficult to get into the whole truth of it. Only a glimpse of it I can catch. What a dramatic succession of picturesque scenes. There is Muhammad the Prophet. There is Muhammad the Warrior; Muhammad the Businessman; Muhammad the Statesman; Muhammad the Orator; Muhammad the Reformer; Muhammad the Refuge of Orphans; Muhammad the Protector of Slaves; Muhammad the Emancipator of Women; Muhammad the Judge; Muhammad the Saint. All in all these magnificent roles, in all these departments of human activities, he is alike a hero."*

What should we think about our prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, when someone with the worldly status such as Mahatma Gandhi, speaking on the character of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, says in *'Young India'*:

*"I wanted to know the best of one who holds today undisputed sway over the hearts of millions of mankind... I became more than convinced that it was not the sword that won a place for Islam in those days in the scheme of life. It was the rigid simplicity, the utter self-effacement of the Prophet, the scrupulous regard for his pledges, his intense devotion to his friends and followers, his intrepidity, his fearlessness, his absolute trust in God and in his own mission. These and not the sword carried everything before them and surmounted every obstacle. When I closed the 2nd volume (of the Prophet's biography), I was sorry there was not more for me to read of the great life."*

English author Thomas Carlyle in his *'Heroes and Hero Worship'*, was simply amazed:

*"How one man single handedly, could weld warring tribes and wandering Bedouins into a most powerful and civilized nation in less than two decades."*

And Diwan Chand Sharma wrote in *"The Prophets of the East"*:

*"Muhammad was the soul of kindness, and his influence was felt and never forgotten by those around him"*

[D.C. Sharma, *The Prophets of the East*, Calcutta, 1935, pp. 12]

*Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was nothing more or less than a human being, but he was a man with a noble mission, which was to unite humanity on the worship of ONE and ONLY ONE GOD and to teach them the way to honest and upright living based on the commands of God. He always described himself as, 'A Servant and Messenger of God' and so indeed every action of his proclaimed to be.*

Speaking on the aspect of equality before God in Islam, the famous poetess of India, Sarojini Naidu says:

*"It was the first religion that preached and practiced democracy; for, in the mosque, when the call for prayer is sounded and worshippers are gathered together, the democracy of Islam is embodied five times a day when the peasant and king kneel side by side and proclaim: 'God Alone is Great'... I have been struck over and over again by this indivisible unity of Islam that makes man instinctively a brother."*

[S. Naidu, *Ideals of Islam*, vide *Speeches & Writings*, Madras, 1918, p. 169]

In the words of Professor Hurgonje:

*"The league of nations founded by the prophet of Islam put the principle of international unity and human brotherhood on such universal foundations as to show candle to other nations." He continues, "the fact is that no nation of the world can show a parallel to what Islam has done towards the realization of the idea of the League of Nations."*

Edward Gibbon and Simon Ockley, on the profession of ISLAM, writes in *"History of the Saracen Empires"*:

*"I BELIEVE IN ONE GOD, AND MAHOMET, AN APOSTLE OF GOD' is the simple and invariable profession of Islam. The intellectual image of the Deity has never been degraded by any visible idol; the honor of the Prophet have never transgressed the measure of human virtues; and his living precepts have restrained the gratitude of his 80 disciples within the bounds of reason and religion."*[*History of the Saracen Empires*, London, 1870, p. 54]

EWolfgang Goethe, perhaps the greatest European poet ever, wrote about Prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him. He said:

*"He is a prophet and not a poet and therefore his Koran is to be seen as Divine Law and not as a book of a human being, made for education or entertainment."* [Noten und Abhandlungen zum Weststlichen Dvan, WA I, 7, 32]



# The Muslim Prayer Book (Sunni Book)

## **ZEALOT: Was Aisha the wife of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) only 9 years old on the time of marriage?**

O.K lets discuss this with open mind and logical reasoning...Did Prophet really married Hazrat Aisha (R.A) when she was 9 years old? Also why would a Prophet , that we claim is last messenger and is for all humanity , would do something that is morally wrong in our today's world?

*The Hadith regarding the age of Hazrat Ayesha at the time of marriage, to be 9 is widely held among scholars as a ' Not the Real presentation of facts, quotation out of context,'*

"In the time before Islam, Abu Bakr married two women. The first was Fatila daughter of Abdul Uzza, from whom Abdullah and Asma were born. Then he married Umm Ruman, from whom Abdur Rahman and Aisha were born. These four were born before Islam." [5]

**Being born before Islam means being born before the Call of Islam, before Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) received the message of Islam from Allah through angel Jibreel/Gabriel.**

The life of Hazrat Aisha (Radhiyallahu-Anha) is proof that a woman can be far more learned than men and that she can be the teacher of scholars and experts. Her life is also proof that the same woman can be totally feminine and be a source of pleasure, joy and comfort to her husband, to negate the status of Hazrat Aisha RA by designing a conspiracy against her age, a hadith had been floated after specific alteration to prove the false claim that she was married with Muhammad SAWW (PBUH) around 9 years of age .

**According to the Scholars the hadith reporting Hazrat Aisha's age are "weak". ( chain of specific narrators not verified)**

There is material from both the hadith writers (Sahih and Muslim) and earlier Islamic histories suggesting Aisha must have been much older than nine when married.

1) According to the generally accepted tradition, Aisha was born about 8 years before Hijrah( Migration). However, according to another narrative in Bukhari (Kitaab al-Tafseer) Aisha is reported to have said that at the time Surah Al-Qamar, the 54th chapter of the Qur'an , was revealed, "I was a young girl". The 54th Surah of the Qur'an was revealed nine years before Hijrah. According to this tradition, Aisha had not only been born before the revelation of the referred Surah, but was actually a young girl, not even only an infant at that time.

**So if this age is assumed to be 7 to 14 years then her age at the time of marriage has to be between 14 to 21.**

2) According to almost All the Historians, Asma; the elder sister of Aisha, was 10 years older than Aisha. It is reported in Taqreeb al-Tehzeeb as well as Al-Bidayah wa al-Nihayah that Asma died in the 73rd year after migration of Muhammad when she was 100 years old. Now, obviously if Asma was 100 years old in the 73rd year after Migration to Medina, she should have been 27 or 28 years old at the time of migration. If Asma was 27 or 28 years old at the time of hijrah, Aisha should have been 17 or 18 years old at that time.

**Thus, Aisha – if she got married in 1 AH (after Migration to Medina) or 2 AH – was between 18 to 20 years old at the time of her marriage.**

3) The hadith regarding her age has several aspects. First, the Prophet could not have gone against the Quran to marry a physically and intellectually immature child. Secondly, the age of Hazrat Aisha can be easily calculated from the age of her elder sister Hazrat Asma who was 10 years older than Hazrat Aisha. Waliuddin Muhammad Abdullah Al-Khateeb al Amri Tabrizi the famous author of Mishkath, in his biography of narrators (Asma ur Rijal), writes that Hazrat Asma died in the year 73 Hijri at the age of 100, ten or twelve days after the martyrdom of her son Abdullah Ibn Zubair. It is common knowledge that the Islamic

calendar starts from the year of the Hijrah or the Prophet's migration from Mecca to Medina.

Therefore, by deducting 73, the year of Hazrat Asma's death, from 100, her age at that time, we can easily conclude that she was 27 years old during Hijra.

This puts the age of Hazrat Aisha at 17 during the same period. As all biographers of the Prophet agree that he consummated his marriage with Hazrat Aisha in the year 2 Hijri it can be conclusively said that she was 19 at that time and not 9 as misinterpreted.

"Ever since I can remember (or understand things) my parents were following the religion of Islam." [8]

This is tantamount to saying that she was born sometime before her parents accepted Islam but she can only remember them practising Islam. No doubt she and her parents knew well whether she was born before or after they accepted Islam, as their acceptance of Islam was such a landmark event in their life which took place just after the Holy Prophet received his mission from God. If she had been born after they accepted Islam it would make no sense for her to say that she always remembered them as following Islam. Only if she was born before they accepted Islam, would it make sense for her to say that she can only remember them being Muslims, as she was too young to remember things before their conversion. This is consistent with her being born before the Call, and being perhaps four or five years old at the time of the Call, which was also almost the time when her parents accepted Islam.

Two further evidences cited by Maulana Muhammad Ali

In the footnotes of his Urdu translation and commentary of Sahih Bukhari, entitled Fadl-ul-Bari, Maulana Muhammad Ali had pointed out reports of two events which show that Aisha could not have been born later than the year of the Call. These are as follows.

1. The above mentioned statement by Aisha in Bukhari, about her earliest memory of her parents being that they were followers of Islam, begins with the following words in its version in Bukhari's Kitab-ul-Kafalat. We quote this from the English translation of Bukhari by M. Muhsin Khan:

"Since I reached the age when I could remember things, I have seen my parents worshipping according to the right faith of Islam. Not a single day passed but Allah's Apostle visited us both in the morning and in the evening. When the Muslims were persecuted, Abu Bakr set out for Ethiopia as an emigrant." [9]

Commenting on this report, Maulana Muhammad Ali writes:

"This report sheds some light on the question of the age of Aisha. ... The mention of the persecution of Muslims along with the emigration to Ethiopia clearly shows that this refers to the fifth or the sixth year of the Call. ... At that time Aisha was of an age to discern things, and so her birth could not have been later than the first year of the Call." [10]

Again, this would make her more than fourteen at the time of the consummation of her marriage.

2. There is a report in Sahih Bukhari as follows:

"On the day (of the battle) of Uhud when (some) people retreated and left the Prophet, I saw Aisha daughter of Abu Bakr and Umm Sulaim, with their robes tucked up so that the bangles around their ankles were visible hurrying with their water skins (in another narration it is said, 'carrying the water skins on their backs'). Then they would pour the water in the mouths of the people, and return to fill the water skins again and came back again to pour water in the mouths of the people." [11]

Maulana Muhammad Ali writes in a footnote under this report:

"It should also be noted that Aisha joined the Holy Prophet's household only one year before the battle of Uhud. According to

the common view she would be only ten years of age at this time, which is certainly not a suitable age for the work she did on this occasion. This also shows that she was not so young at this time." [12]

If, as shown in the previous section above, Aisha was 19 at the time of the consummation of her marriage, then she would be twenty years old at the time of the battle of Uhud. It may be added that on the earlier occasion of the battle of Badr when some Muslim youths tried, out of eagerness, to go along with the Muslim army to the field of battle, the Holy Prophet Muhammad sent them back on account of their young age (allowing only one such youngster, Umair ibn Abi Waqqas, to accompany his older brother the famous Companion Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas). It seems, therefore, highly unlikely that if Aisha was ten years old the Holy Prophet would have allowed her to accompany the army to the field of battle.

Some references:

<https://archive.org/details/ProphetMohammadWasNotAPedophileNorHeMarriedA9YearOld>

<http://www.smashwords.com/books/view/464327>

**This book is like a little dictionary. Please share the book and the knowledge of the book. If you read this book please pray for me to Allah to give me the best Jannah/heaven. Thank you and may Allah give you best Jannah/heaven too. Ameen.**

**Sincerely, (Faisal Fahim)**

**BY MR.FAISAL FAHIM**

**A REQUEST FROM FAISAL: IF YOU LIKE THIS BOOK PLEASE SHARE IT AND FEEL FREE TO WRITE AN HONEST REVIEW.THERE IS NO GOD EXCEPT ONE ALLAH ALONE.MAY GOD REWARD YOU FOR A GOOD INTENSION.AMEEN.**

Allah (swt) Says : "Invite to the Way of your Lord (i.e. Islam) with wisdom (i.e. with the Divine Revelation and the Qur'an) and fair preaching, and argue with them in a way that is better. Truly, your Lord knows best who has gone astray from His Path, and He is the Best Aware of those who are guided." [Quran 16:125]

Allah also says "'Who is better in speech than one who calls to Allah, works righteousness, and says: I am of those who bow in submission?'" (Quran 41:33)

Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) said:"If Allah guides a person through you, it is better for you than all that is on the earth." (Bukhari No. 2783 & Muslim No. 2406).Convey (my teachings) to the people even if it were a single sentence" (Sahih Bukhari, Vol.4, Hadith 667)

against them with the utmost strenuousness, with the (Qur'an)" 25.52 Quran

Yet do they worship, besides Allah, things that can neither profit them nor harm them: and the disbeliever is a helper (of Evil), against his own Lord! 25.55 Quran

And I have sent you only as a giver of good news and as a warner. 25.56

Say: "No reward do I ask of you for it but this: that each one who will may take a (straight) Path to his Allah." 25.57 Al-Quran

"Verily, those who conceal the clear proofs, evidences and the guidance, which We have sent down, after We have made it clear for the people in the Book, they are the ones cursed by Allah and cursed by the cursers."(Quran, al-Baqarah: 159) Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) said: "For Allah to guide one man through you is better for you than all that the sun has shined over".

The Prophet (PBUH) has said: "Whoever guides [another] to a good deed will get a reward similar to the one who performs it." [Saheeh Muslim]

**ABOUT FAISAL FAHIM: FAISAL WAS BORN IN BANGLADESH. HE SPENT HIS CHILDHOOD WITH HIS GRANDPARENTS IN BANGLADESH & HE SAW THEM PRAYING 5 TIMES A DAY. HE CAME TO AMERICA AT A YOUNG AGE AND HE IS AN AMERICAN BANGLADESHI MUSLIM.IN AMERICA HE LIVED WITH HIS PARENTS.HE WENT TO SCHOOLS IN NY. HE WENT TO VISIT BANGLADESH IN 2009 & HE SAW SOME VIDEOS OF DR.ZAKIR NAIK ON TV. THE VIDEOS WERE ABOUT SPREADING THE KNOWLEDGE OF ISLAM WITH MUSLIMS AND NONMUSLIMS.HE WAS INSPIRED BY DR.ZAKIR NAIK.HE LOVES ISLAM & BELIEVES ISLAM IS A RELIGION OF PEACE & MERCY.SO HE LIKES TO SPREAD THE MESSAGE OF ISLAM TO NONMUSLIMS AND MUSLIMS.**

**MESSAGE OF FAISAL FAHIM: SPREAD THE RELIGION OF ALLAH. SPREAD THE MESSAGE OF THE PROPHET MUHAMMAD PBUH.SHARE THE KNOWLEDGE OF ISLAM. SINCE IT WAS A DUTY OF THE PROPHET MUHAMMAD (PBUH) TO SPREAD THE MESSAGE OF ISLAM SO MUSLIMS SHOULD ALSO CONTINUE THIS GREATEST SUNNAH & EXPECT THE REWARD FROM ALLAH ONLY.ISLAM IS PEACE, LOVE, MERCY, KIND, HUMBLE, HONEST & THE ONLY FINAL TRUE RELIGION FROM GOD. MAY ALLAH GUIDE US ALL .AMEEN.**

**The most recommended book of MR.FAISAL IS ("The Bible, the Qu'ran and Science: The Holy Scriptures Examined in the Light of Modern Knowledge: 4 books in 1") Authored by Mr. Faisal Fahim, Dr. Maurice Bucaille, Dr. Zakir Naik. AND IT'S AVAILABLE ON AMAZON, [www.barnesandnoble.com](http://www.barnesandnoble.com), [www.createpace.com/4459947](http://www.createpace.com/4459947)**

## INFORMATION ARRANGED AND ORGANIZED BY MR.FAISAL FAHIM.

### **The most important and rewardful Prayers are the 5 times obligatory prayers & the 5 times 5 prayers rewards are equal to 50 prayers and this hadith proofs it:**

Narrated Malik bin Sasaa: The Prophet said, "While I was at the House in a state midway between sleep and wakefulness, (an angel recognized me) as the man lying between two men. A golden tray full of wisdom and belief was brought to me and my body was cut open from the throat to the lower part of the abdomen and then my abdomen was washed with Zam-zam water and (my heart was) filled with wisdom and belief. Al-Buraq, a white animal, smaller than a mule and bigger than a donkey was brought to me and I set out with Gabriel. When I reached the nearest heaven. Gabriel said to the heaven gate-keeper, 'Open the gate.' The gatekeeper asked, 'Who is it?' He said, 'Gabriel.' The gate-keeper asked, 'Who is accompanying you?' Gabriel said, 'Muhammad.' The gate-keeper said, 'Has he been called?' Gabriel said, 'Yes.' Then it was said, 'He is welcomed. What a wonderful visit his is!' Then I met Adam and greeted him and he said, 'You are welcomed O son and a Prophet.' Then we ascended to the second heaven. It was asked, 'Who is it?' Gabriel said, 'Gabriel.' It was said, 'Who is with you?' He said, 'Muhammad' It was asked, 'Has he been sent for?' He said, 'Yes.' It was said, 'He is welcomed. What a wonderful visit his is!" Then I met Jesus and Yahya (John) who said, 'You are welcomed, O brother and a Prophet.' Then we ascended to the third heaven. It was asked, 'Who is it?' Gabriel said, 'Gabriel.' It was asked, 'Who is with you? Gabriel said, 'Muhammad.' It was asked, 'Has he been sent for?' 'Yes,' said Gabriel. 'He is welcomed. What a wonderful visit his is!' - (The Prophet added:). -There I met Joseph and greeted him, and he replied, 'You are welcomed, O brother and a Prophet!' Then we ascended to the 4th heaven and again the same questions and answers were exchanged as in the previous heavens. There I met Idris and greeted him. He said, 'You are welcomed O brother and Prophet.' Then we ascended to the 5th heaven and again the same questions and answers were exchanged as in previous heavens. There I met and greeted Aaron who said, 'You are welcomed O brother and a Prophet'. Then we ascended to the 6th heaven and again the same questions and answers were exchanged as in the previous heavens. There I met and greeted Moses who said, 'You are welcomed O brother and a Prophet.' When I proceeded on, he started weeping and on being asked why he was weeping, he said, 'O Lord! Followers of this youth who was sent after me will enter Paradise in greater number than my followers.' Then we ascended to the seventh heaven and again the same questions and answers were exchanged as in the previous heavens. There I met and greeted Abraham who said, 'You are welcomed O son and a Prophet.' Then I was shown Al-Bait-al-Ma'mur (i.e. Allah's House). I asked Gabriel about it and he said, This is Al Bait-ul-Ma'mur where 70,000 angels perform prayers daily and when they leave they never return to it (but always a fresh batch comes into it daily).' Then I was shown Sidrat-ul-Muntaha (i.e. a tree in the seventh heaven) and I saw its Nabk fruits which resembled the clay jugs of Hajr (i.e. a town in Arabia), and its leaves were like the ears of elephants, and four rivers originated at its root, two of them were apparent and two were hidden. I asked Gabriel about those rivers and he said, 'The two hidden rivers are in Paradise, and the apparent ones are the Nile and the Euphrates.' Then fifty prayers were enjoined on me. I descended till I met Moses who asked me, 'What have you done?' I said, 'Fifty prayers have been enjoined on me.' He said, 'I know the people better than you, because I had the hardest experience to bring Bani Israel to obedience. Your followers cannot put up with such obligation. So, return to your Lord and request Him (to reduce the number of prayers.' I returned and requested Allah (for reduction) and He made it forty. I returned and (met Moses) and had a similar discussion, and then returned again to Allah for reduction and He made it thirty, then twenty, then ten, and then I came to Moses who repeated the same advice. Ultimately Allah reduced it to five. When I came to Moses again, he said, 'What have you done?' I said, 'Allah has made it five only.' He repeated the same advice but I said that I surrendered (to Allah's Final Order)' " Allah's Apostle was addressed by Allah, "I have decreed My obligation and have reduced the burden on My slaves, and I shall reward a single good deed as if it were ten good deeds." - Sahih Al-Bukhari 4:429

Narrated Salim's father: In the life-time of the Prophet(SAW) whosoever saw a dream would narrate it to Allah's Apostle(SAW). I had a wish of seeing a dream to narrate it to Allah's Apostle (p.b.u.h) I was a grown up boy and used to sleep in the Mosque in the life-time of the Prophet. I saw in the dream that two angels caught hold of me and took me to the Fire which was built all round like a built well and had two poles in it and the people in it were known to me. I started saying, "I seek refuge with Allah from the Fire." Then I met another angel who told me not to be afraid. I narrated the dream to Hafsa who told it to Allah's Apostle(SAW). The Prophet(SAW) said, "Abdullah is a good man. I wish he prayed Tahajjud." After that „Abdullah (i.e. Salim's father) used to sleep but a little at night. [Bukhari]

**Volume 1, Book 11, Number 688: Narrated Abu Huraira: The Prophet said, "Martyrs are those who die because of drowning, plague, an abdominal disease, or of being buried alive by a falling building." And then he added, "If the people knew the Reward for the Zuhr prayer in its early time, they would race for it. If they knew the reward for the 'Isha' and the Fajr prayers in congregation, they would join them even if they had to crawl. If they knew the re- ward for the first row, they would draw lots for it." Saheeh bukhari**

### **The Sunnah Prayer Of Fajr**

1) 'A'isha (radiallahu anha) said, "**The Messenger of Allah (salallahu alayhi wa sallam) was not as regular in any supererogatory (nafl) prayer as he was in the two rak'ats before Fajr.**" (Sahih Muslim 1:251)

2) 'A'isha (radiallahu anha) said, **"I did not observe the Messenger of Allah (salallahu alayhi wa sallam) hasten towards any supererogatory (nafl) prayer as fast as he would to perform the two rak'ats before Fajr."** (Sahih Muslim 1:251)

3) 'A'isha (radiallahu anha) reports that the Messenger of Allah (salallahu alayhi wa sallam) said, **"The two (sunnah) rak'ats of Fajr are more superior than the world and everything within it."** (Sahih Muslims 1:251)

4) 'A'isha (radiallahu anha) reports that the Messenger of Allah (salallahu alayhi wa sallam) said regarding the two (sunnah) rak'ats at the break of dawn, **"They are more beloved to me than the entire world."** (Sahih Muslim 1:251)

5) Abu Hurayra (radiallahu anh) narrates that the Messenger of Allah (salallahu alayhi wa sallam) said, **"Do not abandon the sunnah rak'ats of Fajr, even if horses trample over you."** (Sunan Abu Dawud 1:186, Athar al-Sunan 1:224)

Translation: Hadhrat Ka'ab Bin 'Ujrah (May Allah be well pleased with him) told Hadhrat Abdur Rahman Bin Abu Laila: Should I not give you a beautiful gift, which I heard from the Holy Prophet (Sallallahu alaihi wa sallam)? He said: Why not! You give me that gift. Then Hadhrat Ka'ab said: We asked the Holy Prophet (Sallallahu alaihi wa sallam): How should we send Durood on your family? Allah Most High has taught us how to greet them with Salaam. Then the Holy Prophet (Sallallahu alaihi wa sallam) said: Say this: Allahumma Salli 'Ala (Sayyidina) Muhammadin Wa 'Ala Aali (Sayyidina) Muhammadin Kama Sallayta 'Ala (Sayyidina) Ibraheema Wa 'Ala Aali Sayyidina Ibraheema Innaka Hameedum Majeed. Allahumma Barik 'Ala (Sayyidina) Muhammadin Wa 'Ala Aali (Sayyidina) Muhammadin Kama Barakta 'Ala (Sayyidina) Ibraheema Wa 'Ala Aali Sayyidina Ibraheema Innaka Hameedum Majeed. (Sahih Bukhari, Hadith No. 3370)

#### **Hadith No. 1**

Hazrat Abdullah bin Mas'ud (r.a) narrated:

I asked the Messenger of Allah (saaw) "Which practice is most preferred by Allah (swt)?" The Messenger of Allah (saaw) replied "Offering Prayer within the prescribed time". I asked again "what is the next most preferred practice by Allah (swt)?" The Messenger of Allah (saaw) replied "to do good deeds to and for your parents". I asked again "what is the next most preferred practice by Allah (swt)?" The Messenger of Allah (saaw) replied " To struggle in the way of Allah (swt).

(Bukhari and Muslim)

#### **Hadith No. 2**

Hazrat Abu Umaamah (r.a) narrated:

"The Messenger of Allah (saaw) said "When a person stands up for prayer the doors of the Heavens will be opened for him and all the obstructions between Allah (swt) and him will be removed and the hoors (women of paradise) will be there to welcome him. However this will only last until the person praying begins to unnecessarily clear the nose and throat."

(Tabarani)

#### **Hadith No. 3**

Hazrat Abu Dhar (r.a) narrated:

"On one occasion the Messenger of Allah (saaw) went out on a winters day when leaves were falling from the trees. the Messenger of Allah (saaw) grabbed two branches of a tree and said: "Oh Abu Dhar." Abu Dhar answered "I am here Oh Messenger of Allah (saaw)" Then the messenger of Allah (saaw) said "When a person performs his prayer for the sake of Allah (swt), then his sins will fall, like the leaves fall from the branches of a tree"

(Musnad Imam Ahmad)

#### **Hadith No. 4**

Hazrat Abu Hurairah (r.a) narrated:

The Messenger of Allah (saaw) said " the person who has purified himself before attending the mosque to perform prayer, then on his first step towards the mosque, one of his sins will be deleted (from his list of

deeds) and on his second step, he will be elevated to one grade higher. This deletion of sins and elevation to a higher grade will continue in sequence with each consecutive step taken."

#### **Hadith No. 5**

Hazrat Zaid bin Khalid Johani (r.a) narrated:

The Messenger of Allah (saaw) said: "Whoever offers two rakats of prayer and makes no mistakes, then whatever his previous sins, they will be forgiven (minor sins)." (Musnad Imam Ahmad)

#### **Hadith No. 6**

Hazrat Abu Hurairah (r.a) narrated the hadith whereby the Messenger of Allah (saaw):

"Between the five prayers and from one Jummah to another and from one month of Ramadan to another, all the sins committed between each period will be deleted if you avoid the graver sins" (Muslim)

Abdullah ibn Shaqiq said: "I asked Aisha about the prayer of the Prophet and she said, 'He would pray four rakat before zuhr and two after it.'" [Sahih Muslim]

In a hadith recorded by Imam Bukhari, Aisha (radi Allahu anha) said: "The Prophet never left praying four rakat before Zuhr and two rakat before Fajr under any circumstances."

**"O you who believe! When you prepare for prayer, wash your faces, and your hands (and arms) to the elbows; rub your heads (with water); and (wash) your feet to the ankles." (Al-Qur'an 5:6)**

---

*"The key to Paradise is the (stipulated) prayer. And key to prayer is cleanliness." (Ahmed)*

---

*"Purification is half of faith." (Muslim)*

---

*"Taking a bath on Friday is a must for every adult." (Bukhari)*

---

**"And establish regular prayer: for prayer restrains from shameful and unjust deeds; and remembrance of Allah is the greatest (thing in life) without doubt." (Al-Qur'an 29:45) 5:6**

---

**"See you not that it is Allah Whose praises all beings in the heavens and on earth do celebrate, and the birds (of the air) with wings outspread? Each one knows its own (mode of) prayer and praise" (Al-Qur'an 24:41)**

---

*"Pray as you have seen me praying." (Bukhari)*  
(Our intention must always be to perform salah, to the best of our ability as exemplified by the Holy Prophet Muhammad (PBUH).)

---

*"One of the best deeds is to offer salah (prayer) in its early time." (Tirmidhi)*

---

*"The key to Paradise is the (stipulated) prayer. And key to prayer is cleanliness." (Ahmed)*

## **DIRECTION OF KA'BAH FROM VARIOUS CITIES**

### **CHAPTER 1**

#### **'IBADAH (WORSHIP)**

LONDON

NEW YORK

MOSCOW

JIBRALTAR

LAGOS

TOKYO

JAKARTA

SANTIAGO

CAPE TOWN SYDNEY

The word 'Ibadah comes from the Arabic "Abd", which means slave or servant.

Man is a born subject and servant of Allah. When he turns to Allah with humility and devotion, he performs an act of 'Ibadah. 'Ibadah is a means for purifying man's physical and spiritual life. In Islam, every good deed performed to seek the pleasure of Allah is an act of worship.

The obligatory rituals of 'Ibadah are prayers (Salah), fasting (Saum), (Zakah) charity, pilgrimage (Hajj), and struggling in the way of Allah (Jihad). These along with Iman are often called the pillars of Islam. Islam is an integral whole. It covers all aspects of man's life. The pillars unite all human activities, spiritual and material, individual and collective.

The obligatory rituals of 'Ibadah make "faith" (Iman) to play a practical and effective role in the human life. 'Ibadah is therefore something positive. It is the means by which the faithfuls can serve Allah as well as their fellow men.

The Salah, which is the subject of this booklet, is an essential part of 'Ibadah. The Prophet (S.A.W) is reported to have said: **"Salah is the pillar of Islam and whosoever abandons it, demolishes the very pillar of religion".**

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

## CHAPTER 2

### TAHARAH (PURIFICATION)

Before a person can say his prayer, he must be clean and pure. The Qur'an says: **"Truly Allah loves those who turn to Him and those who care for cleanliness"**. Cleanliness of mind, of body, and of clothes is called Taharah or purification. It is only in such a condition of purification that a Muslim may perform the Salah.

Purification of the body is attained by partial or total washing with clean water. The partial wash is known as Al-Wudu or the ablution, and the total wash is called Al-Ghushl or the washing (bath of the whole body).

#### AL--WUDU (ABLUTION)

The process of performing Wudu is as follows:-

Mention the name of Allah by saying

الرَّحْمَنُ الرَّحِيمُ اللَّهُ بِسْمِ

**"BISMILLA HIR RAHMA NIR RAHEEM"**

**In the name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful.**

Wash both hands up to the wrists together three times, ensuring that every part including between the fingers is wetted by water as shown in figures 1, (a) and (b).

Figure 1(a) Figure 1(b)

Taking a handful of water into the mouth, rinse the mouth three times as shown in figure 2.

Snuff water contained in the right palm into the nose and then eject the water with the left hand (thrice) - as shown in figures 3 and 4.

Wash the face, ear to ear, forehead to chin, three times as shown in figures 5, 6 and 7.

Figure 2

Figure 3 Figure 4

Figure 5 Figure 6

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

Figure 7

Figure 9

Figure 8

Figure 10

Figure 11

Wash the right arm thoroughly from the wrist to the elbow three times.

Repeat the same with the left hand - as shown in figures 8 and 9.

Run moistened fingers through the ears, the first finger of each hand going across the outside (once) - as shown in figure 11.

If they are removed, it is necessary to re-wash the feet for Wudu. The

process ends with the recitation of the Kalimatush-Shahadah:

لَهُ شَرِّكَ لَ وَخَدَّهُ اللهُ إِلَ إِلهَ لَا أَنْ أَشْهَدُ  
وَأَعُوذُ بِعَبْدِهِ مُحَمَّدًا وَأَنَّ

**ASH-HADU AL-LA ILAHA ILLALLAHU WAH DAHU**

**LA SHAREEKA LAHU WA-ASH-HADU AN-NA**

**MUHAMMADAN 'ABDUHU-WA-RASULUH**

A fresh performance of Wudu is necessary if one breaks wind, touches genitals, or becomes sexually excited, or pays a visit to the lavatory, or falls asleep lying down, or vomits violently, or incurs a flow of blood from an injury, or a flow of impure fluid.

Wash both feet up to the ankles starting from the right and ensuring that all parts particularly between the toes are wetted - as shown in figure 12. If you had performed complete "Wudu" before putting on your socks, it is not necessary to remove them when you want to repeat the performance of "Wudu". It is enough to wipe over the stockings feet with wet hands. This may be done for a period of one day, (and three days on journey) on the condition that the socks are not removed. Figure 12

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

#### **AL--GHUSL (THE WASHING OR BATH)**

The greater purification, Ghusl, is obligatory when one is defiled as a result of nocturnal emission (or a wet dream), marital intercourse, child birth, or when entering into the fold of Islam.

**The procedure is as follows:-**

Begin with the name of Allah as for Wudu. Wash the hands and the affected parts of the body with water to remove any impurity. Perform Wudu as above. Then wash the whole body three times, using clean water for each wash.

#### **AT--TAYAMMUM(DRY ABLUTION)**

On certain occasions, it may become either impossible (e.g. when water cannot be found or just enough for drinking is available), or it is dangerous because of illness, to use water for Wudu or Ghusl. In such situations, Tayammum (dry ablution) is performed.

**The procedure:-**

Begin with the name of Allah. Strike both palms on sand, or anything containing sand or dust, like a wall or a stone etc. Pass the palms of the hands over the face once. Strike the sand etc., again with the palms. Rub the right hand with the left palm from the wrist to the elbow and similarly for the left hand with the right palm. Finish with the Kalimatush-Shahadah as for Wudu.

#### **DIAGRAM SHOWING**

#### **TIMINGS OF DAILY PRAYERS**

#### **CHAPTER 3**

#### **THE CONDUCT OF SALAH**

In this section, some guidelines for the correct performance of Salah are given.

The most important pre-requisite, Wudu (ablution), is explained in the last chapter. Other important conditions are:-

**noon**

**sunrise sunset**

**midnight**

**MAGHRIB**

**ASR**

**FAJR**

**ISHA**



## **ZUHR**

### **Salah the Muslim prayer**

#### **1. TIME**

Each of the Salah must be offered at or during its proper time. No Salah can be said before its time. There are five obligatory prayers in a day.

**Fajr** - the morning prayer.

**Zuhr** - the early afternoon prayer.

**Asr** - the late afternoon prayer.

**Maghrib** - the sun-set prayer.

**Isha** - the night prayer.

#### **2. DRESS**

Before offering your Salah make sure that you are properly dressed. For men and boys, the dress should be such that it covers their bodies from the navel to the knees at least.

Women are required to cover themselves from head to foot, leaving only the face and hands uncovered. The dress for Salah must be clean and free from all impurities. During the monthly period women are free from obligation of Salah.

#### **3. PLACE**

Wherever a man might be, he can turn towards Allah in Salah and in devotion. The Prophet (S.A.W) has said, "*The (whole of the) earth has been rendered for me a mosque: pure and clean.*" Preferably Salah is to be offered in Jama'at - congregation. Salah is to be offered facing the Qiblah, the Ka'bah in Makkah. (See illustration on page 2)

#### **FARD OR NAFILAH**

Salah is composed of the Fard (obligatory) and the Nafilah (superogatory) prayers.

The Fard Salah are five in a day. Failure to perform any one of them is a blameable sin. The Nafilah includes the Sunnah, which the Prophet (S.A.W.) used to perform regularly before or after each Fard Salah.

#### **PRAYERS IN SPECIAL CIRCUMSTANCES**

When in circumstances where it is not possible to pray, or when on a journey, you are permitted to shorten Salah. Such a shortened prayer is known as Salat-ul-Qasr.

When travelling one may offer two raka'ats in place of four raka'ats in Zuhr, Asr and Isha, but there is no change in the two raka'ats of Fajr and three raka'ats of Maghrib Salah. Besides this concession in Fard Salah, one may leave all the additional Sunnah except the two Sunnah raka'ats of Fajr and the Witr of Isha prayer. In case the stay at any one place during the journey exceeds a fortnight, complete Salah, with all the Fard and Sunnah raka'ats must be offered.

If you are sick, you may offer your Salah in a sitting position or lying in bed, by making signs in place of the physical movements.

In journey, in sickness and in other emergencies, one is allowed to offer two separate Salah jointly. Thus Zuhr and Asr can be said together in the last part of the period of Zuhr. Maghrib and Isha may also be offered similarly towards the end of Maghrib time (when it is almost dark).

#### **THE CALL TO PRAYER -- ADHAN**

To assemble the Muslims for congregational prayer, "Adhan", or the call to prayer is given. The caller (Mu'adhin) stands facing Ka'bah (Qiblah), and raising his hands to his ears calls in a loud voice :-

اَللّٰهُ اَكْبَرُ ۙ اَللّٰهُ اَكْبَرُ

**ALLAHU AKBAR ALLAHU AKBAR**

**Allah is the Greatest Allah is the Greatest**

اَللّٰهُ اَكْبَرُ ۙ اَللّٰهُ اَكْبَرُ

**ALLAHU AKBAR ALLAHU AKBAR**

**Allah is the Greatest Allah is the Greatest**

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

الله إله لا إله إلا الله لا أن أشهد

**ASH-HADU AL-LA ASH-HADU AL-LA  
ILAHA ILLALLAH ILAHA ILLALLAH**

**I bear witness that there is I bear witness that there is  
no deity but Allah no deity but Allah**

الله رسول محمد أن أشهد

**ASH-HADU AN-NA MUHAMMADAR RASULULLAH**

**I bear witness that Muhammad (S.A.W) is the messenger of Allah**

الله رسول محمد أن أشهد

**ASH-HADU AN-NA MUHAMMADAR RASULULLAH**

**I bear witness that Muhammad (S.A.W) is the messenger of Allah**

الصلاة على خير

**HAYYA 'ALAS SALAH HAYYA 'ALAS SALAH**

**Come to prayer Come to prayer**

الفلاح على خير

**HAYYA 'ALAL FALAH HAYYA 'ALAL FALAH**

**Come to success Come to success**

الله أكبر الله أكبر

**ALLAHU AKBAR ALLAHU AKBAR**

**Allah is the Greatest Allah is the Greatest**

الله إله لا

**LA ILAHA ILLALLAH**

**There is no deity but Allah**

In Adhan for Fajr Salah, the following sentence is added after

**HAYYA 'ALAL FALAH:-**

النوم من خير الصلاة

**ASSALATU KHAYRUM MINAN NAUM**

**Salah is better than sleep.**

النوم من خير الصلاة

**ASSALATU KHAYRUM MINAN NAUM**

**Salah is better than sleep.**

The Holy Prophet (S.A.W) has commanded that we should repeat the same words as mu'azzin (but not aloud) and when he says:

**HAYYA 'ALAS-SALAH, HAYYA 'ALAL-FALAH** we should say:

بالله إله قوة ول حول ل

**LA HAULA WA LA QUWWATA ILLA BILLAH**

**There is no might no power but from Allah**

**DU'A AFTER ADHAN**

**On completion of the Adhan, Muslims are recommended to recite:-**

التامة الدعوة هذه رب اللهم

**ALLAHUMMA RABBA HADHI-HID DA'WA-TIT-TAMMATI**

**O Allah! Lord of this complete call**

محمد أت القايّة والصلاة

**WAS-SALATIL QA'E-MATI A'TI MUHAMMADAN**

**and prayer of ours, by the blessing of it give to Muhammad**

الفضيلة والوسيلة

**AL-WASILATA WAL FADILATA**

**his eternal rights of intercession, distinction**

وعذته الذي محموداً مقاماً وإبعثه

**WAB 'ATH-HU MAQAMAM-MAHMUDAN**

**AL LADHI WA 'AT-TAHU**

**and raise him to the highest rank You have promised him.**

**IQAMAH**

After Adhan when the Muslims are assembled at the place of worship, a second call (Iqamah) is recited by one of the group. This signals the start of the congregational Salah. It is similar to Adhan except that it is recited faster but in a lower tone and the following sentences are recited after HAYYA 'ALAL FALAH:

الصلاة قامت قد الصلاة قامت قد

**QAD QAMATIS SALAH QAD QAMATIS SALAH**

**The prayer has begun The prayer has begun**  
**Narrated Anas bin Malik (RAA): Allah's**  
**Messenger (PBUH) said, "SUPPLICATION MADE BETWEEN**  
**THE ADHAN AND IQAMA IS NOT REJECTED" (An-Nasa'i)**

#### **CHAPTER 4**

#### **THE CONTENTS OF SALAH**

Salah in Islam is a unique institution. It brings man closer to Allah by harmonising his mental attitude with physical posture. In Salah, a Muslim submits himself completely to his Creator.

When you are sure that you have fulfilled all necessary conditions for Salah, you are ready to offer Salah. A detailed account of how to say Salah is given below:-

Say to yourself that you intend to offer this Salah (Fajr, Zuhr, 'Asr, Maghrib or 'Isha) Fard or Sunnah. Then raise your hands to your ears (as in figure 1) saying:-

اَللّٰهُ اَكْبَرُ

**ALLAHU AKBAR**  
**Allah is the Greatest**

**NOTE:-**

**The hand is in line**  
**with ear lobe**

Figure 1 Figure 2

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

Figure 3 Figure 4

Now placing your right hand on the left, just below, above or on the navel (as shown in figure 3 & 4) recite the following:-

وَبِحَمْدِكَ اَللّٰهُمَّ سُبْحَانَكَ

**SUBHANA-KALLA HUMMA WA BI-HAMDIKA**

O Allah, Glorified, Praiseworthy.

جَدُّكَ وَتَعَالَى اسْمُكَ وَتَبَارَكَ

**WA TABARAKAS-MUKA WA TA'ALA JADDUKA**

and Blessed is Your Name and Exalted Your Majesty

غَيْرُكَ اِلٰهٌ وَّلَا

**WA-LA ILAHA GHAIIRUKA**

and there is no deity worthy of worship except You.

الرَّجِيْمِ الشَّيْطَانِ مِنْ يَدِ اللّٰهِ اَعُوْذُ

**A'U-DHU BIL-LA-HI MINASH SHAITANIR RAJEEM**

I seek refuge in Allah from the rejected Satan

الرَّجِيْمِ الرَّحْمٰنِ اللّٰهُ بِسْمِ

**BISMILLA HIR RAHMA NIR RAHEEM**

In the Name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful.

After this recite the opening Surah Al-Fatihah:-

اَللّٰهُمَّ اِنَّا نَسْتَعِيْذُ بِكَ

**ALHAMDU LIL-LAHI RAB-BIL 'ALAMEEN**

Praise be to Allah the Cherisher and Sustainer of the Worlds;

الرَّجِيْمِ الرَّحْمٰنِ

**AR-RAHMA-NIR RAHEEM**

Most Gracious, Most Merciful;

اَلدَّيْنِ يَوْمَ مَالِكِ

**MALIKI YAU-MID-DEEN**

Master of the Day of Judgement.

نَسْتَعِيْذُ بِكَ وَ اِيَّاكَ نَعْبُدُ اِيَّاكَ

**IYYA-KA N'ABUDU WA-IYYKA NASTA'EEN**

You do we worship, and Your aid we seek,

اَلْمُسْتَقِيْمِ الصِّرَاطِ اِهْدِنَا

**IHDI-NAS-SIRA-TAL MUSTAQEEM**

Show us the straight way,

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

عَلَيْهِمْ أَنْعَمْتَ الَّذِينَ صَوَّطَ

**SIRA TAL-LADHINA AN-'AMTA 'ALAIHIM**

The way of those on whom You have bestowed Your Grace,

عَلَيْهِمُ الْمَغْضُوبِ غِي

**GHAIRIL MAGHDUBI 'ALAIHIM**

those whose (portion) is not wrath,

{أَمْ يَنْصَلِّيُونَ وَلَا

**WALAD-DAL-LIN (AMEEN)**

and who go not astray. (O' Allah accept our prayer)

Now recite the following or any other passage from the Holy Qur'an:-

الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحْمَنِ اللَّهُ بِسْمِ

**BISMILLA HIR RAHMANIR RAHEEM**

In the Name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful

أَخَذَ اللَّهُ هُوَ قُلْ

**QUL HU-WAL-LAHU AHAD**

Say: He is Allah the One and Only;

الصَّمَدُ اللَّهُ

**ALLA-HUS-SAMAD**

Allah, the Eternal, Absolute;

يُولَدُ وَلَمْ يَلِدْ لَمْ

**LAM YALID WA LAM YULAD**

He begets not, nor is He begotten

أَخَذَ كُفْرًا أَلَهُ يَكُنْ وَلَمْ

**WA LAM YAKUL-LAHU KUFU-WAN AHAD**

and there is none like unto Him.

Now bow down saying:

أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ

**ALLAHU AKBAR**

Allah is the Greatest

Place your hands on your knees and in this inclined position (Ruku' as shown in figure 5 & 5A) recite these words three times:-

الْعَظِيمِ رَبِّي سُبْحَانَ

**SUBHANA RAB-BI-YAL AZEEM**

Glory be to my Lord the Great

الْعَظِيمِ رَبِّي سُبْحَانَ

**SUBHANA RAB-BI-YAL AZEEM**

Glory be to my Lord the Great

الْعَظِيمِ رَبِّي سُبْحَانَ

**SUBHANA RAB-BI-YAL AZEEM**

Glory be to my Lord the Great

Figure 5 Figure 5A

Salah the Muslim prayer

Figure 6 Figure 7

Then come to the standing position (figure 6 & 7) saying :-

حَمِيدٌ لِمَنْ اللَّهُ سَمِعَ

**SAMI 'ALLAHU LI MAN HAMIDAH**

Allah has heard all who praise Him.

الْحَمْدُ لَكَ رَبَّنَا

**RAB-BANA IAKAL HAMD**

Our Lord: Praise be to you

Now saying "Allahu Akbar" prostrate on the ground with your forehead, the knees, the nose and palms of both hands touching the ground. In this position (Sajdah - as in figure 8 & 9) repeat these words three times at least:-

الأَعْلَى رَبِّي سُبْحَانَ

**SUBHANA RAB-BI-YAL A'ALA**

Glory to my Lord, the Most High.

الأَعْلَى رَبِّي سُبْحَانَ

**SUBHANA RAB-BI-YAL A'ALA**

**Glory to my Lord, the Most High.**

الأَعْلَى رَبِّيَ سُبْحَانَ

**SUBHANA RAB-BI-YAL A'ALA**

**Glory to my Lord, the Most High.**

**NOTE:- Your nose & forehead**

**must be in line with the carpet.**

Sit upright with knees still on the ground after a moments rest perform the second Sajdah saying:-

أَكْبَرُ اللهُ

**ALLAHU AKBAR**

**Allah is the Greatest**

Figure 8

Figure 9

In the second Sajdah as before recite the following words three times:-

الأَعْلَى رَبِّيَ سُبْحَانَ

**SUBHANA RAB-BI-YAL A'ALA**

**Glory to my Lord, the Most High.**

Sit upright saying Allahu Akbar. This completes one raka'at of Salah.

The second rak'at is said in the same way except that after the second Sajdah you sit back, with the left foot bent towards the right, which should be placed vertical to the mat with the toes touching the mat. The palms should be lifted from the mat and placed on the knees.

In this position (Q'adah - as shown in figures 10 and 11 silently say these words (Tashahhud):-

Figure 10 Figure 11

وَالطَّيِّبَاتُ وَالصَّلَاةُ بِهِ التَّجِيَّاتُ

**AT-TAHI-YATU LIL-LAHI WAS-SALAWATU**

**WAT-TAY-YIBATU**

**All prayers and worship through words, action and sanctity are for Allah only.**

النَّبِيُّ أَيُّهَا عَلَيْنِكَ السَّلَامُ

**AS-SALAMU 'ALAIKA AY-YUHAN-NABIY-YU**

**Peace be on you, O Prophet.**

بَرَكَاتُهُ وَاللهُ وَرَحْمَةٌ

**WA RAHMATUL-LAHI WA BARAKATUH**

**and Mercy of Allah and His blessings.**

الصَّالِحِينَ اللهُ عِبَادٌ وَعَلَى عَلَيْنَا السَّلَامُ

**AS-SALAMU 'ALAINA WA 'ALA 'IBADIL-LAHIS-SALIHEEN**

**Peace be on us and those who are righteous servants of Allah.**

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

اللهِ إِلاَّ إِلَهَ لَأَنْ أَشْهَدُ

**ASH-SHADU AL-LA ILAHA**

**IL-LAL-LAHU**

**I bear witness to the fact that**

**there is no diety but Allah.**

وَرَسُولُهُ عِنْدَهُ مُحَمَّدٌ أَنَّنَّ وَأَشْهَدُ

**WA ASH-HADU AN-NA MUHAMMADAN 'ABDUHU WA**

**RASULUH**

**I bear witness that Muhammad is His slave and messenger.**

**In a three raka'at (i.e. Maghrib) or four raka'at ( like Zuhr, 'Asr and 'Isha)**

**Salah you stand up for the remaining raka'at after Tashahhud. On the other hand if it is a two rak'at (Fajr) Salah, keep sitting and after this recite Darud (blessing for the Prophet) in these words:-**

مُحَمَّدٍ آلَ عَلٍ وَ مُحَمَّدٍ عَلَ صَلَّ اللَّهُمَّ

**AL-LAHUM-MA SAL-LI 'ALA MUHAMMADIN**

**WA 'ALA ALI MUHAMMADIN**

**O Allah, exalt Muhammad and the followers of Muhammad.**

إِبْرَاهِيمَ آلَ وَعَلَى إِبْرَاهِيمَ عَلَ صَلَّيْتَ كَمْ

**KAMA SAL-LAITA ‘ALA IBRAHIMA WA ‘ALA ALI IBRAHIMA**  
**As You did exalt Ibrahim and his followers**

مَجِيدٌ حَمِيدٌ كَرِيمٌ

**IN-NAKA HAMIDUM-MAJEED**

**You are the Praised, the Glorious**

مُحَمَّدٌ عَلِ بَارِكُ اللَّهُمَّ

**AL-LAHUM-MA BARIK ‘ALA MUHAMMADIN**

**O Allah, bless Muhammad**

مُحَمَّدٍ آلِ عَلٍ وَ

**WA ‘ALA ALI MUHAMMADIN**

**and his followers**

إِبْرَاهِيمَ آلِ وَعَلِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ عَلِ بَارَكْتَ كَمْ

**KAMA BARAKTA ‘ALA IBRAHIMA WA ‘ALA ALI IBRAHIMA**

**as You have blest Ibrahim and his followers.**

مَجِيدٌ حَمِيدٌ إِنَّكَ

**IN-NAKA HAMIDUM-MAJEED**

**You are the Praised, the Glorious**

And continue silently:-

ذُرِّيَّتِي وَمِنَ الصَّلَاةِ مُقِيمٌ اجْعَلْنِي رَبِّ

**RAB-BIJ-‘ALNI MUQEIMAS-SALATI WA MIN DHUR-RIY-YATI**

**O Lord! Make me and my children steadfast in Prayer;**

لَا أَغْفِرُ رَبَّنَا دُعَا وَتَقَبَّلْ رَبَّنَا

**RAB-BANA WA TAQAB-BAL DU’A. RABBA-NAGH-FIRLI**

**Our Lord! Accept my prayer. Our Lord! forgive me.**

الْحَسَابِ يَوْمَ يَوْمِ يَوْمِ وَلِلْمُؤْمِنِينَ وَلِوَالِدَيْ

**WA-LI WALIDAY-YA WA LIL-MU’MININA YAUMA**

**YAQUM-UL HISAB**

**and my parents and believers on the Day of Judgement.**

Now turn your face to the right (as in figure 13 on next page) saying:-

اللَّهُ وَرَحْمَةً عَلَيْكُمْ السَّلَامُ

**AS-SALAMU ‘ALAIKUM WA-RAHMATUL-LAH**

**Peace be on you and Allah’s blessings.**

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

Then turn your face to the left (as in figure 14) and repeat the above words (aloud).

This completes your two raka’at Salah. The four raka’at of Zuhr, ‘Asr and

‘Isha and the three raka’at of Maghrib are said in an identical manner.

If you are performing a three raka’at (like Maghrib) or four raka’at (like

Zuhr, ‘Asr and ‘Isha) Salah stand up after Tashahhud in the second

Rak’ah saying ALLAHU AKBAR and recite Al-Fatihah. When you

are offering Fard Salah do not recite any additional passage from the

Holy Qur’an after Al-Fatihah in the last two raka’at. After the second

Sajdah in the fourth raka’at say the Tashahhud, Darud and end with

“AS-SALAMU ‘ALAIKUM WA-RAHMATUL-LAH” to each side

(first right, then left as shown in the above pictures). This marks the

end of Salah.

Figure 13 Figure 14

## CHAPTER 5

### SUNNAH AND NAFILAH

#### OR ADDITIONAL PRAYER

As you can see in the chart below, each Salah is composed of (a) Fard, the prescribed prayers, (b) Sunnah and (c) Nafilah or additional prayers.

Sunnah prayers are recommended by the Prophet. They are of two types;

Sunnah Mu’akkadah & Sunnah Ghair Mu’akkadah. Sunnah Mu’akkadah

are highly recommended and should not be missed without a good reason

Sunnah Ghair Mu’akkadah, are recommended, however they can be

prayed occasionally or missed.

Nafilah prayers are optional. It is very rewarding to offer them if one

has the time. The sequence of these additional prayers in each Salah

is given below:-

\* These Sunnah are Ghair Mu'akkadah

Name of

Salah Period

Fajr 2 2 None

Zuhr 4 4 2 + 2

Asr 4 4\* None

Maghrib 3 None 2 + 2

'Isha 4 4\* 2 + 2

+3 + 2

Sunnah or Nafilah

Number

of Fard

Raka'at

Before

Fard

Between Dawn until

Sunrise

Between just past noon  
and mid-afternoon

Between mid afternoon  
until before sunset

Between just after  
sunset until dark

Between dark and  
shortly before dawn

After

Fard

Salah the Muslim prayer

#### SALAT--UL--WITR

The three raka'at prayers said after the Fard and Sunnah of the 'Isha is called Salat-ul-Witr. It is strongly recommended in the practice of the Holy Prophet (peace be upon him) and is Wajib (necessary) according to one section of Muslims. Others regard it a mere Sunnah Salah.

The first two raka'at of this Salat-ul-Witr are said like the first two raka'at of the Maghrib prayers. In the third raka'at after al-Fatihah, recite some additional Surah or verses of the Qur'an.

Then, saying ALLAHU AKBAR raise your hands above your shoulders, fold your hands, and recite the following or any other similar Du'a silently. This is called Du'a-al-Qunut or the prayer of submission:-

وَسْتَغْفِرُكَ نَسْتَعِينُكَ إِنَّا اللَّهُمَّ

ALLAHUM-MA IN-NA NASTA'EENUKA

WA NAS TAGH FIRU KA

O Allah, we seek Your help, and ask Your forgiveness

عَلَيْكَ نَتَوَكَّلُ وَ بِكَ وَنُؤْمِنُ

WA NU'MINU BIKA WA NATAWAK-KALU 'ALAIKA

and believe in You and trust in You,

وَنُشْكُرُكَ الْخَيْرِ عَلَيْكَ وَنُثْنِي

WA NUTHNI 'ALAIKAL-KHAIRA WA NASHKURUKA

and we praise You in the best manner and we thank You,

وَنَتَّكُفُّكَ وَنَخْلَعُ نَكْفُوكَ وَلِ

WALA NAKFURUKA WA NAKHLA'U WA NATRUKU

and we are not ungrateful and we cast off and forsake him

نَعْبُدُ إِيَّاكَ اللَّهُمَّ يَجُزُّكَ مَنْ

MAYN-YAF JURUKA 'ALLAHUM-MA IY-YAKA N'ABUDU

who disobeys You. O Allah, You alone do we worship,

نَسْعَى وَإِلَيْكَ وَنَسْجُدُ نَصَلَّ وَلَكَ

WA LAKA NUSALLI WA NASJUDU WA ILAIKA NAS'A

and to You we pray, and before You do we prostrate,

to You do we turn to in haste

عَدَابِكَ وَنَحْنُ رَحْمَتِكَ وَنَرْجُو وَنُحْفِدُ

**WA NAHFIDU WA NARJU RAHMATAKA WA  
NAKSHHA ADHABAKA**

**and we submit, and hope for Your mercy,  
and we fear Your punishment**

مُلَجِّقٌ بِالْكَفَّارِ عَذَابِكَ إِنَّ

**IN-NA 'ADHABAKA BIL-KUF-FARI MULHIQ**

**Your punishment surely overtakes the unbelievers**

After this saying ALLAHU AKBAR bow down in Ruk'u and then complete the rest of the prayers like the Maghrib prayers.

**PERSONAL PRAYER (DU'A) AFTER  
SALAH**

When you have completed your Fard or Sunnah prayers, you may pray to Allah in your own words offering him praise, thanksgiving or asking him for forgiveness for yourself, other Muslims, your own dear and near ones. For this Du'a keep sitting after the obligatory or Sunnah prayers, hold up your hands near each other with the palms up and fingers slightly bent (as shown in figure 15). In this position you may offer anyone of these or other personal prayers:-  
Figure 20

السَّلَامُ وَمِنْكَ السَّلَامُ أَنْتَ اللَّهُمَّ

**ALLAHUM-MA ANTAS-SALAMU WA MINKAS-SALAM**

**O Allah, You are the Author of Peace and from You comes Peace.**

وَالْإِكْرَامِ الْجَلِيلِ يَا تَبَارَكْتَ

**TABARAKTA YA-DHALJALALI WAL-IKRAM**

**Blessed are You, O Lord of Majesty and Honour.**

وَلَسْنَا بِأَعْدَائِكَ وَلَوْلَا الَّذِي لَوْ اغْفِرُ اللَّهُمَّ

**ALLAHUM-MAGHFIRLI WA LIWALIDAYYA**

**WA LI-ASATI-DHATI**

**O Allah, forgive me and my parents and teachers,**

وَالْمُسْلِمَاتِ وَالْمُسْلِمِينَ وَالْمُؤْمِنَاتِ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ وَلِجَمِيعِ

**WA LIJAMEE'IL MU'MINEENA WAL-MU'MINATI WAL**

**MUSLIMEENA WAL MUSLIMAT**

**and all the believing men and women and obedient men**

**and women with Your mercy.**

الرَّاحِمِينَ أَرْحَمَ يَا بَرَحْمَتَكَ

**BIRAHMATIKA YA ARHAMAR-RAHIMEEN**

**O Most Merciful of (all) those who show mercy.**

**CHAPTER 6**

**SALAH ON SPECIFIC OCCASIONS**

**JUMU'AH PRAYER (Friday)**

Beside the daily Salah, the Friday prayer is also obligatory upon Muslim men. For Muslim women it is not obligatory, but is desirable if they are able to do so without upsetting their household work.

The Friday Salah is offered in congregation on Friday at Zuhr time. First the Imam delivers a sermon (Khutbah). Then he leads the congregation in a two rak'at Salah. After this two or more raka'at of Sunnah or Nafilah prayers are offered individually.

**TARAWEEH PRAYER ((Ramadan))**

These prayers are offered during the month of Ramadan after 'Isha Salah. These consist of eight, twelve or twenty raka'at, and are offered two by two with a short rest between every four raka'at. They may be said alone but collective prayers are recommended. These are additional Sunnah prayers.

**THE EID PRAYER (Salatul--'Idayan)**

There are two Eid or occasions of great festivity for Muslims. The first is called Eidul-Fitr or the festival of fast breaking. It is celebrated on the first day of the tenth Islamic month (Shawwal) following Ramadan,



**the month of fasting. It marks great thanksgiving for the Muslims all over the world.**

**The second Eid is the Eidul-Adha or the festival of great sacrifice, which is observed on the tenth of Dhul-Hijjah, the last Islamic month. The animals are sacrificed to celebrate the great sacrifice of the Prophet Ibrahim (peace be upon him).**

On both these Eids, Eid prayers are offered in congregation any time after sunrise and before noon. There is no Adhan (call for prayer) or Iqamah  
**Salah the Muslim prayer**

(second call before congregation). The Eid prayer consists of two raka'at (offered just as the two raka'at of Jumu'ah prayer are said) with six to sixteen additional Takbirs' (ALLAHU AKBAR). You say three or more Takbirs in the first raka'at after 'Thana and three or more Takbirs' in the second raka'at before you bow down for Ruku'.

A sermon (Khutbah) is delivered by the Imam (leader of the prayer) after the two raka'at Eid prayer unlike the Jumu'ah prayer when it precedes the prayer.

The presence of all Muslims, women and children included is strongly recommended.

#### **FUNERAL PRAYERS (JANAZAH)**

**It is a prayer to Allah for a deceased Muslim, and is a common obligation on Muslims of the locality. The funeral Salah is offered in congregation but unlike other formal prayers, it has neither any Ruku' (bowing) nor any Sajdah (prostration). Following is the complete sequence of the funeral prayer.**

**Saying Takbir (Allahu Akbar) with the rest of the congregation raise your hands to your ears, then bring them down on, above or below the navel as in formal prayers with the right hand on the left. Then recite the following praise or Thana silently:-**

وَبِحَمْدِكَ اللَّهُمَّ سُبْحَانَكَ

**SUBHANA-KALLA HUMMA WA BI-HAMDIKA**

**O Allah, Glorified, Praiseworthy.**

جَدُّكَ وَتَعَالَى اسْمُكَ وَتَبَارَكَ

**WA TABARAKAS-MUKA WA TA'ALA JADDUKA**

**and Blessed is Your Name and Exalted Your Majesty**

غَيْبُكَ إِلَهٌ وَلَ

**WA-LA ILAHA GHAIKUK**

**and there is no deity worthy of worship except You.**

**After Thana (SUBHANAKA....) again raise hands to your ears saying Allahu Akbar. Now silently recite the Darud:-**

مُحَمَّدٌ عَلَى صَلَاتِ اللَّهِ

**AL-LAHUM-MA SAL-LI 'ALA MUHAMMADIN**

**O Allah, exalt Muhammad**

مُحَمَّدٍ آلٍ وَعَلَى

**WA 'ALA ALI MUHAMMADIN**

**and the followers of Muhammad.**

إِبْرَاهِيمَ عَلَى صَلَاتِكَ كَمَا

**KAMA SAL-LAITA 'ALA IBRAHEEMA**

**As You did exalt Ibrahim**

إِبْرَاهِيمَ آلٍ وَعَلَى

**WA 'ALA ALI IBRAHEEMA**

**and the followers of Ibrahim**

مَجِيدٌ حَمِيدٌ إِنَّكَ

**IN-NAKA HAMEEDUM-MAJEED**

**You are the Praised, the Glorious**

مُحَمَّدٍ عَلَى بَارِكِ اللَّهِ

**AL-LAHUM-MA BARIK 'ALA MUHAMMADIN**

**O Allah, bless Muhammad**

مُحَمَّدٍ آلٍ وَعَلَى

**WA 'ALA A'ALI MUHAMMADIN**

**and his followers**

إِبْرَاهِيمَ عَلَ بَارَكْتَ كَمْ

**KAMA BARAKTA 'ALA IBRAHEEMA**

**as You have blest Ibrahim**

إِبْرَاهِيمَ آلَ وَعَل

**WA 'ALA A'ALI IBRAHEEMA**

**and the followers of Ibrahim**

مُجِيدٌ حَمِيدٌ إِنَّكَ

**IN-NAKA HAMEEDUM-MAJEED**

**You are the Praised, the Glorious**

**Now saying ALLAHU AKBAR recite the following:-**

وَمَمِّتِنَا لِحَيَاتِنَا اغْفِرُ اللَّهُمَّ

**ALLAHUM-MAGHFIR LI-HAYYINA WA MAMYITINA**

**O Allah forgive our living and our dead**

وَوَغَائِبِنَا وَشَاهِدِنَا

**WA SHAHIDINA WA GHA'IBINA**

**the present and the absent.**

وَكِبْيُنَا وَصَغِيرِنَا

**WA SAGHIRINA WA KABIRINA**

**our young and the old,**

وَأُنثَانَا وَذَكَرِنَا

**WA DHAKARINA WA UNTHANA**

**and the males and females.**

الْإِسْلَامَ عَلَ فَاحْبِبِهِ مِنَّا أَحْبَبْتَهُ مِنَّا اللَّهُمَّ

**ALLAHUM-MA MAN AHYAYTAHU MIN-NA**

**FA-AHYIHI 'ALAL ISLAM**

**O Allah, be to whom You accord life among us cause him**

**to live in the observance of Islam**

الْإِيمَانَ عَلَ فَتَوَفَّهُ مِنَّا تَوَفَّيْتَهُ وَمَنْ

**WAMAN TAWAF-FAITAHU MIN-NA**

**FATAWAF-FAHU 'ALAL IMAN**

**and be to whom You give death, cause him to die**

**in the state of Iman (faith).**

أَجْرَهُ تَحْرِمْنَا لَكَ اللَّهُمَّ

**ALLAHUMMA LA TAHRIMNA AJRAHU**

**O Allah! do not deprive us of reward for**

**(supplicating for) him or her,**

بَعْدَهُ تَقْبَلْنَا وَلَ

**WA LA TAFTINNA BA'DAHU**

**nor put us to trial after him (or her)**

**If the deceased is a minor a boy or a girl then recite this Du'a:-**

فَرِّطًا لَنَا اجْعَلْهُ اللَّهُمَّ

**ALLAHUM-MA J'ALHU LANA FARATAN**

**O Allah, Make him our fore-runner,**

**Salah the Muslim prayer**

نُحْرًا وَ أَجْرًا لَنَا وَاجْعَلْهُ

**WA J'ALHU LANA AJRAWN WA DHUKHRAWN**

**and make him for us a reward and a treasure,**

وَمُسْتَفْعًا شَافِعًا لَنَا وَاجْعَلْهُ

**WA J'ALHULANA SHAFI'AWN WA MUSHAF-FI'AN**

**and make him for us a pleader, and accept his pleading.**

أَكْبَرُ اللهُ

**ALLAHU AKBAR**

**Allah is the Greatest**

After this the Imam again says aloud "Allahu Akbar". The congregation repeats these words silently. Then the Imam and the congregation turn their faces first to the right and then to the left side saying As-salamu-Alaikum Wa-Rahmatullah on either side.

الله وَرَحْمَةُ عَلَيْهِمُ السَّلَامُ

AS-SALAMU ‘ALAIKUM WA RAHMATUL-LAH

Peace be on you and Allah’s blessings.

Narrated Abu Huraira (RAA)

The Prophet (PBUH) said:-

“WHEN YOU PRAY ON THE DEAD,  
MAKE A SINCERE SUPPLICATION  
FOR HIM.”

(Abu Dau’d)

THE LAST TWO SURAHS FROM THE QUR’AN

Surah Falaq: 113

بِسْمِ  
الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ  
إِذَا وَقَبْتِ غَاسِقٍ شَيْءٍ ۖ وَمِنْ  
خَلْقِ مَا شِئْ ۖ مِنْ  
الْفَلَقِ بِرَبِّ أَعُوذُ ۗ كُلُّ  
إِذَا حَسَدَ حَاسِدٍ شَيْءٍ ۖ وَمِنْ  
العُقَدِ مِنَ النَّفَّاثَاتِ شَيْءٍ ۖ وَمِنْ

“QUL A’UZUBI RAB-BIL FALAQ. MIN SHAR-RIMA KHALAQ.  
WA MIN SHAR-RI GHASIQIN IZA WAQAB. WA MIN SHAR-RIN  
NAFFATHATI FIL ‘UQAD. WA MIN SHAR-RI HASIDIN I ZA HASAD.”

“Say: I seek refuge in the Lord of the dawn, from the evil of all that He has  
created, and from the evil of the darkness of night when it falls.

And from the evil of those (charmers) who blow into knots.

And from the evil of the envier when he envies.”

Surah Nas: 114

رَجِيمٍ إِلَى الرَّحْمَنِ  
بِسْمِ  
الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ  
الْحَنَّاسِ الْوَسْوَاسِ شَيْءٍ ۖ مِنْ  
النَّاسِ إِلَيْهِ  
النَّاسِ مَلِكِ  
النَّاسِ بِرَبِّ أَعُوذُ ۗ كُلُّ  
وَالنَّاسِ الْجِنَّةِ مِنْ  
النَّاسِ صُدُورِ فِ يَوْسُوسِ الَّذِي

“QUL A’UZUBI RAB-BIN NAS MALIKIN NAS. ILA HIN-NAS. MIN  
SHAR-RIL WASWA SIL KHAN-NAS. ALLAZI YUWASWISU FEE  
SUDU RIN-NAS. MINAL JIN-NATI WAN-NAS.”

“Say: I seek refuge in the Sustainer of Mankind, the Owner of Mankind,  
Lord of Mankind. From the evil of the sneaking whisperer. Who whispers  
in the hearts of mankind. (Whether he be) from among jinns or mankind.”

#### Amounts of Rakah for each prayer

Fajr:

- i) First two rakat Sunnat Mokadda
- ii) Two rakat Fard

Zuhr:

- i) Four rakat Sunnat Mokadda
- ii) Four rakat Fard
- iii) Two rakat sunnat Mokadda
- iv) Two rakat Nafil (Optional but spiritually beneficial)

Asr:

- i) Four rakat sunnat ghair mokadda (Optional but spiritually beneficial)
- ii) Four rakat Fard

Maghrib

- i) Three rakat Fard
- ii) Two rakat Sunnat Mokadda
- iii) Two rakat nafil (Optional but spiritually beneficial)

Isha:

- i) Four rakat sunnat e Ghair Mokadda (Optional but spiritually beneficial)
- ii) Four rakat Fard
- iii) Two Rakat Sunnat Mokadda
- iv) Two rakat Nafil (Optional but spiritually beneficial)
- v) Three rakat Wajib
- vi) Two rakat Nafil (Optional but spiritually beneficial)

Must be with Wudu for all Salahs.

Salatul Ishraq : Saaiduna Anas Bin Malik Radiallahu Anhu narrates that the Prophet of Allah Sallallahu Alahi Wasalam said “Whosoever offers his fajr prayer in congregation, then remains seated making zikr of Allah until the sun rises and

**thereafter offers two rakats, they will receive the reward of performing a Hajj and Umrah". (Sunan Tirmizi)**

#### **The Salah of the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him)**

Hadrat Mughira (may Allah be pleased with him) said that the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) prayed for so long in the night in standing posture that his feet got swollen up. His companions said to him, "O Prophet of Allah! Why do you exert so much when Allah (The Glorified and the Exalted) has forgiven you all sins." The Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) replied, "Should I not be a grateful servant of Allah?" (Bukhari, Muslim)

#### **Adhan and Iqama**

Narrated Hadrat Anas (may Allah be pleased with him): The people mentioned the fire and the bell (they suggested those as signals to indicate the starting of prayers), and by that they mentioned the Jews and the Christians. Then Bilal (may Allah be pleased with him) was ordered to pronounce the Adhan for the prayer by saying its wordings twice, and for the Iqama (the call for actual standing for the prayers in rows) by saying its wordings once (except for Qad - Qamatis-Salat which should be said twice). (Bukhari)

#### **First Questioning will be about Salah**

On the authority of Hadrat Abu Huraira (may Allah be pleased with him), who said that Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said:

The first of his actions for which a servant of Allah (The Glorified and the Exalted) will be held accountable on the Day of Resurrection will be his prayers. If they are in order, then he will have prospered and succeeded; and if they are wanting, then he will have failed and lost. If there is something defective in his obligatory prayers, the Lord (The Glorified and the Exalted) will say: See if My servant has any optional prayers with which may be completed that which was defective in his obligatory prayers. Then the rest of his actions will be judged in like fashion. (Tirmidhi, Abu Dawud, an-Nasai, Ibn Majah and Ahmad). (Hadith Qudsi)

#### **Pray in All Circumstances**

Narrated 'Imran bin Husain (may Allah be pleased with him): I had piles, so I asked the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) about the prayer. He said, "Pray while standing and if you can't, pray while sitting and if you cannot do even that, then pray lying on your side." (Bukhari)

#### **Salah Erases Sins**

Hadrat Abu Huraira (may Allah be pleased with him) said: The Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said, "Let anyone tell me; if a stream flows by the house of any person and he bathes in it five times a day, whether any dirt will remain on his body." The companions replied that no dirt would remain in such a case. He said, "So is the case with prescribed prayers. Allah forgives men's sins (minor) on their account." (Bukhari, Muslim)

#### **Salah is the Best Deed**

Hadrat Abdullah Ibn Masud (may Allah be pleased with him) said that he enquired of the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) what was the best deed in the sight of Allah. The Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) replied, "To say prescribed prayers at stated hours." I asked what was the next best. He said, "To be good to parents." I again asked what deed ranked next. He said, "To do Jihad in the way of Allah." Ibn Masud (may Allah be pleased with him) says that if he had gone on asking, the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) would have told him more. (Bukhari, Muslim)

#### **Salah Brings Salvation**

Hadrat Abdullah bin Amr (may Allah be pleased with him) said that one day the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) was talking about prescribed prayers and he said, "Whoso is regular in his prayers it will illumine his face, testify to the firmness of his faith and be the cause of his salvation on the Day of Judgement. And whoso neglects the prayers will neither acquire any glow nor staunchness of faith nor any means of salvation and he will join, on the Day of Resurrection, the company of Korah (Qarun), Pharaoh, Haman and Ubay bin Khalaf." (Ahmad, Darimy, Baihaqi)

#### **The Merit of Each Salah**

Narrated by Hadrat Ibn 'Umar (may Allah be pleased with him): Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said, "Whoever misses the 'Asr prayer (intentionally) then it is as if he lost his family and property." (Bukhari) Hadrat Abu Huraira (may Allah be pleased with him) said: The Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said, "If people only knew the reward of giving the prayer-call or the merit of standing in the first row of the congregational prayers, they would insist on drawing lots for finding a place therein. And if they could know the merit of repairing to the mosque early for noon prayers, they would go there running and if they were to know the blessings of night and early morning prayers, they would go to the mosque dragging themselves on their buttocks if they had not the strength to walk upto it" (Bukhari, Muslim)

#### **Say Prayers in Congregation**

Hadrat Abu Darda (may Allah be pleased with him) said: They Holy Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said, "If they are three persons in a habitation or in a jungle and they do not say their prescribed prayers jointly, it would mean that the devil has gained ascendancy over them. Therefore, make a rule for yourselves to say congregational prayers, for a goat which leaves the flock is devoured by the wolf." (Ahmad, Abu Dawud, an-Nasai)

#### **Merit of the Congregational Prayer**

Hadrat Anas bin Malik (may Allah be pleased with him) reported that Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said: Prayer of a man in his house is one prayer, and his prayer in the mosque of the tribes is prayer by 25

times, and his prayer in the congregational mosque is prayer by 500 times, and his prayer in the farthest mosque Masjid Aqsa (of Jerusalem) is prayer by 50,000 times and his prayer in my mosque is prayer by 50,000 times and his prayer in the sacred mosque (of Ka'ba) is prayer by 100,000 times. (Ibn Majah)

#### **The Timing of the Five Prayers**

Hadrat Abdullah bin Amr (may Allah be pleased with him) reported that Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said: The time of Zuhr prayer remains till the sun declines and the shadow of a man becomes double his length and so long as the Asr prayer does not come, and the time of Asr prayer remains so long as the sun does not become yellow: and the time of Maghrib prayer remains so long as the red hue does not disappear; and the time for Isha prayers remains up to the midnight, and the time for Fajr prayer runs from the appearance of dawn till the sun does not rise, but when the sun rises, keep away from prayer because it rises between two horns of the devil. (Muslim)

#### **How to Perform Salah**

Hadrat Abu Hamid as Sayidi (may Allah be pleased with him) narrated amongst ten of the companions of the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him): I know better than you about the prayer of Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him). They asked: Narrate. He said: When the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) stood for prayer, he raised his hands till he took them opposite his shoulders, then he recited takbir, then he read (the Qur'an), then he recited takbir and raised up his hands till he took them opposite his shoulders, then bowed placing his palms upon his knees, then making himself straight, neither lowering his head nor raising it up. Then he raised up his head saying, "Allah hears one who praises Him": then he raised up his hands till he took them opposite his shoulders by being straight: and he said: "Allah is the greatest." Then he lowered himself to the ground in prostration keeping his hands away from his two sides and bending the toes of his feet, he raised up his head and bent his left foot and sat on it, then he sat straight till every bone returned to its proper place. Next he prostrated and said: "Allah is Most Great", raising himself, and bent on his left foot and sat on it. Then he sat straight till every bone returned to its proper place. Then he stood up and did the same thing in the second Rak'at. At the end of the two Rak'ats he stood and said takbir raising up his hands till he took them opposite his shoulders, just as he recited takbir when he opened the prayer, then he did the same in the remaining portion of his prayer till when the prostration in which there was Taslim, he put out his left foot and sat on his hip bone upon his left side. Then he uttered Taslim. They said: You have spoken the truth. He used to pray thus. (Abu Dawud)

#### **Straight Rows in Salah**

Hadrat Anas (may Allah be pleased with him) reported that Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said: make your rows straight, because the straightening of lines is part of the Aqamat of prayer. (Bukhari and Muslim)

#### **Follow the Imam**

Hadrat Anas (may Allah be pleased with him) said: Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) led us in prayer one day, and when he finished his prayer he faced us and said, "O people, I am your Imam, so do not bow, prostrate yourselves, stand, or go away before I do, for I see you both in front of me and behind me." (Muslim)

Hadrat Abu Huraira (may Allah be pleased with him) reported that Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said: The Imam is appointed to be followed. So when he recites takbir, recite takbir: and when he recites (Qur'an), keep silent. (Abu Dawud, an-Nasai, Ibn Majah)

#### **Dua After Salah**

Hadrat Sawbhan (may Allah be pleased with him) reported that when Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) finished his prayer, he begged pardon thrice (Istighfaar) and said:

O Allah! Thou are Peace, and from Thee is peace. Thou are Blessed,

O Lord of Glory and Honour. (Muslim)

#### **Tasbih After Salah**

Hadrat Ka'ab bin Uzrah (may Allah be pleased with him) reported that Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said: There are some recitations after prayer, of which the reciters or the doers at the end of each obligatory prayer will not be disappointed -Tasbih for 33 times, Tahmid for 33 times and Takbir for 34 times. (Muslim)

#### **Dua Qunut in Salah**

Narrated Hadrat Anas (may Allah be pleased with him): The Qunut used to be recited in the Maghrib and the Fajr prayers. (Bukhari)

#### **Salatus-Safar**

Narrated Hadrat Ibn 'Abbas (may Allah be pleased with him): The Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) once stayed for nineteen days and prayed shortened prayers. So when we travelled (and stayed) for nineteen days, we used to shorten the prayer but if we travelled (and stayed) for a longer period we used to offer the full prayer. (Bukhari)

Narrated Hadrat Ibn 'Abbas (may Allah be pleased with him): Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) used to offer the Zuhr and 'Asr prayers together on journeys, and also used to offer the Maghrib and 'Isha' prayers together. (Bukhari)

#### **Friday Prayers**

Narrated Hadrat Abu Huraira (may Allah be pleased with him): The Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said, "When it is a Friday, the angels stand at the gate of the mosque and keep on writing the names of the persons coming to the mosque in succession according to their arrivals. The example of the one who enters the mosque in the earliest hour is that of one offering a camel (in sacrifice). The one coming next is like one offering a cow and then a ram

and then a chicken and then an egg respectively. When the Imam comes out (for Jumu'a prayer) they (i.e. angels) fold their papers and listen to the Khutba." (Bukhari)

Hadrat Abdul Ja'ad az-Zumairi (may Allah be pleased with him) reported that Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said: Whoso gives up three Friday prayers by way of neglecting them, Allah (The Glorified and the Exalted) will seal up his heart. (Abu Dawud, Tirmidhi, an-Nasai, Ibn Majah)

#### **Eid Prayers**

Narrated Hadrat Abdullah bin Umar (may Allah be pleased with him): Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) used to offer the prayer of Eid-ul-Adha and Eid-ul-Fitr and then deliver the khutba after the prayer. (Bukhari)

#### **Salatul Witr**

Narrated mother of faithful believers, Hadrat 'Aisha (may Allah be pleased with her): Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) offered Witr prayer at different nights at various hours extending (from the 'Isha prayer) up to the last hour of the night. (Bukhari)

#### **Sunnah Muakkadah**

Hadrat Umm Habiba (may Allah be pleased with her) reported Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) as saying, "A house will be built in paradise for anyone who prays in a day and a night twelve rakas (Sunnah prayers), four before and two after the noon prayer, two after the sunset prayer, two after the night prayer and two before the dawn prayer." (Tirmidhi)

#### **Tahajjud**

Hadrat Abu Ummah (may Allah be pleased with him): The Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said, "Make Tahajjud prayers obligatory for yourselves. This is the way of pious gone before you and it is a means of attaining nearness to Allah, it atones for your sins and prevents their commission." (Tirmidhi)

#### **Taraweh**

Hadrat Abu Huraira (may Allah be pleased with him) says that the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) used to encourage people to offer extra prayers (Taraweh) but would not give a positive direction for it. He used to say "Whoso offers Taraweh prayers devotedly and sincerely, all his former sins would be forgiven." The narrator says that this practice continued after the passing away of the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him), during the khilafat of Sayyidina Abu Bakr (may Allah be pleased with him) and the early part of Sayyidina Umar's (may Allah be pleased with him) khilafat (then it became congregational) (Muslim)

#### **Tahiyatul Masjid**

Narrated Hadrat Abu Qatada bin Rab'i Al-Ansari (may Allah be pleased with him): The Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said, "If anyone of you enters a Mosque, he should not sit until he has offered a two Rak'at prayer." (Bukhari)

#### **Salatul Tasbih**

Hadrat Abdullah Ibn Abbas (may Allah be pleased with him) said that the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said to Hadrat Abbas Ibn Abdul Muttalib (may Allah be pleased with him): O Abbas, O my uncle! Should I not give you, should I not tell you something in lieu of performance of which Allah will forgive all your past and future sins, old and new, done wittingly or unwittingly, evident or concealed. You should offer four Rak'ah of prayers in a way that in each Rak'ah after reciting surah Fatiha and a verse of the Qur'an say fifteen times "SubhanAllah wal Hamdulillah wa la ilaha Illallahu Wallahu Akbar" and then repeat it ten times before finishing the bow, ten times on standing erect and ten times before finishing each of the prostrations, ten times in between them and ten times after the second prostration before getting up. Thus in each Rak'ah this has to be repeated seventy-five times. If you can, offer this prayer every day, if not once in every week or once in every month or at least once in a year. If even this is not possible, at least once in a life time." (Abu Dawud, Ibn Majah, Baihaqi)

#### **Istikhara Prayer**

Narrated Hadrat Jabir bin Abdullah As-Salami (may Allah be pleased with him): Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) used to teach his companions to perform the prayer of Istikhara for each and every matter just as he used to teach them the Suras from the Qur'an. He used to say, "If anyone of you intends to do something, he should offer a two-Rak'at prayer other than the compulsory prayers, and after finishing it, he should say: O Allah! I consult You, for You have all knowledge, and appeal to You to support me with Your Power, and ask for Your Bounty, for You are able to do things while I am not, and You Know while I do not, and You are the Knower of the Unseen. O Allah! If You know that this matter (name your matter) is good for me both at present and in the future, (or in my religion), in my present life and in the Hereafter, then fulfil it for me and make it easy for me, and then bestow Your Blessings on me in that matter. O Allah! If You Know that this matter is not good for me in my religion, in my present life and in my coming Hereafter (or at present or in the future), then divert me from it and choose for me what is good whenever it may be, and make me be pleased with it." (Bukhari)

#### **Salatul Istisqa (for rain)**

Narrated Abbad bin Tamim from his uncle, "I saw the Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) on the day when he went out to offer the Istisqa' prayer. He turned his back towards the people and faced the Qibla and asked Allah for rain. Then he turned his cloak inside out and led us in a two-Rak'ah prayer and recited the Qur'an aloud in them." (Bukhari)

### **Sunnah Prayer on Sun Eclipse (salatul kusuf)**

Narrated Hadrat Al-Mughira bin Shu'ba (may Allah be pleased with him): "The sun eclipsed in the life-time of Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) on the day when (his son) Ibrahim died. So the people said that the sun had eclipsed because of the death of Ibrahim. Allah's Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) said, "The sun and the moon do not eclipse because of the death or life (i.e. birth) of someone. When you see the eclipse, pray and invoke Allah." (Bukhari)

The Prophet (PBUH) has said: "Whoever guides [another] to a good deed will get a reward similar to the one who performs it." [Saheeh Muslim]

If Allah guides a person through you, it is better for you than all that is on the earth." (Bukhari No. 2783 & Muslim No. 2406). Convey (my teachings) to the people even if it were a single sentence" (Sahih Bukhari, Vol.4, Hadith 667)

Dawah to non muslims

<http://www.whatisyourgoal.org/> [www.guideus.tv](http://www.guideus.tv)

Type [www.amazon.com](http://www.amazon.com) and search faisal fahim books

**Salat-ut-Tasbih:** Abu Rafi (R.A) narrated that Allah's Messenger (Peace be upon him) said to Abbas (R.A), "O Uncle! Shall I not join ties with you? Shall I not give you? Shall I not benefit you?" He said, "Of course, O Messenger of Allah!" So, he said, "O Uncle! Pray four raka'at. recite in each raka'ah the Surah Fatiha and a Surah and when you have finished the recital, say (Allahu Akbar Wal Hamdulillah Wa Subhan Allah) fifteen times before making the ruku. Then go into the ruku and repeat them ten times. Then raise your head and say the words ten times. Then go into prostrations and repeat them ten times, and raise your head and say the words ten times. Then prostrate and say the words ten times, and (again) raise your head and repeat them ten times before you stand up. So, this is (in all) seventy five in each raka'ah and it three hundred in all four rak'at. Even if your sins are like the sand particles of Aalij, Allah will forgive them for you". He ( Abbas (R.A) said, "O Messenger of Allah! Who can stand up for it every day?" He said, "If you cannot establish it every day, then observe it on Friday. And if you cannot do that every Friday then observe it every month". And he did not cease to say that until he said, "Offer it once in a year".

Imam Tirmidhi (R.A) said: This hadith as narrated by Abu Rafi is Gharib.[Jami Tirmidhi (2/514)]

**Salatul tahajjud :** "Establish prayer at the decline of the sun [from its meridian] until the darkness of the night and [also] the Qur'an of dawn. Indeed, the recitation of dawn is ever witnessed.And from [part of] the night, pray with it as additional [worship] for you; it is expected that your Lord will resurrect you to a praised station." (Surah Isra, 17:78-79).

Here are some hadiths about tahajjud:

Abu Hurairah reports that the Messenger of Allah (saws) said: "Our Lord Descends to the lowest heaven during the last third of the night, inquiring: `Who will call on Me so that I may respond to him? Who is asking something of Me so I may give it to him? Who is asking for My forgiveness so I may forgive him?'" [ Bukhari and Muslim.]

Abdullah ibn `Amr reports that the Prophet (saws) said: "The most beloved fast to Allah is the fast of (Prophet) Dawood (a.s.). And the most beloved prayer to Allah is the prayer of (Prophet) Dawood (a.s.). He (Prophet Dawood (a.s.)) would sleep half of the night and then pray during the next third of the night and then sleep during the last sixth of the night.And he would fast one day and not fast the next." [ Bukhari and Muslim.]

Abu Hurayra (Allah be pleased with him) reports that the Messenger of Allah (blessings and peace be upon him, his family, and companions) said, "The best prayer after the obligatory prayers is the night prayer." [Muslim]

Abd Allah ibn Salam (Allah be pleased with him) reports that the Messenger of Allah (blessings and peace be upon him, his family, and companions) said, "O people! Spread the salams, feed others, maintain family ties, and pray at night when others sleep and you will enter Heaven safely." [Tirmidhi, Hakim]

Narrated Al-Mughira: The Prophet(SAW) used to stand (in the prayer) or pray till both his feet or legs swelled. He was asked why (he offered such an unbearable prayer) and he said, "should I not be a thankful slave." [Bukahri]

Narrated Salim's father: In the life-time of the Prophet(SAW) whosoever saw a dream would narrate it to Allah's Apostle(SAW). I had a wish of seeing a dream to narrate it to Allah's Apostle (p.b.u.h) I was a grown up boy and used to sleep in the Mosque in the life-time of the Prophet. I saw in the dream that two angels caught hold of me and took me to the Fire which was built all round like a built well and had two poles in it and the people in it were known to me. I started saying, "I seek refuge with Allah from the Fire." Then I met another angel who told me not to be afraid. I narrated the dream to Hafsa who told it to Allah's Apostle(SAW). The Prophet(SAW) said, "Abdullah is a good man. I wish he prayed Tahajjud." After that 'Abdullah (i.e. Salim's father) used to sleep but a little at night. [Bukhari]

Narrated `Aisha: Allah's Apostle(SAW) used to offer eleven Rakat and that was his prayer. He used to prolong the prostration to such an extent that one could recite fifty verses (of the Quran) before he would lift his head. He used to pray two Rakat (Sunnah) before the Fajr prayer and then used to lie down on his right side till the call-maker came and informed him about the prayer. [Bukhari]

**'Praying at Night in Ramadaan (Taraweeh)' of Sahih Bukhari.**

226 Narrated Abu Huraira: I heard Allah's Apostle saying regarding Ramadan, "Whoever prayed at night in it (the month of Ramadan) out of sincere Faith and hoping for a reward from Allah, then all his previous sins will be forgiven."

227 Narrated Abu Huraira: Allah's Apostle said, "Whoever prayed at night the whole month of Ramadan out of sincere Faith and hoping for a reward from Allah, then all his previous sins will be forgiven." Ibn Shihab (a sub-narrator) said, "Allah's Apostle died and the people continued observing that (i.e. Nawafil offered individually, not in congregation), and it remained as it was during the Caliphate of Abu Bakr and in the early days of 'Umar's Caliphate." 'Abdur Rahman bin 'Abdul Qari said, "I went out in the company of 'Umar bin Al-Khattab one night in Ramadan to the mosque and found the people praying in different groups. A man praying alone or a man praying with a little group behind him. So, 'Umar said, 'In my opinion I would better collect these (people) under the leadership of one Qari (Reciter) (i.e. let them pray in congregation!)). So, he made up his mind to congregate them behind Ubai bin Ka'b. Then on another night I went again in his company and the people were praying behind their reciter. On that, 'Umar remarked, 'What an excellent Bid'a (i.e. innovation in religion) this is; but the prayer which they do not perform, but sleep at its time is better than the one they are offering.' He meant the prayer in the last part of the night. (In those days) people used to pray in the early part of the night."

228 Narrated 'Aisha: (the wife of the Prophet) Allah's Apostle used to pray (at night) in Ramadan.

229 Narrated 'Urwa: That he was informed by 'Aisha, "Allah's Apostle went out in the middle of the night and prayed in the mosque and some men prayed behind him. In the morning, the people spoke about it and then a large number of them gathered and prayed behind him (on the second night). In the next morning the people again talked about it and on the third night the mosque was full with a large number of people. Allah's Apostle came out and the people prayed behind him. On the fourth night the Mosque was overwhelmed with people and could not accommodate them, but the Prophet came out (only) for the morning prayer. When the morning prayer was finished he recited Tashah-hud and (addressing the people) said, "Amma ba'du, your presence was not hidden from me but I was afraid lest the night prayer (Qiyam) should be enjoined on you and you might not be able to carry it on." So, Allah's Apostle died and the situation remained like that (i.e. people prayed individually). "

230 Narrated Abu Salama bin 'Abdur Rahman: that he asked 'Aisha "How was the prayer of Allah's Apostle in Ramadan?" She replied, "He did not pray more than eleven Rakat in Ramadan or in any other month. He used to pray four Rakat ---- let alone their beauty and length----and then he would pray four ----let alone their beauty and length ----and then he would pray three Rakat (Witr)." She added, "I asked, 'O Allah's Apostle! Do you sleep before praying the Witr?' He replied, 'O 'Aisha! My eyes sleep but my heart does not sleep."

231 Narrated Abu Huraira: The Prophet said, "Whoever fasted the month of Ramadan out of sincere Faith (i.e. belief) and hoping for a reward from Allah, then all his past sins will be forgiven, and whoever stood for the prayers in the night of Qadr out of sincere Faith and hoping for a reward from Allah, then all his previous sins will be forgiven ."

232 Narrated Ibn 'Umar: Some men amongst the companions of the Prophet were shown in their dreams that the night of Qadr was in the last seven nights of Ramadan. Allah's Apostle said, "It seems that all your dreams agree that (the Night of Qadr) is in the last seven nights, and whoever wants to search for it (i.e. the Night of Qadr) should search in the last seven (nights of Ramadan)."

233 Narrated Abu Salama: I asked Abu Sa'id, and he was a friend of mine, (about the Night of Qadr) and he said, "We practiced Itikaf (seclusion in the mosque) in the middle third of the month of Ramadan with the Prophet . In the morning of the 20th of Ramadan, the Prophet came and addressed us and said, 'I was informed of (the date of the Night of Qadr) but I was caused to forget it; so search for it in the odd nights of the last ten nights of the month of Ramadan. (In the dream) I saw myself prostrating in mud and water (as a sign). So, whoever was in l'tikaf with me should return to it with me (for another 10-day's period)', and we returned. At that time there was no sign of clouds in the sky but suddenly a cloud came and it rained till rain-water started leaking through the roof of the mosque which was made of date-palm leaf stalks. Then the prayer was established and I saw Allah's Apostle prostrating in mud and water and I saw the traces of mud on his forehead."

234 Narrated 'Aisha: Allah's Apostle said, "Search for the Night of Qadr in the odd nights of the last ten days of Ramadan."

235 Narrated Abu Sa'id Al-Khudri: Allah's Apostle used to practice Itikaf (in the mosque) in the middle third of Ramadan and after passing the twenty nights he used to go back to his house on the 21st, and the people who were in Itikaf with him also used to go back to their houses. Once in Ramadan, in which he practiced Itikaf, he established the night prayers at the night in which he used to return home, and then he addressed the people and ordered them whatever Allah wished him to order and said, "I used to practice Itikaf for these ten days (i.e. the middle 113rd but now I intend to stay in Itikaf for the last ten days (of the month); so whoever was in Itikaf with me should stay at his place of seclusion. I have verily been shown (the date of) this Night (of Qadr) but I have forgotten it. So search for it in the odd nights of the last ten days (of this month). I also saw myself (in the dream) prostrating in mud and water." On the night of the 21st, the sky was covered with clouds and it rained, and the rain-water started leaking through the roof of the mosque at the praying place of the Prophet . I saw with my own eyes the Prophet at the completion of the morning prayer leaving with his face covered with mud and water.

235 Narrated Abu Sa'id Al-Khudri: Allah's Apostle used to practice Itikaf (in the mosque) in the middle third of Ramadan and after passing the twenty nights he used to go back to his house on the 21st, and the people who were in Itikaf with him also used to go back to their houses. Once in Ramadan, in which he practiced Itikaf, he established the night prayers at the night in which he used to return home, and then he addressed the people and ordered them whatever Allah wished him to order and said, "I used to practice Itikaf for these ten days (i.e. the middle 113rd but now I intend to stay in Itikaf for the last ten days (of the month); so whoever was in Itikaf with me should stay at his place of seclusion. I have verily been shown (the date of) this Night (of Qadr) but I have forgotten it. So search for it in the odd nights of the last ten days (of this month). I also saw myself (in the dream) prostrating in mud and water." On the night of the 21st, the sky was covered with clouds and it rained, and the rain-water started



leaking through the roof of the mosque at the praying place of the Prophet . I saw with my own eyes the Prophet at the completion of the morning prayer leaving with his face covered with mud and water.

236 Narrated 'Aisha: The Prophet said, "Look for (the Night of Qadr)."

237 Narrated 'Aisha: Allah's Apostle used to practice Itikaf in the last ten nights of Ramadan and used to say, "Look for the Night of Qadr in the last ten nights of the month of Ramadan ,"

238 Narrated Ibn Abbas: The Prophet said, "Look for the Night of Qadr in the last ten nights of Ramadan ,' on the night when nine or seven or five nights remain out of the last ten nights of Ramadan (i.e. 21, 23, 25, respectively)."

239 Narrated Ibn 'Abbas: Allah's Apostle said, "The Night of Qadr is in the last ten nights of the month (Ramadan), either on the first nine or in the last (remaining) seven nights (of Ramadan)." Ibn 'Abbas added, "Search for it on the twenty-fourth (of Ramadan)."

240 Narrated 'Ubada bin As-Samit: The Prophet came out to inform us about the Night of Qadr but two Muslims were quarreling with each other. So, the Prophet said, "I came out to inform you about the Night of Qadr but such-and-such persons were quarreling, so the news about it had been taken away; yet that might be for your own good, so search for it on the 29th, 27th and 25th (of Ramadan).

241 Narrated Aisha: With the start of the last ten days of Ramadan, the Prophet used to tighten his waist belt (i.e. work hard) and used to pray all the night, and used to keep his family awake for the prayers.

**Umrah in (that month) is equivalent to Hajj.**" Al-Bukhari (1782) and Muslim (1256) narrated that Ibn Abbaas said: The Messenger of Allaah (peace and blessings of Allah be upon him) said to a woman from among the Ansaar – Ibn Abbaas mentioned her name but I forgot it – "What kept you from performing Hajj with us?" She said: We only have two camels and the father of her son and her son had gone for Hajj on one camel, and he left us the other camel so that we could carry water on it. He said: **"When Ramadan comes, go for Umrah, for Umrah in (that month) is equivalent to Hajj."**

Narrated Abu Huraira: Some poor people came to the Prophet Muhammad Sallallahu Alayhi Wassalam and said, "The wealthy people will get higher grades and will have permanent enjoyment, and they offer Salaah (prayer) like us and observe Sawm (fast) as we do. They have more money by which they perform the Hajj, and 'Umra; fight and struggle in Allah's Cause and give in charity." The Prophet Muhammad Sallallahu Alayhi Wassalam said, "Shall I not tell you a thing upon which if you acted you would catch up with those who have surpassed you? Nobody would overtake you and you would be better than the people amongst whom you live except those who would do the same. Say SubhanAllah, Alhamdulillah and Allahu Akbar thirty three times each after every (compulsory) Salaah (prayer)." We differed and some of us said that we should say, SubhanAllah thirty three times Alhamdulillah thirty three times and Allahu Akbar thirty four times. I went to the Prophet Muhammad (sal-allahu-alleihi-wasallam) who said, "Say, Subhan Allah and Alhamdulillah and Allahu Akbar all of them thirty three times." [Sahih Bukhari; Hadith No. 479]

"All Glory be to Allaah"

"All praise be to Allaah"

"Allaah is greater"

Du'a after Salaah

"None has the right to be worshiped but Allaah alone, He has no partner, His is the dominion and His is the praise, and He is Able to do all things. O Allaah, there is none who can withhold what You give, and none may give what You have withheld; and the might of the mighty person cannot benefit him against You"

Our Beloved SalAllahu Alaihi Wasallam, said:

The Prophet Muhammad said, may Allah's peace and blessings be upon him: Your Heaven lies under the feet of your mother (Ahmad, Nasai).

Mu'awiyah ibn Jahima (RadhiAllahu 'anhu) reported,

Jahima (RadhiAllahu 'anhu) came to the Prophet ﷺ and he said:

"O Messenger of Allah ﷺ, I intend to join the expedition and I seek your advice."

The Prophet ﷺ said, "Do you have a mother?"

He said, "Yes."

The Prophet ﷺ said, "Stay with her, for verily Paradise is beneath her feet."

[Sunan An-Nasa'i, Book of Jihad, Number 3104]

2. A man came to the Prophet and said, 'O Messenger of God! Who among the people is the most worthy of my good companionship? The Prophet said: Your mother. The man said, 'Then who?' The Prophet said: Then your mother. The man further asked, 'Then who?' The Prophet said: Then your mother. The man asked again, 'Then who?' The Prophet said: Then your father. (Bukhari, Muslim).

3. Abu Usaid Saidi said: We were once sitting with Rasulullah when a man from the tribe of Salmah came and said to him: O Messenger of Allah! do my parents have rights over me even after they have died? And Rasulullah said: Yes. You must pray to Allah to bless them with His Forgiveness and Mercy, fulfill the promises they made to anyone, and respect their relations and their friends (Abu Dawud and Ibn Majah).
4. Abdullah ibn Amr related that the Messenger of Allah said: The major sins are to believe that Allah has partners, to disobey one's parents, to commit murder, and to bear false witness (Bukhari, Muslim).
5. It is narrated by Asma bint Abu Bakr that during the treaty of Hudaibiyah, her mother, who was then pagan, came to see her from Makkah. Asma informed the Messenger of Allah of her arrival and also that she needed help. He said: Be good to your mother (Bukhari, Muslim).

Our Beloved SalAllahu Alaihi Wasallam, said:

1. "Whoever meets Allah without ascribing anything to Him will enter Jannah." [Bukhari]
2. "Whoever believes (has Imaan) in Allah and His Messenger (sal Allahu alayhi wa sallam), and establishes the prayer and fasts the month of Ramadan, it is incumbent upon Allah that He enters him in Jannah." [Bukhari]
3. "Whoever builds a masjid seeking by it the Pleasure of Allah, Allah will build for him a similar place in Jannah." [Bukhari]
4. "Whoever prays the two cool prayers (Asr and Fajr) will enter Jannah." [Bukhari]
5. "Whoever goes to the masjid (every) morning and in the afternoon (for the congregational prayer), Allah will prepare for him an honorable place in Jannah with good hospitality for (what he has done) every morning and afternoon goings." [Bukhari]
6. "Whoever can guarantee (the chastity of) what is between his two jaw-bones and what is between his two legs (i.e. his tongue and his private parts), I guarantee Jannah for him." [Bukhari]
7. "Whoever prays 12 rakaat in the day and night, a house in Jannah will be built for him." [Muslim]
8. "Whoever treads a path in search of knowledge, Allah will make easy for him the path to Jannah." [Bukhari]
9. "Whoever repeats after the muadhhdhin from his heart (i.e., sincerely) will enter Jannah." [Abu Dawud]
10. "There is not one of you who perfects his wudu and prays two rakaat setting about them with his heart as well as his face except that Jannah would be mandatory for him." [Abu Dawud]
11. Whoever says: "I am pleased with Allah as my Rabb, and with Islam as my Deen, and with Muhammad (sal Allahu alayhi wa sallam) as my Prophet, Jannah would be mandatory for him." [Abu Dawud]
12. "Whosoever last words are: laa ilaaha il Allah, will enter Paradise." [Abu Dawud, Saheeh]
13. Whoever says "SubhanAllah al-Adheem wa biHamdihi, Glorified and Exalted is Allah, The Great, and with His Praise", a date-palm will planted for him in Jannah." [Tirmidhi]
14. "Whoever dies and is free from three: arrogance, grudges and debt will enter Jannah." [Tirmidhi]
15. "Whoever raises two girls, he and I will enter Jannah." [Tirmidhi]
16. "Whoever calls the adhan for 12 years, Jannah will become mandatory for him." [ibn Maajah]
17. Whoever asks Allah for Jannah three times, Jannah will say: "O Allah, enter him into Jannah." [Tirmidhi]
18. "Whoever visits an ailing person or a brother of his to seek the Pleasure of Allah, an announcer (angel) calls out: May you be happy, may your walking be blessed, and may you be awarded a dignified position in Jannah." [Tirmidhi]
19. "Indeed, truthfulness leads to righteousness and indeed righteousness leads to Jannah." [Bukhari]
20. "Allah guarantees him who strives in His Cause and whose motivation for going out is nothing but Jihad in His Cause and belief in His Word, that He will admit him into Jannah." [Bukhari]
21. "O people, spread the salaam (greetings), feed the hungry, and pray while the people are asleep, you will enter Jannah in

peace.” [Tirmidhi]

22. “(The performance of) Umrah is an expiation for the sins committed between it and the previous Umrah; and the reward of Hajj Mabruur (i.e., one accepted) is nothing but Jannah.” [Bukhari]

23. “Allah has ninety-nine Names, one hundred minus one, and whoever believes in their meanings and acts accordingly, will enter Jannah.” [Bukhari]

24. “I saw a man going about in Jannah (and enjoying himself) as a reward for cutting from the middle of the road, a tree which was causing inconvenience to the Muslims.” [Muslim]

25. “If somebody recites this invocation during the day, and if he should die then, he will be from the people of Jannah. And if he recites it in the night, and if he should die on the same day, he will be from the people of Jannah.” [Bukhari]

“Allahumma anta Rabbi la ilaha illa anta Khalaqtani wa ana ‘abduka, wa ana ‘ala ‘ahdika wa Wa’dika mastata’tu abu’u Laka bi ni ‘matika wa abu’u Laka bidhanbi; faghfirli fa’innahu la yaghfiru-dh-dhunuba ill a anta. A’uidhu bika min sharri ma sana’tu,abu’u Laka bini’matika ‘alaiya, wa Abu Laka bidhanbi faghfirli innahu la yaghfiru adhdhunuba illa anta”

**ABOUT FAISAL FAHIM: FAISAL WAS BORN IN BANGLADESH. HE SPENT HIS CHILDHOOD WITH HIS GRANDPARENTS IN BANGLADESH & HE SAW THEM PRAYING 5 TIMES A DAY. HE CAME TO AMERICA AT A YOUNG AGE AND HE IS AN AMERICAN BANGLADESHI MUSLIM. IN AMERICA HE LIVED WITH HIS PARENTS. HE WENT TO SCHOOLS IN NY. HE WENT TO VISIT BANGLADESH IN 2009 & HE SAW SOME VIDEOS OF DR. ZAKIR NAIK ON TV. THE VIDEOS WERE ABOUT SPREADING THE KNOWLEDGE OF ISLAM WITH MUSLIMS AND NONMUSLIMS. HE WAS INSPIRED BY DR. ZAKIR NAIK. HE LOVES ISLAM & BELIEVES ISLAM IS A RELIGION OF PEACE & MERCY. SO HE LIKES TO SPREAD THE MESSAGE OF ISLAM TO NONMUSLIMS AND MUSLIMS.**

**MESSAGE OF FAISAL FAHIM: SPREAD THE RELIGION OF ALLAH. SPREAD THE MESSAGE OF THE PROPHET MUHAMMAD (PBUH). SHARE THE KNOWLEDGE OF ISLAM. SINCE IT WAS A DUTY OF THE PROPHET MUHAMMAD (PBUH) TO SPREAD THE MESSAGE OF ISLAM SO MUSLIMS SHOULD ALSO CONTINUE THIS GREATEST SUNNAH & EXPECT THE REWARD FROM ALLAH ONLY. ISLAM IS PEACE, LOVE, MERCY, KIND, HUMBLE, HONEST & THE ONLY FINAL TRUE RELIGION FROM GOD. MAY ALLAH GUIDE US ALL .AMEEN.**

**INFORMATION ARRANGED AND ORGANIZED BY MR. FAISAL FAHIM.**

Surah Al-Baqarah is the longest surah of the Quran and the prophet (s.a.w.) highlighted many of its benefits in general and some of its specific benefits. For example, the prophet (s.a.w.) told us that its recitation in a house keeps the Satan away. Abu Hurayrah reports that the Messenger of Allah (s.a.w.) said: *“Do not make your houses like graves, for the Shaytan runs away from a house in which Surat al-Baqarah is recited”* (narrated by Muslim, 780). As most of the spiritual ailments such as evil eye, jinn possession, and black magic are satanic in nature, keeping Satan away can also help both in the treatment of such conditions and as a preventive measure.

**The Blessings of Aayat al-Kursiy**

Ayat-ul-Kursi is verse 255 of Surah Al-Bqarah and is related to Allah’s throne. This Quranic verse has many blessings and is used for ruqyah treatment, the treatment of evil eye, black magic, and also for general and comprehensive protection.

اللَّهُ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ الْحَيُّ الْقَيُّومُ لَا تَأْخُذُهُ سِنَّةٌ  
 وَلَا نَوْمٌ لَهُ مَا فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَمَا فِي الْأَرْضِ مَنْ ذَا  
 الَّذِي يَشْفَعُ عِنْدَهُ إِلَّا بِإِذْنِهِ يَعْلَمُ مَا بَيْنَ  
 أَيْدِيهِمْ وَمَا خَلْفَهُمْ وَلَا يُحِيطُونَ بِشَيْءٍ  
 مِنْ عِلْمِهِ إِلَّا بِمَا شَاءَ وَسِعَ كُرْسِيُّهُ السَّمَوَاتِ  
 وَالْأَرْضَ وَلَا يَئُودُهُ حِفْظُهُمَا وَهُوَ الْعَلِيُّ  
 الْعَظِيمُ

سورة البقرة ﴿٢٥٥﴾

The blessings of this verse is apparent from this hadith narrated by Abu Hurayrah. He said:

*The Messenger of Allah (s.a.w.) put me in charge of guarding the zakaah of Ramadaan. Someone came to me and started grabbing (taking illegally) handful of the food. I took hold of him and said, 'I will take you to the Messenger of Allah (s.a.w.).' He said, 'I will teach you some words by means of which Allah will benefit you.' I said, 'What are they?' He said, 'When you go to your bed, recite this aayah: "Allah! Laa ilaaha illa Huwa (none has the right to be worshipped but He), Al-Hayyul-Qayyoom (the Ever Living, the One Who sustains and protects all that exists)..." [Surah al-Baqarah, 2:255]. Then Allah will appoint a guard for you who will stay with you and no Shaytan (devil) will come near you until morning.' The Messenger of Allah (s.a.w.) asked me, 'What did your prisoner do last night?' I said, 'O Messenger of Allah, he taught me something, and claimed that Allah would benefit me by it.' He said, 'What was it?' I said, 'He taught me to recite Aayat al-Kursiy when I go to bed, and said that no Shaytan would come near me until morning, and that Allah would appoint a guard for me who would stay with me.' The prophet (s.a.w.) said, 'He told you the truth, although he is an inveterate liar. That was the Shaytan' [narrated by al-Bukhaari, 3101; Muslim, 505].*

#### **The Blessings of Last Verses of Surah Al-Baqarah**

The last verses of Surah Al-Baqarah are one of the most memorized and recited Quranic verses among Muslims and that is for a good reason. Consider the saying of the prophet (s.a.w.) about the last verses of the Surah.

**"Whoever recites the last two verses of Surat al-Baqarah at night, it will suffice him"** (According to Abu Masood al-Ansaari and narrated by al-Bukhaari, 4723; Muslim, 807).

The Prophet (s.a.w.) also said the following:

*"Allah inscribed a book two thousand years before He created the heavens and the earth, from which the last two verses of Surat al-Baqarah were revealed. If they are recited for three nights, no Shaytan (devil) will remain in the house) (narrated by al-Tirmidhi, 2882). This hadeeth was classed as saheeh by al-Albaani in Saheeh al-Jaami' (1799).*

ءَامَنَ الرَّسُولُ بِمَا أُنزِلَ إِلَيْهِ مِنْ رَبِّهِ ۗ  
 وَالْمُؤْمِنُونَ كُلٌّ ءَامَنَ بِاللَّهِ وَمَلَائِكَتِهِ وَكُتُبِهِ ۗ  
 وَرُسُلِهِ ۗ لَا تَفَرِّقُ بَيْنَ أَحَدٍ مِنْ رُسُلِهِ ۗ  
 وَقَالُوا سَمِعْنَا وَأَطَعْنَا ۗ غُفْرَانَكَ رَبَّنَا  
 وَإِلَيْكَ الْمَصِيرُ ﴿٢٨٥﴾

لَا يُكَلِّفُ اللَّهُ نَفْسًا إِلَّا وُسْعَهَا لَهَا مَا كَسَبَتْ  
 وَعَلَيْهَا مَا اكْتَسَبَتْ رَبَّنَا لَا تُؤَاخِذْنَا إِنْ نَسِينَا  
 أَوْ أَخْطَأْنَا رَبَّنَا وَلَا تَحْمِلْ عَلَيْنَا إصْرًا  
 كَمَا حَمَلْتَهُ عَلَى الَّذِينَ مِنْ قَبْلِنَا رَبَّنَا  
 وَلَا تُحَمِّلْنَا مَا لِطَآئِفَةٍ لَنَا بِهٖ ۗ وَأَعْفُ عَنَّا  
 وَاعْفِرْ لَنَا وَارْحَمْنَا ۗ أَنْتَ مَوْلَانَا فَانصُرْنَا  
 عَلَى الْقَوْمِ الْكَافِرِينَ ﴿٢٨٦﴾ سورة البقرة

285. The Messenger (Muhammad) believes in what has been sent down to him from his Lord, and (so do) the believers. Each one believes in Allah, His Angels, His Books, and His Messengers. (They say), "We make no distinction between one another of His Messengers" – and they say, "We hear, and we obey. (We seek) Your Forgiveness, our Lord, and to You is the return (of all)."  
 286. Allah burdens not a person beyond his scope. He gets reward for that (good) which he has earned, and he is punished for that (evil) which he has earned. "Our Lord! Punish us not if we forget or fall into error, our Lord! Lay not on us a burden like that which You did lay on those before us (Jews and Christians); our Lord! Put not on us a burden greater than we have strength to bear. Pardon us and grant us Forgiveness. Have mercy on us. You are our Maula (Patron, Supporter and Protector, etc.) and give us victory over the disbelieving people." *Quran, Surah Al-Baqarah (185:186)*

"Allah sends His Salaah (Graces, Blessings, Mercy) on the Prophet (Muhammad), and also His angels (Angels ask Allah to bless and forgive him). O you who believe! send your Salah on (ask Allaah to bless) him (Muhammad), and greet him with the Islamic way of greeting (salutation, i.e. As?Salaamu 'Alaykum)" [Quran: al-Ahzaab 33:56]

Sending blessings on the prophet is so vital that in one of the hadeeth, acceptance of our Dua is made dependant on it.

According to a hadith by 'Umar ibn al-Khattaab (may Allah be pleased with him) who said:

Dua is suspended between heaven and earth and none of it is taken up until you send blessings upon your Prophet (peace and blessings of Allah be upon him)." (Classed as hasan by al-Albaani in Saheeh al-Tirmidhi).

Sending blessings mean to read or say Darood Ibrahim :

ALLAHUMMA SALLI ALA MUHAMMADIW WA ALA AALI MUHAMMADIN KAMAA SALLAITA ALA IBRAHIMA WA ALA AALI IBRAHIMA INNAKA HAMIDUM MAJID. ALLAHUMMA BAARIK ALA MUHAMMADIW WA ALA AALI MUHAMMADIN KAMAA BAARAKTA ALA IBRAHIMA WA ALA AALI IBRAHIMA INNAKA HAMIDUM MAJID.

Allahumma! Send blessings upon (Holy Prophet) Muhammad and upon the followers of (Holy Prophet) Muhammad as You sent blessings upon Ibraheem and upon the followers of Ibraheem; indeed, You are praiseworthy and glorious.

Allahumma! Bless (Holy Prophet) Muhammad and the follower of (Holy Prophet) Muhammad as You blessed Ibraheem and the follower of Ibraheem; indeed, You are praise worthy and glorious.

Note :

The famous companion of the Prophet (Sallal Laahu Alaihi Wasallim), Hazrat Ka'ab bin Ujrah (radi Allahu anhu), narrates that once it was enquired from Sayyiduna Rasoolullah (Sallal Laahu Alaihi Wasallim) as to how blessings should be sent to him. The Prophet (Sallal Laahu Alaihi Wasallim) replied that the blessings be said in the manner (it has been mentioned) above, that is, Durood-e-Ibrahimi.

**Best Times to make Dua (Supplication) While Prostrating**

Abu Hurairah (RA) narrated that Allah's Messenger (SAW), said: 'The nearest a slave can be to his Lord is when he is prostrating, so invoke (supplicate) Allah (SWT) much in it. [Muslim, abu Dawud, an-Nasa'i and others, Sahih al-Jami #1175]

When a Muslim is in his Salat (prayer) he is facing Allah (SWT) and when he prostrates he is the nearest he can be to Allah (SWT) so it is best to invoke Allah (SWT) at this time.

**The Last Third Of The Night**

Abu Hurairah (RA) narrated that Allah's Messenger (SAW) said: 'In the last third of every night our Rabb (Cherisher and Sustainer) (Allah (SWT)) descends to the lowermost heaven and says; "Who is calling Me, so that I may answer him? Who is asking Me so that may I grant him? Who is seeking forgiveness from Me so that I may forgive him?."' [Sahih al-Bukhari, Hadith Qudsi]

Amr ibn Absah narrated that the Prophet said: 'The closest any worshipper can be to His Lord is during the last part of the night, so if you can be amongst those who remember Allah at that time, then do so.' [at-Tirmidhi, an-Nasa'i, al-Hakim - Sahih]

**The Night Of 'Qadr' (Decree)**

This night is the greatest night of the year. This is the night which the almighty Allah (SWT) said about it, "The night of Al-Qadar (Decree) is better than a thousand months." [Surah al-Qadr, 97: 3]

The Night of Decree is one of the odd nights of the last ten nights of the blessed month of Ramadan. The angels descend down to the earth, and the earth is overwhelmed with peace and serenity until the break of dawn and when the doors of Paradise are opened, the worshipper is encouraged to turn to Allah to ask for his needs for this world and the Hereafter.

**BY MR.FAISAL FAHIM: The most recommended book of MR.FAISAL IS "The Bible, the Qu'ran and Science: The Holy Scriptures Examined in the Light of Modern Knowledge: 4 books in 1" Authored by Mr. Faisal Fahim, Dr. Maurice Bucaille, Dr. Zakir Naik.**

**AND IT'S AVAILABLE ON AMAZON, [www.createpace.com](http://www.createpace.com)**

**This book is available worldwide from amazon and other online websites.**

**This book is in no way endorsed or sponsored by CreateSpace, Amazon, or their affiliates.**

The benefits of Salah the prayer performed in the Islamic way. This book describes both the worldly and spiritual benefits of Salah/salat/namaz.

**The benefits of Salah the prayer performed in the Islamic way.**

The benefits of Salah/salat/prayer performed in Islamic way. There are many benefits of Salah. There are 3 categories of the benefits of performing the Salah/salat/prayer/namaz. 1<sup>st</sup> is the physical benefits because it's like exercising such as causing movements in the human body during performing the prayer or Salah in Islam. 2<sup>nd</sup> is the spiritual and mental wellbeing that connects with performing the Islamic prayer/Salah/salat/namaz. When a Muslim bows his head to god on the floor, this increases the blood flow in the brain and it's done in a short period of time and it's temporary so it's good for the brain and mental health. Research shows praying the Islamic Salah can help mental wellbeing. 3<sup>rd</sup> is it connects with god spiritually which gives Muslims unlimited sawabs and rewards which will help a Muslim enter jannah/heaven in akhirat/here after which is the final life after death and its forever. So Salah can keep a person both mentally and physically fit as well as it will also help believers enter heaven because Muslims are fulfilling the commands of Allah and the purpose of life by worshiping & praying the mandatory the must pray the Salah's 5times a day by saying some verses of the holy Quran, remembering and connecting with the only true 1 god Allah the creator of all and everything.

**1 of the most recommended books of Mr.Faisal Fahim**

**THE BIBLE THE QURAN AND SCIENCE THE HOLY SCRIPTURES EXAMINED IN THE LIGHT OF MODERN KNOWLEDGE: A SUMMERY WITH MORE NEW INFORMATION**

**This book is available worldwide from amazon and other online websites.**

**This book is in no way endorsed or sponsored by CreateSpace, Amazon, or their affiliates.**

God is only 1 who is for forever and there is no other god but Allah, there was no other god but Allah & there will be no other god but Allah and since god is 1 so god's religion is also 1. the message of god and Islam is always the same that there

is only 1 god who has no partners no beginning nor end but god is for forever and Moses Jesus Muhammad are only prophets messengers of the same 1 god & the message is same that god is 1 without any partners like no father mother son daughter etc. God is most superior beyond our imagination & there is nothing comparable to god. science and history proves torah & bibles are changed corrupted .so god Allah sent the last revelation the Quran through angel Gabriel to last prophet Muhammad and since all other revelations have changed by humanity, Allah promised to keep the Quran same until the end times. False religions lead to hell but Islam is only way to heaven. So there isn't and will not be another god besides Allah & Moses Jesus Muhammad are only prophets messengers of Allah and Islam the only true religion. So Allah & Allah's religion Islam are for forever. This is the truth and this is Islam. Thank you for reading.

### Some Optional Prayers Sunnah Mu'akkadah with the five Obligatory Prayers of Islam

**1097.** Umm Habibah (May Allah be pleased with her) the Mother of the Believers reported: I heard the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) saying, "A house will be built in Jannah for every Muslim who offers twelve Rak`ah of optional Salat other than the obligatory Salat in a day and a night (to seek the Pleasure of Allah)."

[Muslim].

**Commentary:** Tatawwu` means to offer more Nawafil (optional prayers) on one's own after performing the Faraid (obligatory prayers). Thus, this Hadith tells us the merits of optional prayers and holds promise of (Jannah) for those who make it a practice.

**1098.** Ibn `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: I performed along with the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) two Rak`ah of optional prayers before Zuhr and two after the Zuhr (noon prayer), and two after the Friday prayer, and two after the Maghrib (evening) prayer, and two after the `Isha' (night) prayer."

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**Commentary:** There are two kinds of Nawafil which are performed before or after the obligatory prayer. Firstly, the one which were performed by the Prophet (PBUH) more frequently. According to the present Hadith, their total comes to ten Rak`ah while in other Ahadith their total is twelve or fourteen Rak`ah. They are called Sunnah Mu'akkadah or As-Sunnan Ar-Rawatib That is, the Rak`ah which are proved from the saying and practice of the Prophet (PBUH) and which were performed by him usually. These are said to be Compulsory prayers. Secondly, such Nawafil which were not performed by the Prophet (PBUH) regularly. These are called Sunnah Ghair Mu'akkadah and are said to be Optional prayers. In any case, Nawafil have great importance in creating a special link between the worshipper and Allah, and for this reason the believers do not neglect them. But their status in Shari`ah is of Nawafil the performing of which is rewarding and omission of which is not sinful. One thing that should be borne in mind in respect of As-Sunnan Ar-Rawatib or Mu'akkadah is that it is better to perform them at home. This was the usual practice of the Prophet (PBUH), and this is what he ordained the Muslims.

**1099.** `Abdullah bin Mughaffal (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) said, "There is a Salat (prayer) between every Adhan and Iqamah; there is a Salat between every Adhan and Iqamah." (While saying the same for the) third time (he (PBUH) added), "It is for him who desires (to perform it)."

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**Commentary:** The two Adhan here means Adhan and Iqamah, as has been elucidated by Imam An-Nawawi. That is, offering of two Rak`ah between Adhan and Iqamah is Mustahabb (desirable). It comes in the category of Ghair Ratiba or Ghair Mu'akkadah Nawafil. These Nawafil can be performed after the Adhan of every Salat before the congregation stands for the obligatory Salat.

#### Emphasis on Performing two Rak'ah Sunnah before Dawn (Fajr) Prayer

**1100.** `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) never omitted four Rak`ah prayer before the Zuhr prayer and two Rak`ah prayers before dawn (Fajr) prayer.

[Al-Bukhari].

**Commentary:** This Hadith tells us the practice of the Prophet (PBUH) in respect of the four Rak`ah Sunnah of Zuhr prayers and the two of Fajr prayers. He (PBUH) used to perform both regularly. Such Rak`ah are called Sunnah Rawatib or Sunnah Mu'akkadah (compulsory prayers).

**1101.** `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) did not attach more importance to any Nawafil prayer than the two Rak`ah of prayer before dawn (Fajr) prayer.

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**Commentary:** This Hadith tell us about the special preparation which the Prophet (PBUH) used to make for performing the two Rak`ah of Fajr prayers.

**1102.** `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) said, "The two Rak`ah before the dawn (Fajr) prayer are better than this world and all it contains."

[Muslim]

Another narration goes: "The two Rak`ah before the dawn (Fajr) prayer are dearer to me than the whole world."

**Commentary:** This Hadith tells us the merits of the two Rak`ah of Fajr prayers.

All the Ahadith mentioned above prove that the two Rak`ah of Fajr are highly meritorious, and one should not show any slackness or negligence in offering them.

**1103.** Abu `Abdullah Bilal bin Rabah (May Allah be pleased with him) the Mu'adhdhin of Messenger of Allah (PBUH) reported: I went to inform the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) about the time of the dawn (Fajr) prayer, and `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) kept me busy and began to ask me about something till the day grew bright. Then I got up and informed the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) of the time of Salat. I informed him again but he did not come out immediately to lead As-Salat. When he came out, he led As-Salat. I said to him: `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) kept me busy and thus diverted my attention by asking about something and the morning grew bright. You also came out late. Upon that the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) said, "I was engaged in performing two Rak`ah of Fajr prayer." Bilal (May Allah be pleased with him) said: "O Messenger of Allah! You delayed As-Salat so long as the morning grew bright." He (PBUH) replied, "Even if the morning had become brighter than it had, I would have performed two Rak`ah of prayer in an excellent manner."  
[Abu Dawud].

**Commentary:** This Hadith also tells us about the importance of the two Rak`ah of Fajr prayers and stresses the need to perform them with full concentration.

**Briefness to be Adopted in Performing the two Rak`ah Sunnah before Fajr Prayer, their time and the Surah to recite in them**

**1104.** `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) used to perform two Rak`ah short prayer between the Adhan (call to prayer) and the Iqamah of the dawn (Fajr) prayers.

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim]

In another narration, `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) said: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) used to perform two supererogatory Rak`ah prayer of Fajr and make them so short in duration that I used to think whether he (PBUH) had recited Surat Al-Fatihah (in it) or not.

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim]

In the narration of Muslim, `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) said: When the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) used to hear the Adhan (of Fajr prayer) he would perform two supererogatory Rak`ah prayer and would make them short.

**Commentary:** "Takhfif" here means that the Prophet (PBUH) used to shorten the standing, recitation, bowing, prostration, etc., in the two Rak`ah of Fajr prayer because soon after performing them he had to lead the Fajr prayer in which he would prolong his recitation. He would also offer these two Sunnah soon after the daybreak or Adhan, which gives an idea of the preparation he made for them.

**1105.** Hafsa (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) used to perform two short Rak`ah prayer when it was dawn and the Mu'adhdhin had called Adhan (for the Fajr prayer).

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**Commentary:** This Hadith tells us that the two Rak`ah of Fajr prayer should be performed after the daybreak not before it. One should also be brief in these two Rak`ah so that he is active and alert for performing the Fard (obligatory prayer).

**1106.** Ibn `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) used to perform his optional night prayers at night, two Rak`ah followed by two Rak`ah, and at the end he would conclude with an odd Rak`ah (Witr). Then he would perform two Rak`ah prayer before the dawn (Fajr) prayer after hearing the Adhan, and he would make them so brief as if he could hear the Iqamah being called.

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**Commentary:** "As if he could hear the Iqamah being called" here means that he would hasten the two Rak`ah of Fajr prayer to the point that one had the impression that he was hearing the voice of Iqamah and he was making haste for fear of missing of the Salat.

This Hadith also makes the following three points:

1. The optional prayer of the night should be offered in a series of two Rak`ah.

2. One Rak`ah of Witr is also correct.

3. The Sunnah of Fajr prayer should be offered soon after the Adhan, and one should be brief in them.

**1107.** Ibn `Abbas (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) used to recite during the two Rak`ah of Fajr prayer: "Say (O Muslims): We believe in Allah and that which has been sent down to us..." (2:136) which is in Surat Al-Baqarah in the first Rak`ah and the Verse: "We believe in Allah, and bear witness that we are Muslims (i.e., we submit to Allah." (3:52) in the second Rak`ah.

According to another narration, he (PBUH) recited from Surat Al-`Imran the Verses: "Come to a word which is just between us and you..." (3:64).

[Muslim].

**Commentary:** In the two Sunnah of Fajr prayer, the Prophet (PBUH) used to recite the two short Verses mentioned in this Hadith, after Surat Al-Fatihah.

**1108.** Abu Hurairah (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) recited in the two supererogatory Rak`ah of the Fajr prayer Surat Al-Kafirun (No. 109) [in the first Rak`ah], and Surat Al-Ikhlash (No. 112) [in the second Rak`ah].

[Muslim].

**1109.** Ibn `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: I observed the Prophet (PBUH) for one month reciting in the two supererogatory Rak`ah of the Fajr prayer Surat Al-Kafirun (No. 109) [in the first Rak`ah], and Surat Al-Ikhlash



(No. 112) [in the second Rak`ah].

[At-Tirmidhi].

**Commentary:** One can recite any Surah or Ayah in the two Sunnah of Fajr prayer, but if one recites the Verses mentioned in this Hadith, he will have the benefit of following the Sunnah of the Prophet (PBUH). Every Muslim should strive to follow the practice of the Prophet (PBUH) for the enrichment of his mind, soul and actions.

#### **Sunnah of Zuhr Prayer**

**1113.** Ibn `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: I performed with the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) two Rak`ah before and two after Zuhr prayers.

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**Commentary:** This Hadith has already been mentioned. See Commentary on Hadith No. 1098.

**1114.** `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) never omitted four Rak`ah supererogatory prayer before Zuhr prayers.

[Al-Bukhari].

**Commentary:** Some Ahadith state that he (PBUH) used to perform two Rak`ah before and two after Zuhr prayer. The present Hadith says that he used to perform four Rak`ah before Zuhr prayer. Both narrations are correct and can be followed according to conditions and circumstances.

**1115.** `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: Whenever the Prophet (PBUH) stayed in my house, he would perform four Rak`ah (supererogatory prayer) before Zuhr prayer. Then he would go out and lead Salat. He (PBUH) would then come back and perform two Rak`ah (supererogatory prayer). He would lead the Maghrib prayer and come back and perform two Rak`ah (supererogatory prayer). When he (PBUH) had led the `Isha' prayer, he would enter the house and perform two Rak`ah (supererogatory prayer).

[Muslim]

**1116.** Umm Habibah (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) said, "Whoever observes the practice of performing four Rak`ah before Zuhr prayer and four after the Zuhr prayer, Allah will shield him against the Fire (of Hell).

[Abu Dawud and At-Tirmidhi].

**Commentary:** This Ahadith mean that a person who follows this course of practice, will die as a Muslim and will not remain in Hell for ever like the Kuffar (infidels) unless Allah has forgiven all his sins for him and would, as a result, save him from Fire altogether. That is, Almighty Allah will not let him live in Hell for ever. According to some Ahadith, the fire of Hell will not touch him, which also amounts to saying that he will not be kept in Hell for all eternity. If a Muslim is liable to punishment, his stay in Hell - for a few days or weeks or months depending on the nature of his sins - is not a contravention of such Ahadith because he will ultimately be released from Hell and brought to Jannah. "Allah will shield him against the Fire" should not be taken to mean that a Muslim will not be sent to Hell no matter what he does. If Almighty Allah does not forgive him in the very first instance, he will have to suffer the torment of Hell as long as He would like and then he will be sent to Jannah.

**1117.** `Abdullah bin As-Sa'ib (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) used to perform four Rak`ah prayer after the declining of the sun before Zuhr prayer and would say, "This is an hour at which the gates of heaven are opened, and I like that my good deeds should rise to heaven at that time."

[At-Tirmidhi].

**Commentary:** The Prophet (PBUH) used to perform the four Rak`ah Sunnah of Zuhr prayer when the sun started declining. In fact, except for `Isha' prayer, he would perform every Salat at its early hours.

The phrase "the gates of heaven are opened" to means that the good deeds that people do are lifted to heavens at that time.

**1118.** `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with her) reported: If the Prophet (PBUH) could not perform four Rak`ah before Zuhr prayer, he would perform them after it (i.e., after the obligatory prayer).

[At-Tirmidhi].

**Commentary:** This Hadith tells us about the preparation which the Prophet (PBUH) used to make for performing the Sunnah. Every Muslim should, therefore, make full preparation for performing Sunnah. If one is unable to perform it before the Fard prayer, then one must do it afterwards.

#### **Sunnah of the `Asr Prayer**

**1119.** `Ali bin Abu Talib (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) used to perform four Rak`ah before the `Asr prayer, separating them with Taslim (i.e., offering blessings) on the favourite angels who are near Allah's proximity and the Muslims and the believers who come after them.

[At-Tirmidhi].

**Commentary:** The phrase "separating them with Taslim" means that he would perform four Rak`ah in two couplets.

**1120.** Ibn `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) said, "May Allah have mercy on a man who performs four Rak`ah before the `Asr prayer."

[Abu Dawud and At-Tirmidhi].

**Commentary:** These four Rak`ah can be performed in two couplets also, as was the practice of the Prophet (PBUH), according to the preceding Hadith. It can be performed with one Taslim also. Both forms are correct and permissible. Some scholars are of the opinion that the former method is better. `Ulama' have stated that these four

Sunnah of `Asr prayer are Ghair Mu'akkadah (optional prayers). Its importance is however evident from the fact that the Prophet (PBUH) prayed for mercy on those who performed these Sunnah.

**1121.** `Ali bin Abu Talib (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) used to perform two Rak`ah before the `Asr prayer.

[Abu Dawud].

**Commentary:** We learn from this Hadith that one can also perform two Sunnah before `Asr prayer. But Sheikh Al-Albani has stated that the word "two Rak`ah" occurring in this Hadith is rare. Four Rak`ah are secure and should, therefore, be preferred.

#### **Sunnah of the Maghrib Prayer**

[In the previous chapter, the practice of the Prophet (PBUH) has been reported by `Umar and `Aishah (May Allah be pleased with them) that he (PBUH) used to perform two Rak`ah Sunnah after the obligatory Maghrib prayer].

**1122.** `Abdullah bin Mughaffal (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) said, "Perform two Rak`ah before Maghrib prayer." He (PBUH) repeated it twice; when repeating it for the third time he added: "He who may so wish."

[Al-Bukhari].

**Commentary:** This Salat means that the two Rak`ah are performed after the Adhan of Maghrib prayer but before the Fard Salat. This is elucidated by other Ahadith. Although this has the position of Sunnah Ghair Mu'akkadah, its importance is evident from the fact that the Prophet (PBUH) stressed it three times. Usually an order (Amr) signifies that the act is "essential" but here the decency embedded in the words "He who may so wish" has turned it to "desirable". In any case, inducement and stress of the Prophet (PBUH) on this Salat has left no room to doubt that it is desirable. Ahadith which follow lend further support to this contention.

**1123.** Anas (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: I saw the principal Companions of Messenger of Allah (PBUH) rushing to the pillars (of the mosque) to perform two Rak`ah prayers behind them before the Maghrib prayer.

[Al-Bukhari].

**Commentary:** "Rushing to the pillars" here refers to the haste which the Companions of the Prophet (PBUH) usually showed in occupying the place near the pillars to perform the two Rak`ah before Maghrib prayer. Thus, this Hadith confirms the practice of the Companions of the Prophet (PBUH) in respect of the two Rak`ah performed before Maghrib prayer.

**1124.** Anas (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: In the lifetime of the Messenger of Allah (PBUH), we used to perform two Rak`ah (optional prayer) after sunset before the Maghrib prayer. It was asked: "Did Messenger of Allah (PBUH) perform them?" He replied: "He saw us performing it, but he neither ordered us to perform them nor did he forbid us from doing so."

[Muslim].

**Commentary:** This Hadith mentions the practice of the Companions of the Prophet (PBUH) in respect of two Rak`ah performed before Maghrib prayer. They sometimes performed these Rak`ah in the presence of the Prophet (PBUH). Thus according to the narration of Anas (May Allah be pleased with ihm) their being in practice is proved. But this statement of Anas is according to his own knowledge, otherwise, we have already seen a Hadith in which the Prophet (PBUH) stressed the need to perform them by way of inducement. Thus, it is proved by his speech as well.

**1125.** Anas bin Malik (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: When we were in Al-Madinah, the moment the Mu'adhhdhin finished the Adhan of the Maghrib prayer, the people hastened to the pillars of the mosque and performed two Rak`ah prayer behind them. A stranger coming into the mosque would think that the obligatory prayer had already been performed because of the number of people performing them.

[Muslim].

**Commentary:** This Hadith shows that it was usual with the Companions of the Prophet (PBUH) to perform two Rak`ah before Maghrib in the Prophet's mosque. But in spite of this fact these are Sunnah Ghair Mu'akkadah while the two performed after the Salat are Sunnah Mu'akkadah.

#### **Sunnah of the 'Isha' Prayer**

[Ibn `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) has narrated that he performed two Rak`ah after the Fard prayer of `Isha' with the Prophet (PBUH). `Abdullah bin Mughaffal has narrated that the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) has said, "There is a Salat between every Takbir and Adhan."

This proves that apart from the four Rak`ah Fard, there are also two Rak`ah Sunnah of the `Isha' prayer). See Ahadith No. 1098 and 1099.

#### **Sunnah of Friday Prayer**

`Abdullah bin `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: I performed along with the Prophet (PBUH) two Rak`ah (Sunnah prayer) after the Jumu'ah prayer.

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**1126.** Abu Hurairah (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) said, "If anyone of you performs the Friday prayer, he should perform four Rak`ah (Sunnah) after it."

[Muslim].

**1127.** Ibn `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) would not perform any Salat (in the mosque) after the Friday prayer till he had returned to his house. He would then perform two Rak`ah there. [Muslim].

**Commentary:** In one Hadith, there is mention of four Rak`ah, while in the other it is mentioned as two Rak`ah. It can be deduced that both of these are acceptable. `Ulama' are of the opinion that one who performs them in the mosque, should perform four Rak`ah; whereas the one performing them at home, should perform two Rak`ah with one Taslim. It is better to perform them in twos as the Prophet (PBUH) is reported to have said, "Perform the Nawafil of the day and night in twos." (Al-Bukhari).

#### **Desirability of offering Nawafil (Voluntary or Optional) Prayers at Home**

**1128.** Zaid bin Thabit (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) said, "O people! perform your (voluntary) Salat (prayers) in your homes because the best Salat of a man is the one he performs at home, except the obligatory Salat."

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**Commentary:** This Hadith tells us that the Nawafil and Sunnah prayers should be performed at home. It goes without saying that all the Fard constituents of every Salat are to be performed in the mosque (Masjid) in congregation. The order to perform the Nawafil prayers at home shows its merits. Firstly, it saves a person from showing off, and secondly, houses are blessed due to them.

**1129.** Ibn `Umar (May Allah be pleased with them) reported: The Prophet (PBUH) said, "Observe part of the [Nawafil (voluntary)] Salat (prayers) in your homes. Do not turn your homes into graves."

[Al-Bukhari and Muslim].

**Commentary:** "Observe part of the Salat (prayers) in your homes" here means Nawafil and Sunnah. The houses in which Nawafil are not performed are like graveyards. Such houses are like graves which have no scope for action and worship and are thus deprived of their reward, which is a great deprivation indeed.

**1130.** Jabir (May Allah be pleased with him) reported: The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) said, "When you have finished your (Fard) Salat (prayer) in the mosque, you should observe some of your (Sunnah and Nawafil) Salat at home; Allah will bless your homes because of your Salat (in your homes)."

[Muslim]

**Commentary:** This Hadith has the same message which is conveyed by the preceding Ahadith namely that the Fard Salat should be performed in the Masjid (mosque) while some of the supererogatory, optional and voluntary prayers should be performed at home.

**1131.** `Umar bin `Ata reported that Nafi` bin Jubair sent him to Sa'ib bin Ukht Namir to ask him about something that Mu`awiyah had seen him doing in Salat (prayer). He said: "Yes, I performed the Friday prayer along with him in the enclosure (Maqsurah), and when the Imam concluded the Salat with Taslim, I stood up in my place and performed the Sunnah prayer. When Mu`awiyah went home, he sent for me (and when I came) he said: "Never do again what you have done. When you have observed the Friday prayer, you must not start another Sunnah prayer till you have spoken to some one or have shifted your place; because the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) ordered us not to follow up the congregational Salat with any other Salat until we have talked (to some one) or moved from the place."

[Muslim].

**Commentary:** "Maqsurah" was an enclosure in a mosque or a place which was made there for the security of rulers. When Muslim caliphs and rulers used to perform their prayers in congregation, they would occupy this place. The word "Friday" (Jumu`ah) has been mentioned here because of the incident reported in it, otherwise, this order applies to every Salat and is not restricted to Jumu`ah alone. There is a standing order that one must separate the Fard and the Sunnah of a Salat by some means, like thikr, conversation, changing place of the Salat, going out of the Masjid, etc.

#### **First Amendment: FREEDOM OF SPEECH!**

**The only reason Israel belongs to the Jews now is because the Torah or Old Testament says God gave Israel to the Jews. And both Christians and Jews believe in this bible and they also believe they are the chosen people. so they have driven the Muslims out of their homes & lands & gave it to the Jews. Which is the main reason why the terrorists attacked America on 9/11? The terrorist have said their reason for this was the American support for creating Israel and continuing their support even when the Jews were bombing the schools, hospitals, homes of Palestine.**

**Nothing justifies terrorism or revenge and Islam had nothing to do with 9/11. It was an act of the evil of the human nature which is to seek revenge. After 9/11 revenge was the cause of war on Afghanistan & greed for oil was the cause of war on Iraq so the weapons of master destruction / nuclear weapon whatever they said Iraq has before the war was never found because it was only a false accusation and propaganda only.**

**According to the Quran if someone suicide that person will go to hell forever. The Glorious Qur'an says: "...take not life, which God hath made sacred, except by way of justice and law: thus doth He command you, that ye may learn wisdom." [Al-Qur'an 6:151]**

If the Torah/ Old Testament had never said that god gave Israel to the Jews then Christians & Jews have never formed Israel. And if Israel had not formed by the Jews and Christians then the Muslims of Israel didn't have to lose their homes and lands .If these had never happened the some group of Ignorant Muslim terrorists were not going to cause 9/11 ever! It's the most disgusting act of evil which has been done in the history of mankind. But it was an act of revenge & Islam is against revenge .Islam teaches to forgive because the prophet Muhammad said if people forgive others god will forgive the people who will forgive others. Some people were burning some birds but the prophet Muhammad (pbuh) told them not to burn them because only god has the right to burn someone & which is in hell. So Islam is completely a religion 100% against terrorism because it's a religion of peace & mercy.

So the bible is the only reason why Jews and Christians believe they are the chosen people & they created the current Israel for Jews and drove the Muslims out of their lands & homes because bible says God gave Israel to the Jews. And even the terrorist said this was the reason for 9/11.if the bible didn't have these crazy things the Israel would never had formed.so if the bible didn't have existed the 9/11 would never had happened .so the bottom line is the only reason 9/11 happened is because of the bible and Islam had nothing to do with it. 9/11 was an act of revenge and Islam is a religion of forgiveness so, revenge is not a part of Islam. Islam is the religion of peace and mercy.

**Why Christianity and Judaism are corrupted and why their holy books are written by men?  
Proof that their books have changed because these can't be words of a loving God!**

He got drunk and impregnated his virgin daughters. Come, let us make our father drink wine, and we will lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. And they made their father drink wine that night: and the firstborn went in, and lay with her father; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. Behold, I lay yesternight with my father: let us make him drink wine this night also; and go thou in, and lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. And they made their father drink wine that night also: and the younger arose, and lay with him; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. Thus were both the daughters of Lot with child by their father. Genesis 19:32-36

Religious tolerant:

Deuteronomy 13:6-10

If thy brother, the son of thy mother, or thy son, or thy daughter, or the wife of thy bosom, or thy friend, which is as thine own soul, entice thee secretly, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which thou hast not known, thou, nor thy fathers; Namely, of the gods of the people which are round about you, nigh unto thee, or far off from thee, from the one end of the earth even unto the other end of the earth; Thou shalt not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; neither shall thine eye pity him, neither shalt thou spare, neither shalt thou conceal him: But thou shalt surely kill him; thine hand shall be first upon him to put him to death, and afterwards the hand of all the people. And thou shalt stone him with stones, that he die.

2 Chronicles 15:13

Whosoever would not seek the LORD God of Israel should be put to death, whether small or great, whether man or woman.

And Moses said unto them, Have ye saved all the women alive? ... Now therefore kill every male among the little ones, and kill every woman that hath known man by lying with him. But all the women children, that have not known a man by lying with him, keep alive for yourselves. -- Numbers 31:15-18

APOSTASY: " . . neither shall thine eye pity him (the apostate), neither shalt thou spare him, neither shalt thou conceal him: "But thou shalt SURELY KILL HIM: thine hand shall be first upon him TO PUT HIM TO DEATH . . .DEUTERONOMY I 3 -8 9

I am not saying all Christians or Jews are bad because there are many good Jews and Christians who don't follow the words of the bible or torah and are very good people but I do believe the bible is the root of many evil actions done on earth.

Let me give some examples which I have arranged even though some people will deny but still facts remains facts whether they like it or not!

Crusades, holocaust, some priests rape children inside the churches; some Christian leaders dropped a nuclear bomb on japan. Or they did these horrible acts like these: George W. Bush Jr. - Christian, Turned Iraq war into a religious war by saying "god told him to invade Iraq", increase taxes on the middle class and poor, cut taxes for the rich

Nazism - Christians Adolph Hitler - Christian/Catholic Newt Gingrich - Christian Inquisitions - Christian Ugandan Christians Salem Witch burnings - Christian Waco Texas - Christian Jones Town - Christian San Diego Heaven's Gate - Christian Serbians - Christian Skin Heads - Christians IRA ( Irish Republican Army ) - Christian Iron Guard - Christian Westboro Baptist church - Christians Christian Tsarist Russia - Christian The Crusades - Christian & Catholic The Troubles - Catholic & Christian The Holocaust - Catholic & Christian The Book burnings - Catholic & Christian The heretic burnings - Christian Backing of the institution of slavery!!!!----

I don't blame Jews and Christians for what they have been doing from the past till now but I do blame it's the fault of their religions!

So the bible is responsible for many evil acts done in our world and creating Israel was just 1 of them which caused 9/11. The bottom line is the words of the bible are the main cause of 9/11 if the bible didn't have existed the current Israel never had formed and so as 9/11 would not have happened. 9/11 and the current Israel are both results of the words of the old testament /Torah/Bible.

**BY MR.FAISAL FAHIM**

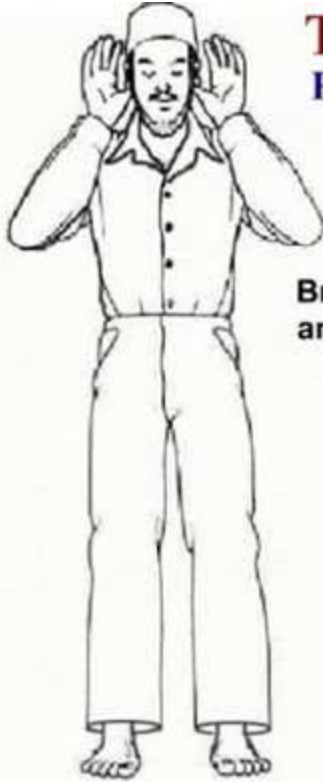
1 of The most recommended book of MR.FAISAL IS ("**The Bible, the Qu'ran and Science: The Holy Scriptures Examined in the Light of Modern Knowledge: 4 books in 1**") **Authored by Mr. Faisal Fahim, Dr. Maurice Bucaille, Dr. Zakir Naik.**  
**AND IT'S AVAILABLE ON AMAZON, [www.barnesandnoble.com](http://www.barnesandnoble.com),  
[wwwcreatespace.com/4459947](http://wwwcreatespace.com/4459947)**

**Message from the author:** My intention is not to criticize any one's beliefs. It's okay to agree or disagree with my book. This entire book is not totally written by me. It is based on a research project done by me. The book is as the title goes. The information is arranged & organized by me & all sources of all documents or information is mentioned inside the book. Purpose of my book is to share the knowledge which is available in many sources & I have mentioned them in the book. Hope you enjoy & share my book. "The greatest creation of god is us. The true race of us the 1 & only us, all of us the mankind simply 1 race of humanity. Love is the only antidote of hate. So, love, peace & God bless for all. Knowledge is not only power but it is indeed freedom to speak out the truth of an existence and I will share it to set it free. Thank you for reading.

**DID ISLAM EXIST BEFORE MUHAMMAD?**

God does not born or die he is forever. Jesus, Moses, Mohammad & all other people of Bible, Quran & Torah were great messengers prophets of god not sons of god they were created by 1 true god, creator, Allah. So any creation can't be the 1 creator Allah. So they were messengers, prophets of god. How can creator be part of what he has created Himself!!! So he is not part of any creation again he is not a creation & has no partners no father, mother, daughter, son, brother, sister, wife & no gender simply unique beyond comparable & 1 & 1 only. From Adam to Jesus god sent his messages for every generation or period of time but it was always destroyed by mankind & the devils conspiracy to take mankind towards hell. Because all previous books were massed up by humans Allah sent his last messenger not son or god, but messenger Mohammad & sent him Quran & it's messages to guide humans towards Allah & heaven. Allah has promised to Keep Quran same until the Day of Judgment & challenged humans to create another accurate book like Quran & said if you can't then surrender to your lord (the only way of peace & heaven). Majority of things science has discovered until now 80% of Quran had all those undiscovered answers from the last 1400 years when science didn't have any answers. The other 20% answer was & is in Quran. Maybe it will take science another 1400 years to find it. All 100% answers are in Quran. Science can't prove a single verse of Quran wrong. If you do a research on Quran, bible and science you will find facts. Facts are stranger than fiction. In the bible it says Jesus bowed his head on floor just like Muslims bow their head on floor while praying. You should do research on bible, Quran & science if you believe in god so you can find facts on Islam. If I teach a parrot a message & send it to someone & parrot tells the message to that person and leaves & that person starts saying that parrot is my son that would make no sense, because that was my messenger not son. Jesus was taken up alive & after that people started calling him son of god. He came to establish Islam & was a messenger of 1 god. Christianity started after Jesus was gone, Jesus will come back & die as a human & Muslim. Quran is the only accurate 100% words of god & word of god can't have errors then it would not be word of god & according to science bibles & Torahs has many errors but they can't prove a verse in Quran wrong. Muslims believe there is no god but Allah & Prophet Mohammad is the last & final prophet & messenger of Allah.

Adam, Abraham, Noah, Moses, Jesus, Muhammad were all messengers & prophets of 1 God Allah so Islam is the 1<sup>st</sup> religion & it's the last religion because God is Allah & God is forever so is God's religion which is only Islam & it is also forever. Finally Islam always existed even before Adam, Abraham, Noah, Moses, Jesus & Muhammad because it's the only true religion from God Allah.



## TAKBEERAT

### Posture 1

#### Instructions:

Bring hands, palms open, up to ears,  
and place thumbs behind earlobes, and say

اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ

Allah-o-Akbar  
Allah is the Greatest



## AL-QAYYAM

### Posture 2

#### Recitation:

سُبْحَانَكَ اللَّهُمَّ وَبِحَمْدِكَ  
وَتَبَارَكَ اسْمُكَ وَتَعَالَى جَدُّكَ  
وَلَا إِلَهَ غَيْرُكَ

SUBHÁNA-KALLÁH-HUM-MA WA BI-HAMDIKA,  
WATABÁRAKAS-MUKA WATA'ÁLÁ JADDUKA,  
WA-LÁ ILÁHA GHAÍRUK

O Allah, Glorified, praise-worthy.  
and blessed is Thy Name and exalted Thy Majesty.  
and there is no deity worthy of worship except thee.



## AL-QAYYAM

Recitation:

أَعُوذُ بِاللَّهِ مِنَ الشَّيْطَانِ الرَّجِيمِ

A'Ú-DHU-BIL-LÁ-HI MINASHAITÁNIR RAJÍM

I seek refuge in Allah for the rejected Satan

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

BISMILÁHIR RAHMÁNIR RAHÍM

In the Name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful

After this recite the opening Surah, Al-Fátihah:

Recitation:

ALHAMDU LIL-LÁHI RAB-BIL 'ÁLAMÍN  
Praise be to Allah, Lord of the worlds

AR-RAHMÁ-NIR RAHÍM  
The Beneficent, the Merciful

MÁLIKI YAU-MID-DÍN  
Master of the Day of Judgement

IYYÁ-KA N'ABUDU WA-IYYÁKA NASTA'ÍN  
Thee alone we worship and to thee alone we turn for help

IHDI-NAS-SIRÁ-TAL MUSTAQÍM  
Guide us in the straight path

SIRÁ TAL-LADHÍNA AN-'AMTA 'ALÁIHIM  
The path of those whom You favored

GHAIR-IL MAGHDUBI 'ALÁIHIM  
and who did not deserve Thy anger.

WALAD-DÁL-LIN (AMIN)  
Or went astray.

Recite any other surah now

الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ

الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

مَلِكِ يَوْمِ الدِّينِ

إِيَّاكَ نَعْبُدُ وَإِيَّاكَ نَسْتَعِينُ

اهْدِنَا الصِّرَاطَ الْمُسْتَقِيمَ

صِرَاطَ الَّذِينَ أَنْعَمْتَ عَلَيْهِمْ

غَيْرِ الْمَغْضُوبِ عَلَيْهِمْ

وَلَا الضَّالِّينَ

Recitation:

Recite this Surah or Any other Surah

قُلْ هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ ۝ اللَّهُ الصَّمَدُ ۝  
لَمْ يَلِدْ ۝ وَلَمْ يُولَدْ ۝  
وَلَمْ يَكُنْ لَهُ كُفُوًا أَحَدٌ

QUL HOWALLAHU AHAD. ALLAAHUS-SAMAD

Say: He is God, The One and The Only. God, the Eternal, Absolute;

LAM YALID; WA LAM YOOLAD

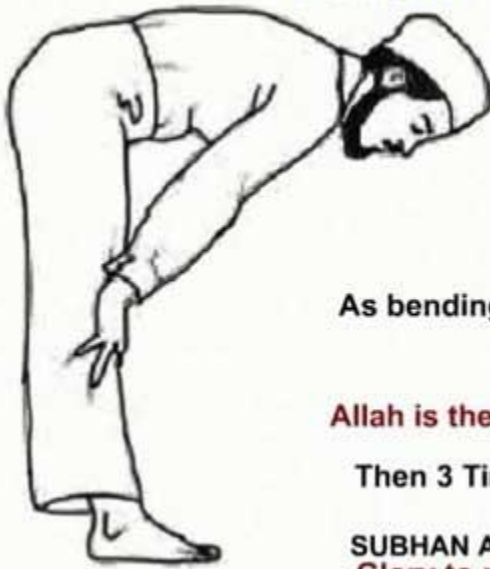
He begetteth not, Nor is He begotten;

WA LAM YAKULLAHOO KUFUWAN AHAD

And there is none Like unto Him.

## RUKU

### Posture 3



#### Instructions:

Bend down at waist, placing palms of hands with fingers spread over knees. Back is parallel to ground, such that if a glass of water were on the back, it would not spill. Eyes looking down, directly ahead.

As bending at the waist, recite

Allah is the Greatest

Then 3 Times

SUBHAN A RABBIYAL AZEEM  
Glory to my Lord, the reatest

اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ  
سُبْحَانَ رَبِّيَ الْعَظِيمِ





## QAYYAM

### Posture 4

#### Instructions:

While rising from the bending position of Ruku', recite

سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ  
SAMI 'ALLÁHU LIMAN HAMIDAH  
Allah has heard all who praise Him

RAB-BANÁ LAKAL HAMD  
Our Lord: Praise be to Thee  
Then return to standing position, arms at side

رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْعِزُّ

#### Recitation

ALLÁH AKBAR  
Allah is the greatest

اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ

*and move to next position*

## SAJJDAH

### Posture 5



#### Instructions:

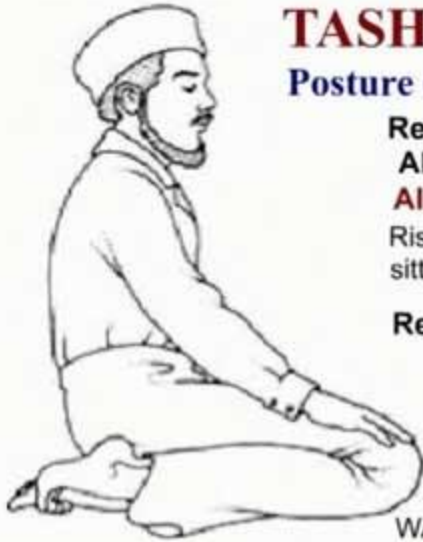
Go down to a kneeling position by placing both hands on knees, lowering oneself slowly and easily onto knees, then touch the head upon the ground so that the following seven body parts are in contact: forehead, two palms, two knees, toes of both feet

#### Recitation

Recite 3 Times

سُبْحَانَ رَبِّيَ الْأَعْلَى

SUBHÁNA RÁB-BI-YAL A'ALÁ  
Glory to my Lord, the most high



## TASHAHHUD

### Posture 6

Reciting  
**ALLÁH AKBAR**  
**Allah is the greatest**

Rise from the SAJJDAH position, and assume the sitting posture shown to the left.

#### Recitation

اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لِي وَارْحَمْنِي وَاهْدِنِي  
وَعَافِنِي وَارْفَعْنِي وَاجْبُرْنِي وَارْزُقْنِي

ALLAAHUM MAGH-FIRLEE WARHAM-NEE WAHDI-NEE  
WA 'AFI-NEE WARFA'NEE WAJ-BUR-NEE WAR-ZUQ-NEE

Then recite

**ALLÁH AKBAR**  
**Allah is the greatest**

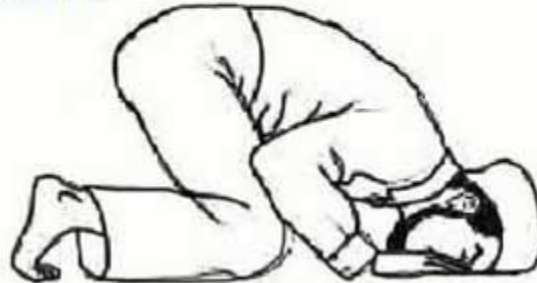
*And then assume SAJJDAH position once more*

اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ

اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ

## SAJJDAH

### Posture 7



#### Instructions:

Go down to a kneeling position by placing both hands on knees, lowering oneself slowly and easily onto knees, then touch the head upon the ground so that the following seven body parts are in contact: forehead, two palms, two knees, toes of both feet

#### Recitation

Recite 3 Times

سُبْحَانَ رَبِّيَ الْأَعْلَى

**SUBHÁNA RÁB-BI-YAL A'ALÁ**  
**Glory to my Lord, the most high**

## QUOOD

### Posture 8

#### Instructions:

If the required number of Rakats is but two, the Salat would proceed to the next recitation

#### Recitation



التَّجْنِثَاتِ لِلَّهِ وَالصَّلَوَاتِ وَالطَّيِّبَاتِ  
السَّلَامُ عَلَيْكَ أَيُّهَا النَّبِيُّ  
وَرَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ وَبَرَكَاتُهُ  
السَّلَامُ عَلَيْنَا وَعَلَى عِبَادِ اللَّهِ الصَّالِحِينَ  
أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ  
وَأَشْهَدُ أَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا عَبْدُهُ وَرَسُولُهُ

## QUOOD

### Posture 8

#### Recitation

AT-TAHI-YÁTU LIL-LÁHI WAS-SALAWÁTU WAT-TAY-YIBÁTU.

All prayers and worship through words, action and sanctity are for Allah only.

AS-SALÁMU 'ALAIKA AY-YUHAN-NABIY-YU.

Peace be on you, O Prophet.

WARAHMATUL-LÁHI WABARAKÁTUH.

And Mercy of Allah and His blessings.

AS-SALÁMU 'ALAINÁ WA'ALÁ 'IBÁDIL-LÁHIS-SÁLIHÍN.

Peace be on us and on those who are righteous servants of Allah.

ASH-HADU AL-LÁ ILÁHA IL-LAL-LAHÚ.

I bear witness to the fact that there is no deity but Allah.

WA-ASH-HADU AN-NA MUHAMMADAN 'ABDUHU WARASÚLUH

I bear witness that Muhammad is His slave and messenger

#### Instructions:

In the three raka'át (i.e. Maghrib) or four raka'át (Like Zuhr, 'Asr and 'Ishá) Saláh you stand up for the remaining raka'át after Tashahhud. On the other hand if it is two raka'át (Fajr) Saláh, keep sitting and after this recite Darud (blessing for the Prophet) in these words:



## QUOOD

### Posture 8

### Recitation



اللَّهُمَّ صَلِّ عَلَى مُحَمَّدٍ وَعَلَى آلِ مُحَمَّدٍ  
كَمَا صَلَّيْتَ عَلَى إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَعَلَى آلِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ  
إِنَّكَ حَمِيدٌ مَجِيدٌ ط

AL-LÁHUM-MA SAL-LI 'ALÁ MUHAMMAD-IW WA 'ALÁ ÁLI MUHAMMADIN  
O Alláh, exalt Muhammad and the followers of Muhammad

KAMÁ SAL-LAITA 'ALÁ IBRÁHÍMA WA'ALÁ ÁLI IBRÁHÍMA  
As thou did exalt Ibrahim and his followers

IN-NAKA HAMÍDUM-MAJEED  
Thou art the praised, the Glorious

## QUOOD

### Posture 8

### Recitation



اللَّهُمَّ بَارِكْ عَلَى مُحَمَّدٍ  
وَعَلَى آلِ مُحَمَّدٍ  
كَمَا بَارَكْتَ عَلَى إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَعَلَى آلِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ  
إِنَّكَ حَمِيدٌ مَجِيدٌ ط

AL-LÁHUM-MA BÁRIK 'ALÁ MUHAMMAD-IW  
O Alláh, bless Muhammad

WA 'ALÁ ÁLI MUHAMMADIN  
and his followers

KAMÁBÁRAKTA 'ALÁ IBRÁHÍMA WA 'ALÁ ÁLI IBRÁHÍMA  
as Thou has blest Ibrahim and his followers

IN-NAKA HAMÍDUM-MAJEED  
Thou art the Praised, The Glorious

## QUOOD

### Posture 8

### Recitation



رَبِّ اجْعَلْنِي مُقِيمَ الصَّلَاةِ وَمِنْ ذُرِّيَّتِي  
رَبَّنَا وَتَقَبَّلْ دُعَاءَ، رَبَّنَا اغْفِرْ لِي وَلِوَالِدَيَّ  
وَلِلْمُؤْمِنِينَ يَوْمَ يَقُومُ الْحِسَابُ

O Lord! Make me one who establishes regular Prayer,  
and also (raise such) among my offspring  
O our Lord! and accept thou my Prayer  
O Lord! cover (us) with Thy forgiveness - me, my parents and all believers,  
on they Day that the Reckoning will be established

### Posture 9



#### Instructions:

Now turn your face to the right saying

السَّلَامُ عَلَيْكُمْ وَرَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ

AS-SALÁMU 'ALAIKUM WA-RAHMATUL-LÁH

Peace be on you and Allah's blessings.

Now turn your face to the left saying

السَّلَامُ عَلَيْكُمْ وَرَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ

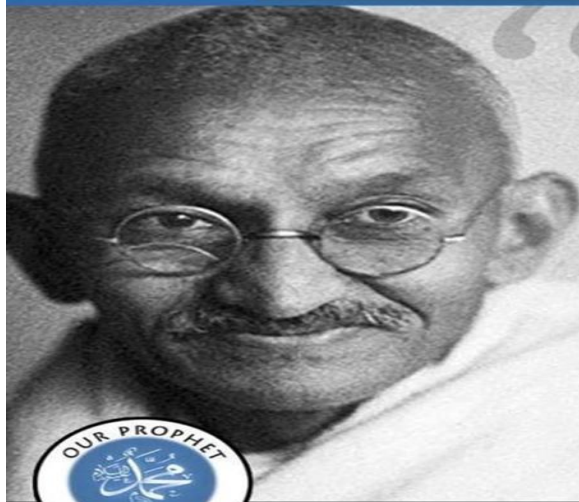
AS-SALÁMU 'ALAIKUM WA-RAHMATUL-LÁH

Peace be on you and Allah's blessings.

# 1

## NON-MUSLIM VIEWS ABOUT MUHAMMAD

PEACE BE UPON HIM



I wanted to know the best of the life of one who holds today an undisputed sway over the hearts of millions of mankind.... I became more than ever convinced that it was not the sword that won a place for Islam in those days in the scheme of life. It was the rigid simplicity, the utter self-effacement of the Prophet the scrupulous regard for pledges, his intense devotion to his friends and followers, his intrepidity, his fearlessness, his absolute trust in God and in his own mission. These and not the sword carried everything before them and surmounted every obstacle. When I closed the second volume (of the Prophet's biography), I was sorry there was not more for me to read of that great life.

**Mahatma Gandhi**

Information arranged and organized by MR.FAISAL FAHIM

Christianity teaches god is 3in1 and Jesus is son of god which makes it a polytheist religion similar to Hinduism since they believe god is 3million 33 thousand 300 in 1.And Christianity worships a man called Jesus just like Buddhists worship a man called Buddha. Since Mariam is mother of Jesus and the father and son are 1 then Maryam is also the mother of god the father so Christianity is simply not logical and a false man made religion. Judaism believes in 1 god but you have to born from a Jew to be a Jew so it makes no sense because true religion of god should be for the whole of humanity not for just a group of people!. Some Jews don't even believe in heaven or hell. Torah teaches the earth has pillars corners which is false. True religion should teach it's for the whole of humanity so any race of people or any 1 can convert to it and it should teach god is only 1in1 and has no partners and Islam is the only religion which is for every1 who wants to convert its not Judaism and Islam also teaches god is simply and only 1 not 3in1. The holy ghost was no god maybe peter and Paul were possessed by Satan and thought it was god and called it holy ghost.so following the false illogical religions is like following the Satan and the ultimate goal of Satan is to take humankind towards hell & make people associate false partners with god like holy spirit etc. Torah and Bible are full of errors and god never errors only Satan and humans errors. Arabic Quran has no errors but translations and printings can have errors. Muhammad received the Quran through angel Gabriel from god. Quran is the last final revelation from god to Prophet Muhammad the last final seal of prophets. He received the Quran which completed the religion of god and with Quran all other previous holy books were cancelled by god and Quran is the only book to be followed and Islam is the complete religion from god for the whole of humanity. Since Judaism teaches there is no heaven or hell it clears that their holy books have been changed they are corrupted & are full of errors so it is a man-made religion. Islam tells god created this world for humans & humans are created for akhirat which refers to heaven & hell. Sins lead us to hell and praying, worshipping leads us to rewards & heaven. Christianity teaches god is 3in1 & their gods are 1god the father, 2 god Jesus the son of god, 3 the holy ghost or spirit so Christianity is simply a polytheist religion. All these makes it clear that Judaism & Christianity have been changed & are corrupted so they have errors & they are false man made religions. Islam is the only religion which is for whole of humanity & teaches in 1 god only & believes in hell & heaven in the same time & says to hope and pray for going to heaven. So Islam is the final & complete religion of God and all other religions such as Christianity & Judaism are incomplete false man made changed, corrupted religions with errors. The original torah and bible don't exist anymore & Allah will protect the Quran until the Day of Judgment. So there is no other god except 1 Allah alone and Moses, Jesus and Muhammad are only prophets and messengers of god.

This book is like a little dictionary. Please share the book and the knowledge of the book. If you read this book please pray for me to Allah to give me the best Jannah/heaven. Thank you and may Allah give you best Jannah/heaven too. Ameen.  
Sincerely, (Faisal Fahim)

More books by Ahmed Deedat are freely available on  
[https://archive.org/details/Shk\\_Ahmed\\_Deedats\\_Books](https://archive.org/details/Shk_Ahmed_Deedats_Books)

And these books can be downloaded for free.

According to Islam the statements of the Torah and Bible which do not contradict but rather matches with Quran Hadith and Islam are accurate but other statements which goes against the teachings of Quran Sunnah prophet Muhammad pbuh and Islam are errors made by humans. So those are not from God. Muslims believe prophet Muhammad is mentioned in the OT and NT = Torah and Bible. But Jews and Christians deny it. So they follow the teachings of the Church and synagogue and do not follow what is written in their holy books. Quran is 100% words God. So if anything and whatever would contradict with Holy Quran is not accurate because Quran is 100% accurate and both Shia and Sunni follow the same 1 Arabic Quran.

◀ Numbers 23:19 ▶

Parallel Verses

New International Version

God is not human, that he should lie, not a human being, that he should change his mind. Does he speak and then not act? Does he promise and not fulfill?

New Living Translation

God is not a man, so he does not lie. He is not human, so he does not change his mind. Has he ever spoken and failed to act? Has he ever promised and not carried it through?

English Standard Version

God is not man, that he should lie, or a son of man, that he should change his mind. Has he said, and will he not do it? Or has he spoken, and will he not fulfill it?

New American Standard Bible

"God is not a man, that He should lie, Nor a son of man, that He should repent; Has He said, and will He not do it? Or has He spoken, and will He not make it good?"

King James Bible

God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: hath he said, and shall he not do it? or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good?

Holman Christian Standard Bible

**God is not a man who lies, or a son of man who changes His mind. Does He speak and not act, or promise and not fulfill?**

**International Standard Version**

**God is not a human male— he doesn't lie, nor is he a human being— he never vacillates. Once he speaks up, he's going to act, isn't he? Once he makes a promise, he'll fulfill it, won't he?**

**NET Bible**

**God is not a man, that he should lie, nor a human being, that he should change his mind. Has he said, and will he not do it? Or has he spoken, and will he not make it happen?**

**GOD'S WORD® Translation**

**God is not like people. He tells no lies. He is not like humans. He doesn't change his mind. When he says something, he does it. When he makes a promise, he keeps it.**

**JPS Tanakh 1917**

**God is not a man, that He should lie; Neither the son of man, that He should repent: When He hath said, will He not do it? Or when He hath spoken, will He not make it good?**

**New American Standard 1977**

**“God is not a man, that He should lie,  
Nor a son of man, that He should repent;  
Has He said, and will He not do it?  
Or has He spoken, and will He not make it good?**

**Jubilee Bible 2000**

**God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent; he said and shall he not do it? He spoke and shall he not execute it?**

**King James 2000 Bible**

**God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: has he said, and shall he not do it? or has he spoken, and shall he not make it good?**

**American King James Version**

**God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: has he said, and shall he not do it? or has he spoken, and shall he not make it good?**

**American Standard Version**

**God is not a man, that he should lie, Neither the son of man, that he should repent: Hath he said, and will he not do it? Or hath he spoken, and will he not make it good?**

**Douay-Rheims Bible**



God is not a man, that he should lie, nor as the son of man, that he should be changed. Hath he said then, and will he not do? hath he spoken, and will he not fulfil?

**Darby Bible Translation**

God is not a man, that he should lie; neither a son of man, that he should repent. Shall he say and not do? and shall he speak and not make it good?

English Revised Version God is not a man, that he should lie; Neither the son of man, that he should repent: Hath he said, and shall he not do it? Or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good?

**Webster's Bible Translation**

God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: hath he said, and shall he not do it? or hath he spoke, and shall he not make it good?

**World English Bible**

God is not a man, that he should lie, nor the son of man, that he should repent. Has he said, and will he not do it? Or has he spoken, and will he not make it good?

**Young's Literal Translation**

God is not a man -- and lieth, And a son of man -- and repenteth! Hath He said -- and doth He not do it? And spoken -- and doth He not confirm it?

**ZEALOT: Was Aisha the wife of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) only 9 years old on the time of marriage?**

O.K lets discuss this with open mind and logical reasoning...Did Prophet really married Hazrat Aisha (R.A) when she was 9 years old? Also why would a Prophet , that we claim is last messenger and is for all humanity , would do something that is morally wrong in our today's world?

*The Hadith regarding the age of Hazrat Ayesha at the time of marriage, to be 9 is widely held among scholars as a ' Not the Real presentation of facts, quotation out of context,'.*

“In the time before Islam, Abu Bakr married two women. The first was Fatila daughter of Abdul Uzza, from whom Abdullah and Asma were born. Then he married Umm Ruman, from whom Abdur Rahman and Aisha were born. These four were born before Islam.” [5]

**Being born before Islam means being born before the Call of Islam, before Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) received the message of Islam from Allah through angel Jibreel/Gabriel.**

The life of Hazrat Aisha (Radhiyallahu-Anha) is proof that a woman can be far more learned than men and that she can be the teacher of scholars and experts. Her life is also proof that the same woman can be totally feminine and be a source of pleasure, joy and comfort to her husband, to negate the status of Hazrat Aisha RA by designing a conspiracy against her age, a hadith had been floated after specific alteration to prove the false claim that she was married with Muhammad SAWW (PBUH) around 9 years

of age .

According to the Scholars the hadith reporting Hazrat Aisha's age are "weak". ( chain of specific narrators not verified)

There is material from both the hadith writers (Sahih and Muslim) and earlier Islamic histories suggesting Aisha must have been much older than nine when married.

1) According to the generally accepted tradition, Aisha was born about 8 years before Hijrah( Migration). However, according to another narrative in Bukhari (Kitaab al-Tafseer) Aisha is reported to have said that at the time Surah Al-Qamar, the 54th chapter of the Qur'an , was revealed, "I was a young girl". The 54th Surah of the Qur'an was revealed nine years before Hijrah. According to this tradition, Aisha had not only been born before the revelation of the referred Surah, but was actually a young girl, not even only an infant at that time.

So if this age is assumed to be 7 to 14 years then her age at the time of marriage has to be between 14 to 21.

2) According to almost All the Historians, Asma; the elder sister of Aisha, was 10 years older than Aisha. It is reported in Taqreeb al-Tehzeeb as well as Al-Bidayah wa al-Nihayah that Asma died in the 73rd year after migration of Muhammad when she was 100 years old. Now, obviously if Asma was 100 years old in the 73rd year after Migration to Medina, she should have been 27 or 28 years old at the time of migration. If Asma was 27 or 28 years old at the time of hijrah, Aisha should have been 17 or 18 years old at that time.

Thus, Aisha – if she got married in 1 AH (after Migration to Medina) or 2 AH – was between 18 to 20 years old at the time of her marriage.

3) The hadith regarding her age has several aspects. First, the Prophet could not have gone against the Quran to marry a physically and intellectually immature child. Secondly, the age of Hazrat Aisha can be easily calculated from the age of her elder sister Hazrat Asma who was 10 years older than Hazrat Aisha. Waliuddin Muhammad Abdullah Al-Khateeb al Amri Tabrizi the famous author of Mishkath, in his biography of narrators (Asma ur Rijal), writes that Hazrat Asma died in the year 73 Hijri at the age of 100, ten or twelve days after the martyrdom of her son Abdullah Ibn Zubair. It is common knowledge that the Islamic calendar starts from the year of the Hijrah or the Prophet's migration from Mecca to Medina.

Therefore, by deducting 73, the year of Hazrat Asma's death, from 100, her age at that time, we can easily conclude that she was 27 years old during Hijra.

This puts the age of Hazrat Aisha at 17 during the same period. As all biographers of the Prophet agree that he consummated his marriage with Hazrat Aisha in the year 2 Hijri it can be conclusively said that she was 19 at that time and not 9 as misinterpreted.

"Ever since I can remember (or understand things) my parents were following the religion of Islam." [8]

This is tantamount to saying that she was born sometime before her parents accepted Islam but she can only remember them practising Islam. No doubt she and her parents knew well whether she was born before or after they accepted Islam, as their acceptance of Islam was such a landmark event in their life which took place just after the Holy Prophet received his mission from God. If she had been born after they accepted Islam it would make no sense for her to say that she always remembered them as following Islam. Only if she was born before they accepted Islam, would it make sense for her to say that she can only remember them being Muslims, as she was too young to remember things before their conversion. This is consistent with her being born before the Call, and being perhaps four or five years old at the time of the Call, which was also almost the time when her parents accepted Islam.

Two further evidences cited by Maulana Muhammad Ali

In the footnotes of his Urdu translation and commentary of Sahih Bukhari, entitled Fadl-ul-Bari, Maulana Muhammad Ali had pointed out reports of two events which show that Aisha could not have been born later than the year of the Call. These are as follows.

1. The above mentioned statement by Aisha in Bukhari, about her earliest memory of her parents being that they were followers of Islam, begins with the following words in its version in Bukhari's Kitab-ul-Kafalat. We quote this from the English translation of Bukhari by M. Muhsin Khan:

"Since I reached the age when I could remember things, I have seen my parents worshipping according to the right faith of Islam. Not a single day passed but Allah's Apostle visited us both in the morning and in the evening. When the Muslims were persecuted, Abu Bakr set out for Ethiopia as an emigrant." [9]

Commenting on this report, Maulana Muhammad Ali writes:

"This report sheds some light on the question of the age of Aisha. ... The mention of the persecution of Muslims along with the emigration to Ethiopia clearly shows that this refers to the fifth or the sixth year of the Call. ... At that time Aisha was of an age to discern things, and so her birth could not have been later than the first year of the Call." [10]

Again, this would make her more than fourteen at the time of the consummation of her marriage.

2. There is a report in Sahih Bukhari as follows:

"On the day (of the battle) of Uhud when (some) people retreated and left the Prophet, I saw Aisha daughter of Abu Bakr and Umm Sulaim, with their robes tucked up so that the bangles around their ankles were visible hurrying with their water skins (in another narration it is said, 'carrying the water skins on their backs'). Then they would pour the water in the mouths of the people, and return to fill the water skins again and came back again to pour water in the mouths of the people." [11]

Maulana Muhammad Ali writes in a footnote under this report:

"It should also be noted that Aisha joined the Holy Prophet's household only one year before the battle

of Uhud. According to the common view she would be only ten years of age at this time, which is certainly not a suitable age for the work she did on this occasion. This also shows that she was not so young at this time.” [12]

If, as shown in the previous section above, Aisha was 19 at the time of the consummation of her marriage, then she would be twenty years old at the time of the battle of Uhud. It may be added that on the earlier occasion of the battle of Badr when some Muslim youths tried, out of eagerness, to go along with the Muslim army to the field of battle, the Holy Prophet Muhammad sent them back on account of their young age (allowing only one such youngster, Umair ibn Abi Waqqas, to accompany his older brother the famous Companion Sa’d ibn Abi Waqqas). It seems, therefore, highly unlikely that if Aisha was ten years old the Holy Prophet would have allowed her to accompany the army to the field of battle.

Some references:

<https://archive.org/details/ProphetMohammadWasNotAPedophileNorHeMarriedA9YearOld>

<http://www.smashwords.com/books/view/464327>

**Christianity : Is Jesus God ? ( By Ahmad Deedat )** Doesn't the bible clearly prove Jesus is the messenger of God and not God ?

“So Jesus answered them, “My teaching is not mine, but his who sent me” (John 7:16)“I came not of my own accord, but he sent me” (John 8:42)

“I tell you the truth, no SERVANT is greater than his MASTER, nor is a MESSENGER greater than the one who sent him” (John 13:16)

“Jesus said to them, ‘My food is to do the will of Him who sent me, and to accomplish His work” (John 4:34)“For I have not spoken on My own authority; but the Father who sent Me gave Me a command, what I should say and what I should speak” (John 12:49)

## **THE “GOD” THAT NEVER WAS**

Islam is the only religion which teaches the existence of a PERFECT God. A perfect God means that there is no sharer in His Nature and His Attributes:

“Say: He is God, the One and Only; God, the Eternal, Absolute; He begetteth not, nor is He begotten; and there is none like unto Him.” (Holy Qur’an, 112:1-4)

Paul has appeared a man in Benoni. He is not qualified in theology, but is fondly cherishing the self-delusion that he is an apostle of Christ, appointed by God to convert Muslims to Christianity. Because he is a lawyer by profession, he is adept at juggling with words and quoting the Holy Qur’an totally out of context without knowing a word of Arabic. He wants Muslims to believe that Jesus was also a God, a belief that is abhorrent to us, because it is an antithesis of the Absolute perfection of Allah Subhaanahoo Wa Ta ‘Aala!

Thus intent upon reversing the process of Truth, which is: “And say: The Truth has come and falsehood vanished. Surely falsehood is ever bound to vanish.” (Qur’an, 17:81). In this he will never succeed because the process of Truth is irreversible.

### **TWO REASONS**

He has given two reasons to prove that Jesus is God, viz: (i) “When we say Jesus is deity (or even God for that matter), we do not make him the Father! He is one with the Father and therefore HE SHARES HIS NATURE”, and (ii) “HE IS IN EVERY WAY LIKE THE FATHER but he is not the Father”.

In short, according to him, Jesus is God because He SHARES THE NATURE OF GOD, and HE IS IN EVERY WAY LIKE GOD. These two reasons given by him to prove the divinity of Jesus are so puerile that they speak volumes of his legal training.

Numerous quotations from the Bible are given below to prove that Jesus neither SHARED THE NATURE OF GOD, nor is he IN EVERY WAY LIKE GOD. He can, therefore, NEVER be GOD. We have given the quotations from the Bible without comment, because the Bible speaks for itself! TO SAY THAT JESUS IS GOD OR SON OF GOD IS NOT ONLY A MOCKERY OF GODHOOD, BUT BLASPHEMY OF THE LOWEST ORDER AND AND INSULT TO THE INTELLIGENCE OF MEN! (Note: Unless otherwise stated, all quotations from the Bible are given from the Authorized Version. In our headings and subheadings we have referred to Jesus as "God" in inverted commas in order to show the ABSURDITY of the claim of this man that Jesus is God!)

**THE BIRTH OF "GOD"**"God" was created from the seed of David: "Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the SEED of David according to the flesh." (Romans, 1:3)

"God" was the fruit of the loins of David: "Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne." (Acts, 2:30)

The Ancestors of "God": "The generations of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham." (Matthew, 1:1)

The Sex of "God": "And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called Jesus." (Luke, 2:21)

How Mary Conceived and Delivered "God". Mary conceived Jesus like any other woman: "The days were accomplished that she should be delivered," (Luke, 2:6) which means that she went through all the normal stages of pregnancy. Nor was her delivery any different from other expectant mothers: "And she being with child cried, travelling in birth, and pained to be delivered." (Revelation, 12:2)

"God" Sucked The Paps of a Woman: "And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked." (Luke, 11:27)

The Country of Origin of "God": "Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king. (Matthew, 2:1)

The Occupation of "God": "Jesus was a carpenter by trade." (Mark, 6:3), "and the son of a carpenter."

(Matthew, 13:55)

The Transport of "God": "Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass." (Matthew, 21:5) "And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon." (John, 12:14)

The Wining and Dining of "God": "The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners." (Matthew, 11:9; Luke, 7:34)

The Poverty of "God": "And Jesus saith unto him, the foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head." (Matthew, 8:20)

The Meagre Possessions of "God": "Shoes of Jesus" (Luke, 3:16), "Garments and coat of Jesus" (John, 19:23)

"God" Was a Devout Jew: "And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed." (Mark, 1:35)

"God" Was a Loyal Subject: Jesus was a good citizen, he was loyal to Caesar. He said: "Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's." (Matthew, 22:21) He paid his tax regularly. (Matthew, 17:24-27)

**THE FAMILY OF "GOD"**

"God" Was the Son of Joseph: "Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, we have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph" (John, 1:45)

Brothers and Brothers-in-law of "God": "And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works? Is not this the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence hath this man all these things? (Matthew, 13:54-56)

**THE DEVELOPMENT OF "GOD"**

Spiritual Development of "God": "And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom." (Luke, 2:40)

Mental, Physical and Moral Development of "God": "And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man." (Luke, 2:52)

"God" Was 12 Years Old When His Parents Took Him to Jerusalem: "Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast." (Luke, 2:41-42)

The Powerless "God" (Jesus) said: "I can of mine own self do nothing." (John, 5:30)

"God" Was Ignorant of the Time. Jesus said: "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father." (Mark, 13:32)

"God" Was Ignorant of the Season: "And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he (Jesus) was hungry: and seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find anything thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet." (Mark, 11:12-13)

"God" Was Unlettered: "Now about the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?" (John, 7:14-15)

"God" Learnt Through Experience: "Learned he obedience by the things which he suffered." (Hebrews, 5:8)

## **THE TEMPTING OF "GOD"**

**The Devil Tempted "God" For 40 Days:** "And immediately the spirit driveth him into the wilderness. And he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan." (Mark, 1:12-13)

**The Devil Tempted "God" Continuously:** "And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season." (Luke, 4:13)

**Like the Sinners, "God" Was Tempted In All Things:** "But (he) was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin." (Hebrews, 4:15) **True God Cannot be Tempted With Evil:** "God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man." (James, 1:13)

**Only The Ungodly Are Tempted With Evil:** "But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed." (James, 1:14)

## **THE MISSION OF "GOD"**

**The Confession and Repentance of "God":** before the beginning of his public ministry: "Jesus was baptized by John the Baptist" (Matthew, 3:13), "which signified the confession of sins" (Matthew, 3:6), "and repentance from sins (Matthew, 3:11).

**"God" Did Not Come to Save the Sinners:** "And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked of him the parable. And he said unto them, unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that without, all these things are done in parables: That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them." (Mark, 4:10-12)

## **THE RACIAL "GOD"**

**"God" Was a Tribal Jew:** "The lion of the tribe of Juda." (Revelation, 5:5)

**"God" Came For The Jews Only:** "But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel." (Matthew, 15:24)

**Racial Discrimination of "God":** "These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel." (Matthew, 10:5-6)

**According to "God", The Gentiles Are Dogs:** "It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs." (Matthew, 15:26)

**The Kingdom of "God":** And he (Jesus) shall reign over THE HOUSE OF JACOB for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end." (Luke, 1:33)

**The Titles of "God":** "The king of the Jews" (Matthew, 2:2), "The king of Israel" (John, 1:49; 12:13)

## **A "GOD" UNLIKE THE GOD**

**A Hungry "God":** "And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered." (Matthew 4:2), "Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered." (Matthew, 21:18), "and on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry." (Mark, 11:12)

**A Thirsty "God":** "(He) saith, I thirst." (John, 19:28)

**A Sleepy "God":** "He was asleep." (Matthew, 8:24), "He fell asleep" (Luke, 8:23), "And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow." (Mark, 4:38)

**A Weary "God":** Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well." (John, 4:6)

**A Groaning "God":** "He groaned in the spirit, and was troubled." (John, 11:33), "Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave." (John, 11:38)

**A Weeping "God":** "Jesus wept." (John, 11:35)

**A Sorrowing "God":** "And (he) began to be sorrowful and very heavy." (Matthew 26:37). "Then saith he unto them, my soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death." (Matthew, 26:38)

**A Hysterical "God":** "And (he) began to be sore amazed and to be very heavy." (Mark, 14:33)

**A Weak "God":** "And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him." (Luke, 22:43)

## **THE WARRING "GOD"**

**The Strong-Arm Method of "God":** "And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought." (Luke, 19:45). "And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem, and found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting: and when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables." (John, 2:13-15)

**The "God" of War:** Jesus said: "Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword." (Matthew, 10:34)

**The Sabre-Rattling "God":** Jesus said: "And he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one." (Luke, 22:36)

## **The "GOD" ON THE RUN**

**"God" Was Panic-Stricken:** "After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him." (John, 7:1) **"God" Walked in Fear of the Jews:** "Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death. Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews." (John, 11:53-54)

“God” Has Shown a Clean Pair of Heels: “Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand.” (John, 10:39)

“God” Fleed in Disguise: “Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.” (John, 8:59)

#### THE CAPTURE OF “GOD”

A Friend Betrayed the Secret Hiding Place of “God”: “And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples. Judas then, having received a band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons.” (John, 18:2-3)

“God” Was Arrested, Bound and Led Away: “Then the band and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him, and led him away.” (John, 18:12-13)

“God” Was Humiliated: “And the men that held Jesus mocked him, and smote him. And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face.” (Luke, 22:63-64). “Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote him with the palms of their hands.” (Matthew, 26:67)

“God” Was Defenseless: “One of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand”, he said: “Why smitest thou me?” (John, 18:22-23)

“God” Was Condemned to Death: “And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.” (Mark, 14:64). “They answered and said, he is guilty of death.” (Matthew, 26:66)

The Dumb and Docile “God”: “He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth.” (Acts, 8:32)

#### THE SUPPOSED END OF “GOD”

The Dying “God”: “And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.” (Mark, 15:37)

The “God” That Was Supposed Dead and Defunct: “Christ died.” (Romans, 5:6). “He was dead”. (John, 19:33)

The Supposed Corpse of “God”: “he (Joseph of Arimathaea) went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.” (Matthew, 27:58)

The Shroud of “God”: “And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth.” (Matthew, 27:59)

The Orbituary of The Late And Lamented “God”: “Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, certainly this was a righteous man.” (Luke, 23:47)

#### EPILOGUE

According to this self-appointed apostle of Christ, Jesus is God because: (i) “HE SHARED THE NATURE OF GOD”, and (ii) because “IN EVERY WAY HE IS LIKE GOD”. But according to the quotations of the Bible given above, we find that Jesus did neither SHARE THE NATURE OF GOD nor is he IN EVERY WAY LIKE GOD. He is, therefore, definitely NOT God! The onus to prove that Jesus is God now rests with this Christian. Either he must prove that Jesus is God, or he must admit that he is a polytheist, i.e., a believer in more than one God. WITH ALL THE TRICKS AND VERBAL LEGERDEMAIN OF HIS PROFESSION, HE WILL NEVER BE ABLE TO PROVE THAT JESUS IS GOD!! He and his fellow-preachers in Christ, will never succeed in convincing the Muslims that Jesus was anything other than a natural man and a prophet of God, sent unto the house of Israel to bear the good news of the coming of the KINGDOM OF GOD, which prophecy was fulfilled with the advent of the Holy Prophet Muhammed (Sallal Laahu Alaihi Wa Sallam)!

#### Debate on TV

At the end of the debate – “Christianity and Islam” – which appeared on the SABC-TV program “Cross Questions” on Sunday 5th June 1983, the Chairman, Mr. Bill Chalmers commented: “I think it can be said from this discussion that there is, at present, somewhat more accommodation on the Islamic side for the founder of Christianity than there is on the Christian side for the founder of Islam. What the significance of that is, we leave it to you, the viewer, to determine, but I do think you will agree that it is a good thing that we are talking together.”

“Bill” as he is popularly addressed, without any formalities, on all his programs, by all his panelists, is extremely charming and stupendous in his humility. He is a picture of what the Holy Quran portrays of a good Christian:

“...And nearest among them in love to the believers wilt thou find those who say: ‘We are Christians’: because among these are men devoted to learning and men who have renounced the world. And they are not arrogant.” (The Holy Quran 5:82)

#### Jesus – His Status

Were the Muslims on the panel trying to placate the viewers out policy, deceit or diplomacy? Nothing of the kind! They were only articulating what God Almighty had commanded them to say in the Holy Quran. As Muslims, they had no choice. They had said in so many words: “We Muslims believe, that Jesus was one of the mightiest messengers of God that he was the Christ, that he was born miraculously without any male intervention (which many modern-day Christians do not believe today), that he gave life to the dead by God’s permission and that he healed those born blind and the lepers by god’s permission. In fact, no Muslim is a Muslim if he or she does not believe in Jesus!”

#### Pleasant Surprise

Over 90% of the people who witnessed this debate must have been pleasantly, but skeptically, surprised. They might have not believed their ears. They must have surmised that the Muslims were playing to the gallery – that they were trying to curry favor with their fellow Christian countrymen; that if the Muslims would say a few good words about Jesus, then in reciprocation the Christians might say a few good words about Muhammed (may the peace and the blessings of God be

upon all His righteous servants, Moses, Jesus, Muhammed...etc.); that I scratch your back and you scratch my back – which would be a sham or hypocrisy.

#### Hate Cultivated

We cannot blame the Christians for their skepticism. They have been so learned for centuries. They were trained to think the worst of the man Muhammed, *salla Allah u alihi wa sallam*, and his religion. How aptly did Thomas Carlyle say about his Christian brethren over a hundred and fifty years ago: “The lies which well-meaning zeal has heaped round this man (Muhammed) are disgraceful to ourselves only.” We Muslims are partly responsible for this. We have not done anything substantial to remove the cobwebs.

#### Ocean of Christianity

South Africa is an ocean of Christianity. If Libya boasts the highest percentage of Muslims on the continent of Africa, then the Republic of South Africa would also be entitled to boast the highest percentage of Christians. In this ocean of Christianity the R.S.A. – the Muslims are barely 2% of the total population. We are a voteless minority – numerically, we count for nothing; politically, we count for nothing; and economically, one white man, as Oppenheimer, could buy out the whole lot of us, lock, stock and barrel.

So if we had feigned to appease, we might be excused. But no! We must proclaim our Master’s Will; we must declare the Truth, whether we liked it or not. In the words of Jesus: “Seek ye the truth, and the truth shall set you free” (John 8:32).

#### Chapter Two : Jesus in the Quran

##### Christians Unaware

The Christian does not know that the true spirit of charity which the Muslim displays, always, towards Jesus and his mother Mary spring from the fountainhead of his faith – the Holy Quran. He does not know that the Muslim does not take the holy name of Jesus, in his own language, without saying *Eesa, alaihi assalam* (“Jesus, peace be upon him”)

The Christian does not know that in the Holy Quran Jesus is mentioned twenty five times. For example:

“We gave Jesus, the son of Mary, clear signs and strengthened him with the Holy Spirit” (The Holy Quran 2:87)

“O Mary! God giveth thee glad tidings of a Word from Him: his name will be Christ Jesus, the son of Mary...” (3:45)

“...Christ Jesus the son of Mary was (no more than) an apostle of god...” (4:171)

“...And in their foot steps we sent Jesus the son of Mary...” (5:46)

“And Zakariya and John, and Jesus and Elias: all in the ranks of the righteous.” (6:85)

##### Jesus – His Titles

Though Jesus is mentioned by name in twenty-five places in the Holy Quran, he is also addressed with respect as: *Ibn Maryam*, meaning “The son of Mary”; and as the *Maseeh* (in Hebrew it is the *Messiah*), which is translated as “Christ”. He is also known as *Abdullah*, “The servant of Allah”; and as *Rasul u Allah*, the messenger of Allah.

He is spoken of as “The Word of God”, as “The Spirit of God”, as a “Sign of God”, and numerous other epithets of honor spread over fifteen different chapters. The Holy Quran honors this mighty messenger of God, and the Muslims have not fallen short over the past fourteen hundred years in doing the same. There is not a single disparaging remark in the entire Quran to which even the most jaundiced among the Christians can take exception.

##### *Eesa* Latinised to “Jesus”

The Holy Quran refers to Jesus as *Eesa*, and this name is used more times than any other title, because this was his “Christian” name. Actually, his proper name was *Eesa* (Arabic), or *Esau* (Hebrew); classical *Yeheshua*, which the Christian nations of the West latinised as Jesus. Neither the “J” nor the second “s” in the name Jesus is to be found in the original tongue – they are not found in the Semitic languages.

The word is very simply “E S A U” a very common Jewish name, used more than sixty times in the very first booklet alone of the Bible, in the part called “Genesis”. There was at least one “Jesus” sitting on the “bench” at the trial of Jesus before the Sanhedrin. Josephus the Jewish historian mentions some twenty five Jesus’ in his “Book of Antiquities”. The New Testament speaks of “Bar-Jesus” a magician and a sorcerer, a false prophet (Acts 13:6); and also “Jesus-Justus” a Christian missionary, a contemporary of Paul (Colossians 4:11). These are distinct from Jesus the son of Mary. Transforming “Esau” to (J)esu(s) – Jesus – makes it unique. This unique (?) name has gone out of currency among the Jews and the Christians from the 2nd century after Christ. Among the Jews, because it came to be a name of ill – repute, the name of one who blasphemed in Jewry; and among the Christians because it came to be the proper name of their God. The Muslim will not hesitate to name his son *Eesa* because it is an honored name, the name of a righteous servant of the Lord.

#### Chapter Three : Mother And Son

##### Mary Honored

The birth of Jesus Christ is described in two places of the Quran – chapter 3 and chapter 19. Reading from the beginning of his birth, we come across the story of Mary, and the esteemed position which she occupies in the House of Islam, before the actual annunciation of the birth of Jesus is given:

“Behold! the angels said: ‘O Mary! God hath chosen thee and purified thee, and chosen thee above the women of all nations’ (3:42)



“Chosen thee above the women of all nations.” Such an honor is not to be found given to Mary even in the Christian Bible! The verse continues:

“O Mary! Worship thy Lord devoutly: prostrate thyself, and bow down (in prayer) with those who bow down.” (3:43) Divine Revelation

What is the source of this beautiful and sublime recitation which, in its original Arabic, moves men to ecstasy and tears? verse 44 below explains:

“This is part of the tidings, of the things unseen, which We reveal unto thee (O Muhammad!) by inspiration: Thou wast not with them when they cast lots with arrows, as to which of them should be charged with the care of Mary: nor wast thou with them when they disputed (the point).” (3:44)

#### Mary’s Birth

The story is that the maternal grandmother of Jesus, Hannah, had hitherto been barren. She poured out her heart to God: If only God will grant her a child, she would surely dedicate such a child for the service of God in the temple.

God granted her prayer and Mary was born. Hannah was disappointed. She was yearning for a son, but instead she delivered a daughter; and in no way is the female like the male, for what she had in mind. What was she to do? She had made a vow to God. She waited for Mary to be big enough to fend for herself.

When the time came, Hannah took her darling daughter to the temple, to hand over for temple services. Every priest wanted to be the god-father of this child. They cast lots with arrows for her – like the tossing of the coin – head or tail? eventually she fell to the lot of Zakariya, but not without a dispute.

#### The Source of His Message

This was the story. But where did Muhammed, *salla Allah u alihi wa sallam*, get this knowledge from? He was an *Ummi*, Arabic for “unlettered”. He did not know how to read or write. He is made by God Almighty to answer this very question in the verse above, by saying that it was all *by divine inspiration*. “No!”, says the controversialist. “This is Muhammed’s own concoction. He copied his revelations from the Jews and Christians. He plagiarized it. He forged it.”

Knowing full-well, and believing as we do, that the whole Quran is the veritable Word of God, we will nevertheless agree, for the sake of argument, with the enemies of Muhammed, *salla Allah u alihi wa sallam*, for a moment, that he wrote it. We can now expect some cooperation from the unbelievers.

Ask him: “Have you any qualms in agreeing that Muhammed was an Arab?” Only an ignorant will hesitate to agree. In that case there is no sense in pursuing any discussion. Cut short the talk. Close the book!

With the man of reason, we proceed. “That this Arab, in the first instance, was addressing other Arabs. He was not talking to Indian Muslims, Chinese Muslims, or Nigerian Muslims. He was addressing his own people, the Arabs.

Whether they agreed with him or not, he told them in the most sublime form, words that were seared into the hearts and minds of his listeners that Mary the mother of Jesus, *a Jewess*, was chosen above the women of all nations. Not his own mother, nor his wife nor his daughter, nor any other Arab woman, but a Jewess! Can one explain this? Because to everyone his own mother or wife, or daughters would come before other women.

Why would the prophet of Islam honor a woman from his opposition! and a Jewess at that! belonging to a race which had been looking down upon his people for three thousand years? Just as they still look down upon their Arab brethren today.”

#### Sarah and Hagar

The Jews learn, from the Bible, that their father, Abraham, had two wives Sarah and Hagar. They say that they are the children of Abraham through Sarah his legitimate wife; that their Arab brethren have descended through Hagar, a “bondwoman”, and that as such, the Arabs are an inferior breed.

Will anyone please explain the anomaly as to why Muhammed, *salla Allah u alihi wa sallam*, if he is the author, chose this Jewess for such high honor? The answer is simple, he had no choice he had no right to speak of his own desire. “*It is no less than an inspiration sent down to him.*” (53:4)

#### The Chapter of *Maryam*

There is a Chapter in the Holy Quran, named *Surat u Maryam* “Chapter Mary”, named in honor of Mary the mother of Jesus Christ, peace and blessings of Allah be upon him; again, such an honor is not to be found given to Mary in the Christian Bible. Out of the 66 books of the Protestants and 73 of the Roman Catholics, not one is named after Mary or her son. You will find books named after Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Peter, Paul and two score more obscure names, but not a single one is that of Mary!

If Muhammed, *salla Allah u alihi wa sallam*, was the author of the Holy Quran, then he would not have failed to include in it with Mary, the mother of Jesus, his own mother Aamina, his dear wife Khadija, or his beloved daughter Fatima. But No! No! This can never be. The Quran is not his handiwork!.

#### Chapter Four : The Good News

” ‘Behold!’ the angels said: ‘O Mary! Allah giveth thee glad tidings of a word from him: his name will be Jesus, the son of Mary; held in honor in this world and the hereafter; and (of the company of) those nearest to Allah.’” (3:45)

“Nearest to God,” not physically nor geographically, but spiritually. Compare this with “And (Jesus) sat on the right hand of God.” (Mark 16:19). The bulk of Christendom has misunderstood this verse as well as many others in the Bible.

They imagine the Father (God) sitting on a throne, a glorified chair, and His Son, Jesus, sitting on His right hand side.

Can you conjure up the picture? If you do, you have strayed from the true knowledge of God. He is no old Father Christmas. He is beyond the imagination of the mind of man. He exists. He is real, but He is not like anything we can think of, or imagine.

In eastern languages “right hand” meant a place of honor, which the Holy Quran more fittingly describes as “In the company of those nearest to Allah.” The above verse confirms that Jesus is the Christ, and that he is the Word which God bestowed upon Mary. Again, the Christian reads into these words, a meaning which they do not carry. They equate the word “Christ” with the idea of a god-incarnate; and the “Word” of God to *be* God.

“Christ” Not a Name

The word “Christ” is derived from the Hebrew word *Messiah*, Arabic *Maseeh*. Root word *masaha*, meaning “to rub”, “to massage”, “to anoint”. Priests and kings were anointed when being consecrated to their offices. But in its translated Grecian form, “Christ” seems unique: befitting Jesus only.

Christians like to translate names into their own language; like *Cephas* to “Peter”, *Messiah* to “Christ”. How do they do that? Very easily. *Messiah* in Hebrew means “Anointed”. The Greek word for anointed is *Christos*. Just lop off the ‘os’ from *Christos*, and you are left with “Christ”; a unique name!

*Christos* means “Anointed”, and anointed means appointed in its religious connotation. Jesus, peace and blessing be upon him, was appointed (anointed) at his baptism by John the Baptist, as God’s Messenger. Every prophet of God is so anointed or appointed. The Holy Bible is replete with the “anointed” ones. In the original Hebrew, he was made a *Messiah*. Let us keep to the English translation “anointed.”

Not only were prophets and priests and kings anointed (*Christos*-ed), but horns, and cherubs and lamp-posts also.

“I am the God of Bethel, where you *anointed* a pillar ...” (Genesis 31:13)

“If the priest that is *anointed* do sin ...” (Leviticus 4:3)

“And Moses... *anointed* the tabernacle and all things that was therein...” (Leviticus 8:100)

“...the Lord shall...exalt the horn of his *anointed*” (I Samuel 2:10)

“Thus saith the Lord to his *anointed* to Cyrus...” (Isaiah 45:1)

“Thou art the *anointed* cherub...” (Ezekiel 28:14)

There are an hundred more such references in the Holy Bible. Every time you come across the word “anointed” in your Bible, you can take it that that word would be *christos* in the Greek translations, and if you take the same liberty with the word that the Christians have done, you will have Christ Cherub, Christ Cyrus, Christ Priest and Christ Pillar, ...etc.

Some Titles Exclusive

Although, every prophet of God is an anointed one of God, a Messiah, the title *Maseeh* or *Messiah*, or its translation “Christ” is exclusively reserved for Jesus, the son of Mary, in both Islam and in Christianity. This is not unusual in religion. There are certain other honorific titles which may be applied to more than one prophet, yet being made exclusive to one by usage: like “*Rasulullah*”, meaning “Messenger of God”, which title is applied to both Moses (19:51) and Jesus (61:6) in the Holy Quran. Yet “*Rasulullah*” has become synonymous only with Muhammad, the prophet of Islam, among Muslims.

Every prophet is indeed a “Friend of God”, but its Arabic equivalent “*Khalillullah*” is exclusively associated with Father Abraham. This does not mean that the others are not God’s friends. “*Kaleemullah*”, meaning “One who spoke with Allah” is never used for anyone other than Moses, yet we believe that God spoke with many of His messengers, including Jesus and Muhammad, may the peace and blessings of God be upon all His servants. Associating certain titles with certain personages only, does not make them exclusive or unique in any way. We honor all in varying terms.

Whilst the good news was being announced (verse 45 above) Mary was told that her unborn child will be called Jesus, that he would be the Christ, a “Word” from God, and that...

“He shall speak to the people in childhood and in maturity. And he shall be (of the company) of the righteous.” (3:46)

“At length she brought the (babe) to her people carrying him. They said: ‘O Mary! truly a strange thing has thou brought!’. ‘O sister of Aaron!, thy father was not a man of evil, nor thy mother a woman unchaste!’ ” (The Holy Quran 19:27-28)

Jews Amazed

There is no Joseph the carpenter here. The circumstances being peculiar, Mary the mother of Jesus had retired herself to some remote place in the East (19:16). After the birth of the child she returns.

A. Yusuf Ali, comments in his popular English translation of the Quran:

“The amazement of the people knew no bounds. In any case they were prepared to think the worst of her, as she had disappeared from her kin for some time. But now she comes, shamelessly parading a babe in her arms! How she had disgraced house of Aaron, the fountain of priesthood!

“Sister of Aaron”: Mary is reminded of her high lineage and the unexceptionable morals of her father and mother. How, they said, she had fallen, and disgraced the name of her progenitors!

What could Mary do? How could she explain? Would they, in their censorious mood accept her explanation? All she could do was to point to the child, who, she knew, was no ordinary child. And the child came to her rescue. By a miracle he spoke, defended his mother, and preached to an unbelieving audience.”

Allah *azza wa jall* says in the Quran:

“But she pointed to the babe. They said: ‘How can we talk one who is a child in the cradle?’ He (Jesus) said: ‘I am indeed a servant of Allah (God) : He hath given me revelation and made me a prophet: ‘and He hath made me blessed wheresoever I be, and hath enjoined on me prayer and charity as long as I live. ‘(He hath made me) kind to my mother, and not overbearing or unblest; ‘So Peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die, and the day that I shall be raised up to life again)!’ ” (19:29-33)

**His First Miracle(s)** Thus Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, defended his mother from the grave calumny and innuendoes of her enemies. This is the very first miracle attributed to Jesus in the Holy Quran that, he spoke as an infant from his mother's arms. Contrast this with his first miracle in the Christian Bible which occurred when he was over thirty years of age:

“And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage. And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, they have no wine. Jesus saith unto her, ‘Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.’ His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it. And there were set there six water pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece. Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim. And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare it. When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was: (but the servants which drew the water knew;) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have *well drunk*, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now.” (John 2:110)

Since this miracle, wine has flowed like water in Christendom. Many reason that what was good for the Master is good enough for them. Jesus was no “kill-joy” they say. Didn't he make good potent wine, that even those “well drunk”, those whose senses had been dulled could make out the difference? “That the best was kept for the last.” This was no pure grape juice. It was the same *wine* that, according to the Christian Bible, enabled the daughters of Lot to seduce their father (Genesis 19:32-33). It was the same *wine* which the Christian is advised to eschew in Ephesians 5:18 – “And be not drunk with wine...”

It is that innocent (?) 1% potency that eventually leads millions down into the gutter. America has 10 million drunkards in the midst of 70 million “*born-again*” Christians! The Americans call their drunkards “Problem Drinkers”. In South Africa, they are called “Alcoholics”; drunkard is too strong a word for people to stomach.

But the Prime Minister of Zambia, Dr. Kenneth Kaunda, does not hesitate to call a spade a spade. He says, “I am not prepared to lead nation of drunkards”, referring to his own people who drink intoxicants.

Whether the water “blushed” or not “seeing” Jesus, we cannot blame him or his disciples for the drinking habits of his contemporaries. For he had truly opined, “have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now” (John 16:12). Mankind had not reached the stage of receiving the whole Truth of Islam. Did he not also say “You cannot put new wine into old bottles”? (Matthew 9:17).

“Mother” or “Woman”?

According to St. John, in the fourth verse above, describing the marriage feast at Cana, we are told that Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, behaved insolently towards his mother. He calls her “woman,” and to rub more salt into the wound he is made to say “what have I to do with thee?” What connection is there between you and me, or what have I got to do with you? Could he have forgotten that this very “woman” had carried him for nine months, and perhaps suckled him for 2 years, and had borne endless insults and injuries on account of him? Is she not his mother? Is there no word in his language for “mother”?

Strange as it may seem, that while the missionaries boast about their master's humility, meekness and long-suffering, they call him the “Prince of Peace” and they sing that “he was led to the slaughter like a lamb, and like a sheep who before his shearer is dumb, he opened not his mouth”, yet they proudly record in the same breath, that he was ever ready with invectives for the elders of his race, and was always itching for a showdown i.e. if their records are true:

“Ye hypocrites!”

“Ye wicked and adulterous generation!”

“Ye whited sepulchres!”

“Ye generation of vipers!”

and now to his mother: “Woman...”

Jesus Defended

Muhammed, *salla Allah u alihi wa sallam*, the Messenger of God, is made to absolve Jesus from the false charges and calumnies of his enemies.

“And He (God Almighty) hath made me (Jesus) kind to my mother, and not overbearing or unblest” (19:31).

On receiving the good news of the birth of a righteous son Mary responds:

“She said: ‘O My Lord! how shall I have a son, when no man hath touched me?’”

The angel says in reply:

“He said: ‘Even so: Allah (God) createth what He willeth: when He hath decreed a matter He but sayth o it ‘Be,’ and it is! And Allah (God) will teach him the Book and Wisdom, the Torah (Law) and the Gospel,” (3:47-48).

*Chapter Five : Quranic and Biblical Versions*

Meeting the Reverend

I was visiting the “Bible House” in Johannesburg. Whilst browsing through the stacks of Bibles and religious books, I picked up an Indonesian Bible and had just taken in hand a Greek – English New Testament, a large, expensive volume. I had not realized that I was being observed by the supervisor of the Bible House. Casually, he walked up to me. Perhaps my beard and my Muslim headgear were an attraction and a challenge? He inquired about my interest in that costly volume. I explained that as a student of comparative religion, I had need for such a book. He invited me to have tea with him in his office. It was very kind of him and I accepted.

Over the cup of tea, I explained to him the Muslim belief in Jesus, peace and blessings of Allah be upon him. I explained to him the high position that Jesus occupied in the House of Islam. He seemed skeptical about what I said. I was amazed at his seeming ignorance, because only retired Reverend gentlemen can become Supervisors of Bible Houses in South Africa. I began reciting from verse 42 of chapters 3 of the Holy Quran:

“Behold!’ The angels said: ‘O Mary, Allah hath chosen thee...’”

I wanted the Reverend to listen, not only to the meaning of the Quran, but also to the music of its cadences when the original Arabic was recited. Rev. Dunkers (for that was his name) sat back and listened with rapt attention to “Allah’s Words”.

When I reached the end of verse 49, the Reverend commented that the Quranic message was like that of his own Bible. He said, he saw no difference between what he believed as a Christian, and what I had read to him. I said: “that was true”. If he had come across these verses in the English language alone without their Arabic equivalent, side by side, he would not have been able to guess in a hundred years that he was reading the Holy Quran. If he were a Protestant, he would have thought that he was reading the Roman Catholic Version, if he had not seen one, or the Jehovah’s Witness Version or the Greek Orthodox Version, or the hundred and one other versions that he might not have seen; but he would never have guessed that he was reading the Quranic version.

The Christian would be reading here, in the Quran, everything he wanted to hear about Jesus, but in a most noble, elevated and sublime language. He could not help being moved by it. In these eight terse verses from 42 to 49 we are told:

- (a) That Mary, the mother of Jesus, was a virtuous woman, and honored above the women of all nations.
- (b) That all that was being said was God’s own Revelation to mankind.
- (c) That Jesus was the “Word” of God.
- (d) That he was the Christ that the Jews were waiting for.
- (e) That God will empower this Jesus to perform miracles even in infancy.
- (f) That Jesus was born miraculously, without any male intervention.
- (g) That God will vouchsafe him Revelation.
- (h) That he will give life to the dead by God’s permission, and that he will heal those born blind and the lepers by God’s permission, ... etc.

#### “Chalk and Cheese”

The most fervent Christian cannot take exception to a single statement or word here. But the difference between the Biblical and the Quranic narratives is that between “chalk and cheese”. “To me they are identical, what is the difference?” the Reverend asked. I know that in their essentials both the stories agree in their details, but when we scrutinize them closely we will discover that the difference between them is staggering.

Now compare the miraculous conception as announced in verse 47 of the Holy Quran with what the Holy Bible says: “Now the birth of Jesus Christ was in this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, *before they came together*, (as husband and wife) she was found with child *of the holy ghost*.” (Matthew 1:18)

#### Master Dramatizer

The eminent Billy Graham from the United States of America dramatized this verse in front of 40,000 people in King Park, Durban, with his index finger sticking out and swinging his outstretched arm from right to left, he said: “And the Holy Ghost came and impregnated Mary!” On the other hand St. Luke tells us the very same thing but less crudely. He says, that when the annunciation was made, Mary was perturbed. Her natural reaction was : “How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?” (Luke 1:34) meaning sexually.

The Quranic narrative is: “She said: O my Lord! how shall I have a son when no man hath touched me?” (3:47) meaning sexually.

In essence there is no difference between these two statements “seeing I know not a man” and “when no man hath touched me”. Both the quotations have an identical meaning. It is simply a choice of different words meaning the same thing. But the respective replies to Mary’s plea in the two Books (the Quran and the Bible) are revealing.

#### The Biblical Version

Says the Bible:

“And the angel answered and said into her : ‘The Holy Ghost shall *come upon thee*, and the power of the Highest shall *overshadow thee*’ (Luke 1:35)

Can’t you see that you are giving the atheist, the skeptic, the agnostic a stick to beat you with? They may well ask “How did the Holy Ghost come upon Mary?” “How did the Highest overshadow her?” We know that literally it does not mean that: that it was an immaculate conception, but the language used here, is distasteful. Now contrast this with the language of the Quran:

#### The Quranic Version

“He said (the angel says in reply): ‘Even so: Allah (God) createth what He willeth: when He hath decreed a plan, He but saith to it, ‘Be,’ and it is!’ ” (3:47)

This is the Muslim concept of the birth of Jesus. For God to create a Jesus, without a human father, He merely has to will it. If He wants to create a million Jesus’ without fathers or mothers, He merely wills them into existence. He does not have

to take seeds and transfer them, like men or animals by contact or artificial insemination . He wills everything into being by His word of command “Be” and “It is”.

There is nothing new in what I am telling you, I reminded the Reverend. It is in the very first Book of your Holy Bible, Genesis 1:3 “And God said...” What did He say? He said “Be” and “It was”. He did not have to articulate the words. This is our way of understanding the word “Be”, that He willed everything into being.

Choice for His Daughter

“Between these two versions of the birth of Jesus, the Quranic version and the Biblical version, which would you prefer to give your daughter ?” I asked the supervisor of the Bible House. He bowed his head down in humility and admitted “The Quranic Version.”

How can “a forgery” or “an imitation”, as it is alleged of the Quran, be better than the genuine, the original, as it is claimed for the Bible? It can never be, unless this Revelation to Muhammed is what it, itself, claims to be viz. The pure and holy Word of God! There are a hundred different tests that the unprejudiced seeker after truth can apply to the Holy Quran and it will qualify with flying colors to being a Message from on High.

Like Adam

Does the miraculous birth of Jesus make him a God or a “begotten” son of God? No! says the Holy Quran:

“The similitude of Jesus before Allah (God) is that of Adam; He created him from dust then said to him: ‘Be’, and he was.” (3:59)

Yusuf Ali, comments in his notes in the Quran translation:

“After a description of the high position which Jesus occupies as a prophet in the preceding verses we have a repudiation of the dogma that he was God, or the son of God, or any thing more than man. If it is said that he was born without a human father, Adam was also so born. Indeed Adam was born without either a human father or mother. As far as our physical bodies are concerned they are mere dust.

In God’s sight Jesus was as dust just as Adam was or humanity is. The greatness of Jesus arose from the divine command ‘Be’: for after that he was more than dust a great spiritual leader and teacher” The logic of it is that, if being born without a male parent entitles Jesus to being equated with God, then, Adam would have a greater right to such honor, and this no Christian would readily concede. Thus, the Muslim is made to repudiate the Christian blasphemy.

Further, if the Christian splits hairs by arguing that Adam was “created” from the dust of the ground, whereas Jesus was immaculately “begotten” in the womb of Mary, then let us remind him that, even according to his own false standards, there is yet another person greater than Jesus, in his own Bible .

Who is this superman? Paul’s Innovation

“For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God... Without father, without mother, without descent, having *neither beginning of days, nor end of life...*” (Hebrews 7:1,3)

Here is a candidate for Divinity itself, for only God Almighty could possess these qualities. Adam had a beginning (in the garden), Jesus had a beginning (in the stable); Adam had an end and, claim the Christians, so had Jesus “and he gave up the ghost”. But where is Melchisedec? Perhaps he is hibernating somewhere like Rip Van Winkel (a fairy tale character who slept for many ages.)

And what is this “Hebrews”? It is the name of one of the Books of the Holy Bible, authored by the gallant St. Paul, the self appointed thirteenth apostle of Christ. Jesus had twelve apostles, but one of them (Judas) had the Devil in him. So the vacancy had to be filled, because of the “twelve” thrones in heaven which had to be occupied by his disciples to judge the children of Israel (Luke 22:30).

Saul was a renegade Jew, and the Christians changed his name to “Paul”, probably because “Saul” sounds Jewish. This St. Paul made such a fine mess of the teachings of Jesus, peace blessings be upon him, that he earned for himself the second most coveted position of “The Most Influential Men of History” in the monumental work of Michael H. Hart: *The 100 or The Top Hundred or the Greatest Hundred in History*. Paul outclasses even Jesus because, according to Michael Hart, Paul was the *real* founder of present day Christianity. The honor of creating Christianity had to be shared between Paul and Jesus, and Paul won because he wrote more Books of the Bible than any other single author, whereas Jesus did not write a single word.

Paul needed no inspiration to write his hyperboles here and in the rest of his Epistles. Did not Hitler’s Minister of Propaganda Goebbels say: “The bigger the lie the more likely it is to be believed”? But the amazing thing about this exaggeration is that no Christian seems to have read it. Every learned man to whom I have shown this verse to, seemed to be seeing it for the first time. They appear dumbfounded, as described by the fitting words of Jesus:

“...seeing they see not, and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.” (Matthew 13:13)

The Holy Quran also contains a verse which fittingly describes this well cultivated sickness:

“Deaf, dumb and blind, will they not return (to the path).” (2:18)

The Sons of God

The Muslim takes strong exception to the Christian dogma that “Jesus is the only begotten son, begotten not made”. This is what the Christian is made to repeat from childhood in his catechism. I have asked learned Christians, again and again as to what they are really trying to emphasize, when they say: “Begotten not made”.

They know that according to their own God given (?) records, God has sons by the tons:

“...Adam, which was the *son of God*.”(Luke 3:38)

“That the *sons of God* saw the daughters of men that they were fair... And when the *sons of God* came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them...” (Genesis 6: 2,4)

“...Israel is *My son*, even *My firstborn*.” (Exodus 4:22)

“...for I (God) am a *Father* to Israel, and Ephraim is *My firstborn*.” (Jeremiah 31:9)

“...the Lord hath said unto me (David): ‘Thou art *My son*: this day have I *begotten* thee.’” (Psalms 2:7)

“For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the *sons of God*.” (Romans 18:14)

Can't you see that in the language of the Jew, every righteous person, every Tom, Dick and Harry who followed the Will and Plan of God, was a “Son of God”. It was a metaphorical descriptive term commonly used among the Jews. The Christian agrees with this reasoning, but goes on to say: “but Jesus was not like that”. Adam was *made* by God. Every living thing was made by God, He is the Lord, Cherisher and Sustainer of all. Metaphorically speaking therefore God is the Father of all. But Jesus was the “begotten” son of God, not a *created* son of God ?

**Begotten Means “Sired”!**

In my forty years of practical experience in talking to learned Christians, not a single one has opened his mouth to hazard an explanation of the phrase “*begotten not made*”. It had to be an American who dared to explain. He said : “It means, *sired* by God.” “What!?” I exploded : “*Sired* by God?” “No, no!” he said, “I am only trying to explain the meaning, I do not believe that God really sired a son.”

The sensible Christian says that the words do not literally mean what they say. Then why do you say it? Why are you creating unnecessary conflict between the 1,200,000,000 Christians and a thousand million Muslims of the world in making senseless statements?

**Reason for Objection** The Muslim takes exception to the word “begotten”, because begetting is an animal act, belonging to the lower animal functions of sex. How can we attribute such a lowly capacity to God? Metaphorically we are all the children of God, the good and the bad, and Jesus would be closer to being the son of God than any one of us, because he would be more faithful to God than any one of us can ever be. From that point of view he is preeminently the son of God.

Although this pernicious word “begotten” has now unceremoniously been thrown out of the “Most Accurate” version of the Bible, the *Revised Standard Version* (R.S.V.), its ghost still lingers on in the Christian mind, both black and white. Through its insidious brainwashing the white man is made to feel superior to his black Christian brother of the same Church and Denomination. And in turn, the black man is given a permanent inferiority complex through this dogma.

**Brain-washed Inferiority**

The human mind can't help reasoning that since the “begotten son” of an African will look like an African, and that of a Chinaman as a Chinese, and that of an Indian like an Indian: so the *begotten* son of God ought naturally to look like God. Billions of beautiful pictures and replicas of this “only begotten son of God” are put in peoples hands. He looks like a European with blonde hair, blue eyes and handsome features like one I saw in the “King of Kings” or “The Day of Triumph” or “Jesus of Nazareth”. Remember Jeffrey Hunter? The “Savior” of the Christian is more like a German than a Jew with his polly nose. So naturally, if the son is a white man, the father would also be a white man (God?). Hence the darker skinned races of the earth subconsciously have the feeling of inferiority ingrained in their souls as God's “step children”. No amount of face creams, skin lighteners and hair straighteners will erase the inferiority.

God is neither black nor white. He is beyond the imagination of the mind of man. Break the mental shackles of a Caucasian (white) man-god, and you have broken the shackles of a permanent inferiority. But intellectual bondages are harder to shatter: the slave himself fights to retain them.

**Chapter Six : Answer to Christian Dilemmas**

“Christ in Islam” is really Christ in the Quran: and the Holy Quran has something definite to say about every aberration of Christianity. The Quran absolves Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, from all the false charges of his enemies as well as the misplaced infatuation of his followers. His enemies allege that he blasphemed against God by claiming Divinity. His misguided followers claim that he did avow Divinity, but that was not blasphemy because he was God. What does the Quran say ?

**Addressing both the Jews and the Christians, Allah says:**

“O People of the Book! commit no excesses in your religion: nor say of Allah (God) aught but the truth. Christ Jesus son of Mary was (no more than) a messenger of Allah (God), and His Word, which he bestowed on Mary, and a Spirit proceeding from Him: so believe in Allah (God) and His messengers...” (4:171)

### Going to Extremes

“O People of the Book” is a very respectful title with which the Jews and the Christians are addressed in the Holy Quran. In other words, Allah is saying “O Learned People!”, “O People with a Scripture!” According to their own boast, the Jews and the Christians prided themselves over the Arabs, who had no Scripture before the Quran. As a learned people, Allah pulls up both the contending religionists for going to either extremes as regards the personality of Christ.

The Jews made certain insinuations about the legitimacy of Jesus and charged him of blasphemy by twisting his words. The Christians read other meanings into his words; wrench words out of their context to make *him* God.

The modern day Christian, the hot – gosseller, the Bible thumper, uses harsher words and cruder approaches to win over a convert to his blasphemies. He says:

- (a) “Either Jesus is God or a liar”
- (b) “Either Jesus is God or a lunatic”
- (c) “Either Jesus is God or an impostor”

These are his words, words culled from Christian literature. Since no man of charity, Muslim or otherwise, can condemn Christ so harshly as the Christian challenges him to do, perforce he must keep non-committal. He thinks he must make a choice between one or the other of these silly extremes. It does not occur to him that there is an alternative to this Christian conundrum.

### Sensible Alternative

Is it not possible that Jesus is simply what he claimed to be, a prophet, like so many other prophets that passed away before him? Even that he is one of the greatest of them, a mighty miracle worker, a great spiritual teacher and guide – the *Messiah!*. Why only God or Lunatic? Is “lunacy” the opposite of “Divinity” in Christianity? What is the antonym of God? Will some clever Christian answer?

The Quran lays bare the true position of Christ in a single verse, followed by a note by Yusuf Ali’s:

“That he was the son of a woman, Mary, and therefore a man;” “But a messenger, a man with a mission from Allah (God), and therefore entitled to honor.” “A Word bestowed on Mary, for he was created by Allah’s word ‘Be’, and he was;”(3:59).

A spirit proceeding from Allah (God), but not Allah: his life and mission were more limited than in the case of some other messengers, though we must pay equal honor to him as a prophet of Allah. The doctrines of Trinity, equality with God, and sons, are repudiated as blasphemies. Allah (God) is independent of all needs and has no need of a son to manage His affairs. The Gospel of John (whoever wrote it) has put a great deal of Alexandrian Gnostic mysticism round the doctrine of the Word (Greek, Logos), but it is simply explained here.”

### Jesus Questioned

Reproduced below are verses 119 to 121 from the Chapter of Maeda (chapter 5 of the Quran) depicting the scene of Judgment Day, when Allah will question Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, regarding the misdirected zeal of his supposed followers in worshipping him and his mother: and his response,

*“And behold! Allah will say: ‘O Jesus the son of Mary! Didst thou say unto men, take me and my mother for two gods beside Allah?’ He will say: ‘Glory to Thee! never could I say what I had no right (to say). Had I said such a thing, Thou wouldst indeed have known it. Thou knowest what is in my heart, Thou I know not what is in Thine. For Thou knowest in full all that is hidden.*

*‘Never said I to them aught except what Thou didst command me to say, to wit, ‘Worship Allah, my Lord and your Lord’; and I was a witness over them whilst I dwelt amongst them; when Thou didst take me up Thou wast the Watcher over them, and Thou art a witness to all things.*

*‘If Thou dost punish them, they are Thy servant: If Thou dost forgive them, Thou art the Exalted in power, the Wise.’” (5:116-118)*

### Claimed No Divinity

If this is the statement of truth from the All-Knowing, that “Never said I to them aught except what Thou didst command me to say, to wit, ‘Worship Allah, my Lord and your Lord’”, then how do the Christians justify worshipping Jesus?

There is not a single unequivocal statement throughout the Bible, in all its 66 volumes of the Protestant versions, or in the 73 volumes of the Roman Catholic versions, where Jesus claims to be God or where he says “worship me”. Nowhere does he say that he and God Almighty “are one” and “the same person.”

The last phrase above “one and the same person” tickles many a “hot-gosseller” and “Bible-thumper,” not excluding the Doctor of Divinity and the Professor of Theology. Even the new converts to Christianity have memorized these verses.

They are programmed to rattle off verses out of context, upon which they can hang their faith. The words “are one” activates the mind by association of memories. “Yes”, say the Trinitarians, the worshippers of three gods in one God, and one God in three gods, “Jesus did claim to be God!” Where?

**Reverend at the Table** I had taken Rev. Morris D.D. and his wife, to lunch at the “Golden Peacock.” While at the table, during the course of our mutual sharing of knowledge, the opportunity arose to ask, “Where?” And without a murmur he quoted, “I and my father are one” to imply that God and Jesus were one and the same person. That Jesus here claims to be God. The verse quoted was well known to me, but it was being quoted *out of context*. It did not carry the meaning that the Doctor was imagining, so I asked him, “What is the context?”

**Choked on “Context”**

The Reverend stopped eating and began staring at me. I said, “Why? Don’t you know the context?”, “You see, what you have quoted is the text, I want to know the context, the text that goes with it, before or after.” Here was an Englishman (Canadian), a paid servant of the Presbyterian Church, a Doctor of Divinity, and it appeared that I was trying to teach him English. Of course he knew what “context” meant. But like the rest of his compatriots, he had not studied the sense in which Jesus had uttered the words.

In my forty years of experience, this text had been thrown at me hundreds of times, but not a single learned Christian had ever attempted to hazard a guess as to its real meaning. They always start fumbling for their Bibles. The Doctor did not have one with him. When they do start going for their Bibles, I stop them in their stride: “Surely, you know what you are quoting?”, “Surely, you know your Bible?” After reading this, I hope some “born-again” Christians will rectify this deficiency. But I doubt that my Muslim readers will ever come across one in their lifetime who could give them the context.

**What is the Context?**

It is unfair on the part of the Reverend, having failed to provide the context, then to ask me, “Do you know the context?” “Of course,” I said. “Then, what is it?” asked my learned friend. I said, “That which you have quoted is the text of John chapter 10, verse 30. To get at the context, we have to begin from verse 23 which reads:

23. “and Jesus was in the temple area walking in Solomon’s Colonnade.” (John 10:23).

John, or whoever he was, who wrote this story, does not tell us the reason for Jesus tempting the Devil by walking alone in the lion’s den. For we do not expect the Jews to miss a golden opportunity to get even with Jesus. Perhaps, he was emboldened by the manner in which he had literally whipped the Jews single-handed in the Temple, and upset the tables of the money changers at the beginning of his ministry (John 2:15).

24. “The Jews gathered around him, saying, “How long will you keep us in suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us plainly.” (John 10:24).

They surrounded him. Brandishing their fingers in his face, they began accusing him and provoking him; saying that he had not put forth his claim plainly enough, clearly enough. That he was talking ambiguously. They were trying to work themselves into a frenzy to assault him. In fact, their real complaint was that they did not like his method of preaching, his invectives, the manner in which he condemned them for their formalism, their ceremonialism, their going for the letter of the law and forgetting the spirit. But Jesus could not afford to provoke them any further there were too many and they were itching for a fight.

Discretion is the better part of valor. In a conciliatory spirit, befitting the occasion:

25. “Jesus answered, I did tell you, but you do not believe. The miracles I do in my Father’s name speak for me,”

26. “but you do not believe because you are not my sheep.” (John 10:25-26).

Jesus rebuts the false charge of his enemies that he was ambiguous in his claims to being the Messiah that they were waiting for. He says that he did tell them clearly enough, yet they would not listen to him, but:



27. "My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me."

28. "I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; no one can snatch them out of my hand."

29. "My Father, who has given them to me, is greater than all; no one can snatch them out of my Father's hand." (John 10:29).

How can anyone be so blind as not to see the exactness of the ending of the last two verses. But spiritual blinkers are more impervious than physical defects. He is telling the Jews and recording for posterity, the real unity or relationship between the Father and the son. The most crucial verse:

30. "I and the Father are one." (John 10:30).

One in what? In their Omniscience? In their Nature? In their Omnipotence? No! One in purpose! That once a believer has accepted faith, the Messenger sees to it that he remains in faith, and God Almighty also sees to it that he remains in faith. This is the purpose of the "Father" and the "son" and the "Holy Ghost" and of every man and every woman of faith. Let the same John explain his Gnostic mystic verbiage.

"That they all may be *one* as thou. Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be *one* in us..."

"I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in *one*..." (John 17:20-22)

If Jesus is "one" with God, and if that "oneness" makes him God, then the traitor Judas, and the doubting Thomas, and the satanic Peter, plus the other nine who deserted him when he was most in need are God(s), because the same "oneness" which he claimed with God in John 10:30, now he claims for all "who forsook him and fled" (Mark 14:50). All "ye of little faith" (Matthew 8:26). All "O faithless and perverse generation" (Luke 9:41). Where and when will the Christian blasphemy end? The expression "I and my Father are one," was very innocent, meaning nothing more than a common purpose with God. But the Jews were looking for trouble and any excuse will not do, therefore,

31. "Again the Jews picked up stones to stone him,"

32. "but Jesus said to them, I have shown you many great miracles from the Father. For which of these do you stone me?"

33. "The Jews answered him, saying : 'For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself a God.'" (John 10:31-33).

In verse 24 above the Jews falsely alleged that Jesus was talking ambiguously. When that charge was ably refuted, they then accused him of blasphemy which is like treason in the spiritual realm. So they say that Jesus is claiming to be God "I and the Father are one". The Christians agree with the Jews in this that Jesus did make such a claim; but differ in that it was not blasphemy because the Christians say that he was God and was entitled to own up to his Divinity.

The Christians and the Jews are both agreed that the utterance is serious. To one as an excuse for good "redemption", and to the other as an excuse for good "riddance". Between the two, let the poor Jesus die. But Jesus refuses to co-operate in this game, so:

34. "Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your Law, 'I have said you are gods'?"

35. "If he called them 'gods,' to whom the word of God came –and the Scripture cannot be broken–,"

36. "what about the one whom the Father set apart as his very own and sent into the world? Why then do you accuse me of blasphemy because I said, 'I am God's Son'?" (John 10:34-36).

Why "Your Law"?

He is a bit sarcastic in verse 34, but in any event, why does he say: "Your Law"? Is it not also *his* Law? Didn't he say: "Think not that I am come to destroy the *Law* of the prophets: I am come not to destroy, but to fulfill (the Law). For

verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass away, one Jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the *Law*, till all be fulfilled.” (Matthew 5:1718).

“You are Gods”

“You are gods:” He is obviously quoting from the 82nd Psalm , verse 6, “I have said, *ye are gods*: and all of you are the children of the most High.”

Jesus, continues: “If he (i.e. God Almighty) called them gods, unto whom the word of God came (meaning that the prophets of God were called ‘gods’) and the scripture cannot be broken...” (John 10:35), in other words he is saying: “you can’t contradict me!” Jesus knows his Scripture; he speaks with authority; and he reasons with his enemies that: “If good men, holy men, prophets of God are being addressed as ‘gods’ in our Books of Authority, with which you find no fault, then why do you take exception to me? When the only claim I make for myself is far inferior in our language, viz. ‘A son of God’ as against others being called ‘gods’ by God Himself. Even if I (Jesus) described myself as ‘god’ in our language, according to Hebrew usage, you could find no fault with me.” This is the plain reading of Christian Scripture. I am giving no interpretations of my own or some esoteric meaning to words!

*Chapter Seven* : “In The Beginning”

“Where does Jesus say: ‘I am God,’ or ‘I am equal to God,’ or ‘Worship me?’” I asked the Rev. Morris again.

He took a deep breath and took another try. He quoted the most oft-repeated verse of the Christian Bible – John 1:1.

“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.”

Please note, these are not the words of Jesus. They are the words of John (or whoever wrote them). Acknowledged by every erudite Christian scholar of the Bible as being the words of another Jew, Philo of Alexandria, who had written them even before John and Jesus were born. And Philo claimed no divine inspiration for them. No matter what mystical meaning that Philo had woven around these words (which our John has plagiarized), we will accept them for what they are worth.

Greek not Hebrew

Since the manuscripts of the 27 Books of the New Testament are in Greek, a Christian sect has produced its own version and has even changed the name of this selection of 27 Books to *Christian Greek Scriptures* ! I asked the Reverend whether he knew Greek? “Yes,” he said, He had studied Greek for 5 years before qualification. I asked him what was the Greek word for “God” the first time it occurs in the quotation “and the Word was With God”? He kept staring, but didn’t answer. So I said, the word was *Hotheos*, which literally means “The God”.

Since the European (including the North American) has evolved a system of using capital letters to start a proper noun and small letters for common nouns, we would accept his giving a capital “G” for God; in other words *Hotheos* is rendered “the god” which in turn is rendered “God”.

“Now tell me, what is the Greek word for “God” in the second occurrence in your quotation – “and the Word was God”? The Reverend still kept silent. Not that he did not know Greek, or that he had lied, but he knew more than that; *the game was up*. I said : “the word was *Tontheos*, which means “a god”.

According to your own system of translating you ought to have spelt this word ‘God’ a second time with a small ‘g’ i.e. ‘god’, and not ‘God’ with a capital ‘G’; in other words *Tontheos* is rendered “a god”. Both of these, “god” or “a god” are correct.

I told the Reverend: “But in 2 Corinthians 4:4 you have dishonestly reversed your system by using a small ‘g’ when spelling ‘God’ “(and the devil is) the god of this world.” The Greek word for “the god” is *Hotheos* the same as in John 1:1. “Why have you not been consistent in your translations ?” “If Paul was inspired to write *hotheos* the God for the Devil, why don’t you use that capital ‘G’?”

And in the Old Testament, the Lord said unto Moses: “See, I have made thee a god to Pharaoh” (Exodus 7:1). “Why do you use a small ‘g’ for ‘God’ when referring to Moses instead of a capital ‘G’ as you do for a mere word ‘Word’ – “and the Word was God.”?”

“Why do you do this? Why do you play fast and loose with the Word of God?” I asked the reverend. He said, “I didn’t do it.” I said, “I know, but I am talking about the vested interests of Christianity, who are hell-bent to deify Christ, by using capital letters here and small letters there, to deceive the unwary masses who think that every letter, every comma and full stop and the capital and small letters were dictated by God (Capital ‘G’ here!).”

### *Chapter Eight : What is Left*

#### Three Topics

It can hardly be expected in a small publication of this nature that one can deal with all the references about Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, interspersed throughout the fifteen different chapters of the Holy Quran. What we can do is to give a quick glance to the index page reproduced from the Quran earlier in this letter.

Here we find three significant topics, not dealt with yet in our discussion:

Not crucified, (4:157).

Message and miracles,(5:113, 19:30-33).

Prophesied Ahmed, (61:6).

Regarding the first topic, “not crucified”, I had written a booklet under the heading “Was Christ Crucified?” some twenty years ago. The book is presently out of print, and further, it needs updating, for much water has passed under the bridge since it first saw the light of day.

As regards the third topic mentioned above, “Prophesied Ahmed”, I propose to write a booklet under the title “Muhammed, *salla Allah u alihi wa sallam*, the Natural Successor to Christ” after I have completed “Was Christ Crucified?”, I hope to complete both these projects soon, *Insha Allah!* (Arabic: “By the will of Allah”).

#### The Way to Salvation

We are now left with Topic No. 2, “Message and miracles”. The message of Jesus was as simple and straight forward as that of all his predecessors as well as that of his successor Muhammed, *salla Allah u alihi wa sallam*, namely “Believe in God and keep His Commandments”. For the God who inspired His Messengers, is an *unvarying* God and He is consistent: He is not the “author of confusion” (1.Corinthian14:33).

A law abiding Jew comes to Jesus seeking eternal life or salvation. In the words of Matthew:

“And behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.” (Matthew 19:16-17)

You will agree, that if you or I were that Jew, we would infer from these words that, according to Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, salvation was guaranteed, provided we kept the commandments without the shedding of any innocent blood. Unless, of course Jesus was speaking with tongue in cheek; knowing full well that his own “forthcoming redemptive sacrifice”, his “vicarious atonement” (?) for the sins of mankind, was not many days hence.

Why would Jesus give him the *impossible* solution of keeping the Law (as the Christian alleges) when an easier way was in the offing? Or did he not know what was going to happen, that he was to be crucified? Was there not a contract between Father and Son, before the worlds began, for his redeeming blood to be shed? Had he lost his memory? No! There was no such fairy tale agreement as far as Jesus was concerned. He knew that there is only one way to God, and that is, as Jesus said, “keep the Commandments”!

## Miracles, What They Prove

Regarding his miracles: the Holy Quran does not go into any detail about blind Bartimus or about Lazarus or any other miracle, except that he (Jesus) defended his mother as an infant in his mother's arms. The Muslim has no hesitation about accepting the most wondrous of his miracles – even that of reviving the dead. But that does not make Jesus a “God” or the begotten “Son of God” as understood by the Christian.

Miracles do not prove even prophethood, or whether a man is true or false. Jesus himself said:

“For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.”(Matthew 24:24)

If false prophets and false Christs can perform miraculous feats, then these wonders or miracles do not prove even the geniuses or otherwise, of a prophet.

John the Baptist, according to Jesus, was the greatest of the Israelite prophets. Greater than Moses, David, Solomon, Isaiah and all, not excluding himself: in his own words:

“Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist...”  
(Matthew 11:11)

Not excluding Jesus: because, was he not born of a woman – Mary?

The Baptist, greater than “all”, yet he performed not a single miracle! Miracles are no standards of judging truth and falsehood. But in his childishness, the might Christian insists that Jesus is God because he gave life back to the dead. Will reviving the dead make others God too? This perplexes him, because he has mentally blocked himself from the miracles of others who outshine Jesus in his own Bible. For example, according to his false standard:

Moses is greater than Jesus because he put life back into a dead stick and transmuted it from the plant kingdom to the animal kingdom by making it into a serpent (Exodus 7:10).

Elisha is greater than Jesus because the bones of Elisha brought a man back to life merely by coming into contact with the corpse (2 Kings 13:21).

Need I illustrate to you a catalogue of miracles? But the sickness persists – “it was God working miracles through His prophets but Jesus performed them of his own power.” Where did Jesus get all his power from? Ask Jesus, and he will tell us.

**Power not His Own.**

“...All power is *given* unto me in heaven and in earth.” (Matthew 28:18)

“...I cast out devils *by the Spirit of God* then the kingdom of God is come unto you.” (Matthew 12:28)

“I can of mine *own self* do nothing ” (John 5:30)

“I with the *finger of God* cast out devils” (Luke 1 1:20)

**Borrowed Power**

The “power” as he says is not his, “it is given unto me”. Given by whom? By God, of course! Every action, every word he attributes to God.

## Lazarus

But since so much is made of Jesus' mightiest miracle of reviving Lazarus from the dead, we will analyze the episode as recorded in John's Gospel. It is astonishing that none of the other Gospel writers mention Lazarus in any context. However, the story is that Lazarus was very sick, his sisters Mary and Martha had made frantic calls for Jesus to come and cure his sickness but he arrived too late, actually four days after his demise.

## He Groaned

Mary wails to Jesus that had he arrived in time, perhaps her brother would not have died; meaning that if he could heal other peoples' sicknesses, why would he not have healed her brother, a dear friend of his. Jesus says that "even now if ye have faith, ye shall see the glory of god." The condition was that they should have faith. Didn't he say that faith could move mountains?

He asks to be taken to the tomb. On the way, "he groaned in the spirit". He was not mumbling; he was pouring out his heart and praying to God. But while he sobbed so bitterly his words were not audible enough for people around him to understand. Hence the words "he groaned". On reaching the grave, Jesus "groaned" again; perhaps, even more earnestly and God heard his groaning (his prayer), and Jesus received the assurance that God will fulfill his request. Now, Jesus could rest assured and command that the stone which was barring the tomb, be removed so that Lazarus could come back from the dead. Without that assurance from God, Jesus would have made a fool of himself.

## Avoiding Misunderstanding

Mary thinks of the stink because her brother had been dead for four days! But Jesus was confident and the stone was removed. Then he looked up towards heaven and said:

"Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me." (John 11:41-42)

What is all this, play – acting? Why all the drama? Because he knew that these superstitious and credulous people will misunderstand the source of the miracle. They might take him for "God". Giving life to the dead is the prerogative of God alone. To make doubly sure, that his people do not misunderstand, he speaks out loudly that the "groaning" was actually his crying to God Almighty for help. The prayer was incoherent as far as the bystanders could discern, but the Father in heaven had accepted his prayer, viz. "thou hast heard me".

Furthermore, he says, "thou hearest me always"; in other words, every miracle wrought by him was an answer by God Almighty to his prayer. The Jews of his day understood the position well, and they "glorified God", as Matthew tells us of another occasion when the Jews exclaimed "for giving such power unto men" (Matt. 9:8).

In fact, Jesus gives his reason for speaking loudly. He says, "that they may believe that thou has sent me." One who is sent is a messenger, and if he be sent by God, then he is a Messenger of God i.e. *Rasulullah*. Jesus is referred to in the Quran as *Rasulullah* ("Messenger of Allah").

Alas, this attempt by Jesus to prevent any misunderstanding, as to who really performed the miracle, and that he was in fact only a messenger of God, failed. Christians will not even accept the unambiguous disavowal of Jesus, nor the testimony of Peter, the "Rock" upon which Jesus was supposed to build his Church. Peter truly testified:

"Ye men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus of Nazareth, A man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know. " (Acts 2:22)

## Case Not Hopeless

This very same message is repeated by God Almighty in the Holy Quran, following the annunciation. In verse 49 of chapter 3, Allah makes it clear that every sign or wonder that Jesus performed was "By Allah's leave," by God's permission. Jesus says so, Peter says so and God says so; but the stubborn controversialist will not listen: prejudice,

superstition and credulity die hard. Our duty is simply to deliver the Message, loud and clear, the rest we leave to God. The case is not altogether hopeless for Allah tells us in His Holy Book:

“And among them are some who have faith, but most of them are perverted transgressors.” (3:110)

“Among them”, meaning among the Jews and the Christians, there are two types of people; the one group described as people of faith to whom this book is addressed, and the other as rebellious transgressors. We must also find ways and means of getting at them. Our literature is eminently suited to cater for all. Pass them on to your non – Muslim friends after reading.

Open the Holy Quran and make your Christian friends and acquaintances to read the verses discussed in this book. Then we can truly conclude:

*“Such (was) Jesus the son of Mary:  
(it is) a statement of truth, about which  
they (vainly) dispute.*

*“It is not befitting to (the majesty of) Allah  
(God) that He should beget a son. Glory be to Him!  
when He determines a matter, He only says to it,  
'Be', and it is.*

*“Verily Allah is my Lord and your Lord:  
Him therefore serve ye: this is a Way that is straight.” (19:34-36)*

### **What Non-Muslim scholars say about Prophet Muhammad (PBUH)**

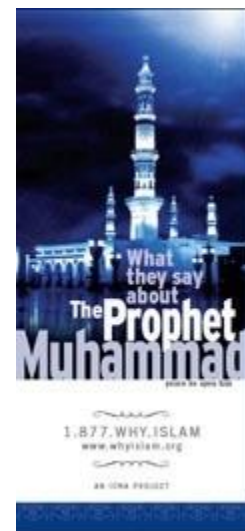
During the centuries of the crusades, all sorts of slanders were invented against the Prophet Muhammad. However, with the birth of the modern age, marked with religious tolerance and freedom of thought, there has been a great change in the approach of Western authors in their delineation of his life and character.

The West, however, has yet to go a step forward to

discover the greatest reality about Muhammad (p); that is his being the true and the last Prophet of God for all humanity.

Despite all its objectivity and enlightenment, there has been no sincere and objective attempt by the West to understand the Prophethood of Muhammad (p). It is so strange that very glowing tributes are paid to him for his integrity and achievement but his claim of being the Prophet of God is rejected explicitly or implicitly. It is here that a searching of the heart is required, and a review of the so-called objectivity is needed. The following glaring facts from the life of Muhammad (p) have been furnished to facilitate an unbiased, logical and objective decision regarding his Prophethood.

Up to the age of forty, Muhammad (p) was not known as a statesman, a preacher or an orator. He was never seen discussing the principles of metaphysics, ethics, law, politics, economics or sociology. No doubt he possessed an excellent character and charming manners and was known to be highly cultured. Yet there was nothing so deeply striking and so radically extraordinary in him that would make men expect something great and revolutionary from him in the future. But when he came out of the Cave of Hira, with a new message, he was completely transformed. .Is it possible for a person



known to possess an upright and unblemished character, to suddenly turn an impostor. and claim to be the

Prophet of God?. It is well known that his claim invited the rage of his people, and marked the beginning of a long, arduous struggle. One might ask: .for what reason did he suffer all those hardships?His people offered to accept him as their King and to lay all the riches of the land at his feet if only he would leave the preaching of his message. But he turned down their alluring offers and continued to preach in the face of insults, social boycott and even physical assault. Furthermore, had he come with a design of rivalry with the Christians and the Jews, why should he have believed in Jesus Christ and Moses and other Prophets of God (peace be upon them), which is a basic requirement of faith without which no one could be a Muslim?

It is well known that Muhammad (p) was unlettered and had led a very uneventful life before he announced his mission to the world at the age of forty. Is it not an

incontrovertible proof of his Prophethood, that despite being unlettered, all of Arabia stood in awe and wonder when he began preaching his message, and was bewitched by the wonderful eloquence of his message? The whole legion of Arab poets, preachers and orators of the highest caliber failed to bring forth the equivalent of the Qur.an, which remains inimitable to this day. And above all, how could he then pronounce truths of scientific nature contained in the Qur.an that no human being could possibly have discovered at that time

Last, but not the least, why did he lead a hard life even after gaining power and authority? The words he uttered while dying were: .We the community of the Prophets are not inherited. Whatever we leave is for charity.

As a matter of fact, Muhammad (p), is the last link of Prophets sent in different lands and times since the beginning of the human life on earth.

If greatness of purpose, smallness of means, and astounding results are the three criteria of human genius, who could dare to compare any great man in modern history with Muhammad? The most famous men created arms, laws and empires only. They founded, if anything at all, no more than material powers which often crumbled away before their eyes. This man moved not only armies, legislations, empires, peoples and dynasties, but millions of men in one-third of the then inhabited world; and more than that, he moved the altars, the gods, the religions, the ideas, the beliefs and souls... His forbearance in victory, his ambition, which was entirely devoted to one idea and in no manner striving for an empire; his endless prayers, his mystic conversations with God, his death and his triumph after death; all these attest not to an impostor but to a firm conviction which gave him the power to restore a dogma. This dogma was twofold, the unity of God and the immateriality of God; the former telling what God is, the latter telling what God is not; the one overthrowing false gods with the sword, the other starting an idea with the words.

Philosopher, orator, apostle, legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, of a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire, that is Muhammad. As regards all standards by which human greatness may be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?[Lamartine, Histoire de la Turquie, Paris 1854 Vol. II, pp. 276-77.]

It is not the propagation but the permanency of his religion that deserves our wonder; the same pure and perfect impression that he engraved at Mecca and Medina is preserved, after the revolutions of twelve centuries by the Indian, the African and the Turkish proselytes of the Koran... The Mahometans have uniformly withstood the temptation of reducing the object of their faith and devotion to a level with the senses and imagination of man. I believe in One God and Mahomet the Apostle of God., is the simple and invariable profession of Islam. The intellectual image of the Deity has never been degraded by any visible idol; the honors of the prophet have never transgressed the measure of human virtue; and his living precepts have restrained the gratitude of his disciples within the bounds of reason and religion.[Edward Gibbon and Simon Ockley, History of the Saracen Empire, London 1870, p. 54.]

He was Caesar and Pope in one; but he was Pope without Popes pretensions, Caesar without the legions of Caesar: without a standing army, without a bodyguard, without a palace, without a fixed revenue; if ever any man had the right to say that he ruled by the right divine, it was Mohammad, for he had all the power without its instruments and without its supports.[Bosworth Smifu, Mohammad and Mohammadanism. London 1874, p. 92.]

.It is impossible for anyone who studies the life and character of the great Prophet of Arabia, who knows how he taught and how he lived, to feel anything but reverence for that mighty Prophet, one of the great messengers of the Supreme. And although in what I put to you I shall say many things which may be familiar to many, yet I myself feel whenever I re-read them, a new way of admiration, a new sense of reverence for that mighty Arabian teacher.[Annie Besant, The Life and Teachings of Muhammad, Madras 1932, p.4]

His readiness to undergo persecutions for his beliefs, the high moral character of the men who believed in him and looked up to him as leader, and the greatness of his ultimate achievement all argue his fundamental integrity. To suppose Muhammad an impostor raises more problems than it solves. Moreover, none of the great figures of history is so poorly appreciated in the West as Muhammad.[W. Montgomery, Mohammad at Mecca, Oxford, 1953, p. 52.]

Muhammad, the inspired man who founded Islam, was born about A.D. 570 into an Arabian tribe that worshipped idols. Orphaned at birth, he was always particularly solicitous of the poor and needy, the widow and the orphan, the slave and the downtrodden. At twenty he was already a successful businessman, and soon became director of camel caravans for a wealthy widow. When he reached twenty-five his employer, recognizing his merit, proposed marriage. Even though she was fifteen years older, he married her, and as long as she lived remained a devoted husband.

Like almost every major prophet before him, Muhammad fought shy of serving as the transmitter of God's word, sensing his own inadequacy. But the angel commanded Read.. So far as we know, Muhammad was unable to read or write, but he began to dictate those inspired words which would soon revolutionize a large segment of the earth; .There is one God.

In all things Muhammad was profoundly practical. When his beloved son Ibrahim died, an eclipse occurred, and rumors of God's personal condolence quickly arose. Whereupon Muhammad is said to have announced, An eclipse is a phenomenon of nature. It is foolish to attribute such things to the death or birth of a human being..

At Muhammad's own death an attempt was made to deify him, but the man who was to become his administrative successor killed the hysteria with one of the noblest speeches in religious history: If there are any among you who worshipped Muhammad, he is dead. But if it is God you worshipped, He lives forever..

[James A. Michener, Islam The Misunderstood Religion., In the Reader's Digest (American Edition) for May 1955, pp. 68-70.]

[Source : WAMY3 Series on Islam]

1. The 100: A Ranking of the Most Influential Persons in History, New York: Hart Publishing Company, Inc., 1978, p. 33.
2. (p) here stands for .peace be upon him3. World Assembly of Muslim Youth

## **Muhammad's Prophethood: Intellectual Proofs**

---

Table of Contents



**1. The Prophet (pbuh) was unlettered.** He did not know how to read or write. He lived among a people who were unlettered as well. Therefore one cannot claim that the Qur'an was authored by Muhammad (pbuh)! God, the Exalted, says:

"And you did not recite any Book before it, nor did you write one with your right hand; in that case the liars would have doubted." (29:48)

**2. The Arabs were challenged to bring forth something similar to the Qur'an, and they were unable to do so!** The beauty, structure and deep meanings of the Qur'an amazed the Arabs. The Qur'an is the everlasting miracle of Muhammad (pbuh). The Messenger of God (pbuh) said:

"The miracles of the Prophets (before Muhammad pbuh) were confined to their times. The miracle I have been given is the Qur'an, which is everlasting; therefore, I hope to have the most followers." (Bukhari 4598)

Even though his people were eloquent and well known for their awesome poetry, God challenged them to produce similar to the Qur'an, but they couldn't. God then challenged them to produce a chapter similar to it, and they couldn't.

God says:

"And if you are in doubt as to what We have sent down to Our slave, then produce a chapter like it, and call upon your helpers beside Allah, if you are truthful." (2:23)

God challenges mankind at large to bring forth similar to the Qur'an. God says:

"Say, 'if mankind and the Jinn gathered together to produce the like of this Qur'an, they could not produce the like thereof, even though they should help one another.'" (17:88)

**3. The Prophet pbuh continued preaching and calling people to Islam, even though he faced many hardships and was confronted by his people, who were plotting to kill him.** Yet the Prophet pbuh continued preaching, and was patient. If he was an imposter - he would stop preaching and would have feared for his life.

**W. Montgomery Watt** said:

His readiness to undergo persecution for his beliefs, the high moral character of the men who believed in him and looked up to him as a leader, and the greatness of his ultimate achievement - all argue his fundamental integrity. To suppose Muhammad an impostor raises more problems that it solves. Moreover, none of the great figures of history is so poorly appreciated in the West as Muhammad.... Thus, not merely must we credit Muhammad with essential honesty and integrity of purpose, if we are

to understand him at all; if we are to correct the errors we have inherited from the past, we must not forget the conclusive proof is a much stricter requirement than a show of plausibility, and in a matter such as this only to be attained with difficulty.

**4. Every person loves the ornaments and beauties of this life, and would be swayed by these things.** God, the Exalted, says:

"Beautified for men is the love of desired things –women and children, and stored-up heaps of gold and silver, and pastured horses and cattle and crops. That is the provision of the present life; but it is God with Whom is an excellent abode." (3:14)

Man, by his nature, is keen in acquiring ornaments and beauties of this world. People differ in the method they use to acquire these things. Some would resort to using lawful means to gain these things, while others would resort to using unlawful means to acquire these things.

If this is known (you should know that) Quraish tried to persuade the Prophet (pbuh) to stop calling people to Islam. They told him that they would make him the master of Quraish, marry him to the most beautiful women, and make him the most affluent man amongst them. He responded to these tempting offers, saying:

"By God, if they place the sun in my right hand, and the moon in my left hand to leave this matter, I would not leave it, until God makes it apparent, or I am killed calling people to it." (Ibn Hisham)

Were the Prophet (pbuh) an impostor he would have accepted this offer without hesitation.

**Thomas Carlyle**, said:

"They called him a prophet, you say? Why, he stood there face to face with them, here, not enshrined in any mystery, visibly clouting his own cloak, cobbling his own shoes, fighting, counseling ordering in the midst of them. They must have seen what kind of a man he was, let him be called what ye like. No emperor with his tiaras was obeyed as this man in a cloak of his own clouting. During three and twenty ears of rough, actual trial, I find something of a veritable hero necessary for that of itself."<sup>40</sup>

**5. It is well known that subjects and wealth of a kingdom are subjected to the will of the king, and his service.** As for Muhammad (pbuh) he knew that this life was a transitory stage.

Ibraheem b. Alqamah said that Abdullah said: 'The Prophet (pbuh) lay down on a straw mat which had marked his side, so I said: 'O Messenger of God! I ransom you with my mother and father! Allow us to put bedding on this mat that you lay on, so your side would not be affected and marked.' The Prophet (pbuh) said:

"My example in this life is like a rider who took rest under the shade of a tree then continued on his journey." (Ibn Majah #4109)

An-Nu'man b. Basheer said:

"I saw your Prophet (pbuh) (during a time) when he was not able to even find low quality dates to fill his stomach." (Muslim #2977)

Abu Hurairah said:

"The Messenger of God (pbuh) never filled his stomach for three consecutive days until his death." (Bukhari #5059)

Even though the Arabian Peninsula was under his control, and he was the source of goodness for its people, the Prophet (pbuh) would at some times not find food to suffice him. His wife, A'ishah said that the Prophet (pbuh) bought some food from a Jew (and agreed to pay him at a later time) and he

gave him his armor as collateral.' (Bukhari #2088)

This does not mean that he could not obtain what he wanted; for the moneys and wealth would be placed in front of him in his Masjid, and he would not move from his spot, until he distributed it amongst the poor and needy. Among his Companions were those who were wealthy and affluent - they would rush to serve him and would give up the most valuable of things for him. The reason the Prophet (pbuh) renounced the riches of this world, was because he knew the reality of this life. He said:

"The likeness of this world to the Hereafter, is like a person who dipped his finger in the ocean - let him see what would return." (Muslim #2858)

**Reverend Bosworth Smith** said:

If ever a man ruled by a right divine, it was Muhammad, for he had all the powers without their supports. He cared not for the dressings of power. The simplicity of his private life was in keeping with his public life.<sup>41</sup>

**6. Certain incidents would befall the Prophet of God (pbuh) which would need clarification, and he would not be able to do anything because he did not receive revelation regarding it.**

During this period (i.e. between the incident and revelation) he would be exhausted. One such incident is the incident of Ifk<sup>42</sup> wherein the Prophet's wife A'ishah was accused of being treacherous. The Prophet (pbuh) did not receive revelation concerning this incident for one month; during which his enemies talked ill of him, until revelation was revealed and the innocence of A'ishah was declared. Were the Prophet (pbuh) an imposter he would have resolved this incident the minute it came about. God says:

"Nor does he speak out of desire." (53:3)

**7. The Prophet (pbuh) did not ask people to adulate him.** On the contrary, the Prophet (pbuh) would not be pleased if a person adulated him in any way. Anas said:

"There was no individual more beloved to the Companions than the Messenger of God.' He said: 'If they saw him, they would not stand up for him, because they knew he disliked that.' " (Tirmidhi #2754)

**Washington Irving**, said:

"His military triumphs awakened no pride nor vain glory as they would have done had they been effected by selfish purposes. In the time of his greatest power he maintained the same simplicity of manner and appearance as in the days of his adversity. So far from affecting regal state, he was displeased if, on entering a room, any unusual testimonial of respect was shown to him."

**8. Some verses from the Qur'an were revealed in which the Prophet (pbuh) was blamed and admonished**, due to some incident or happening; such as:

**a.** The words of God, the Exalted:

"O Prophet! Why do you forbid (for yourself) that which God has allowed to you, seeking to please your wives? And God is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful." (66:1)

The Prophet (pbuh) abstained from eating honey, due to the behavior of some of his wives. God then admonished him because he forbade upon himself what God deemed lawful.

**b.** God, the Exalted, says:

"May God forgive you (O Muhammad). Why did you grant them leave (for remaining behind; you should have persisted as regards your order to them to proceed on Jihad) until those who told the truth were seen by you in a clear light, and you had known the liars?" (9:43)

God admonished the Prophet (pbuh) because he quickly accepted the false excuses of the hypocrites who lagged behind in the Battle of Tabook. He forgave them and accepted their excuses, without verifying them.

**c.** God, the Exalted, says:

"It is not for a Prophet that he should have prisoners of war (and free them with ransom) until he had made a great slaughter (among his enemies) in the land. You desire the good of this world, but God desires for you the Hereafter. And God is All-Mighty, All-Wise." (8:67)

**d.** God, the Exalted, says:

"Not for you (O Muhammad, but for God) is the decision; whether He turns in mercy, to (pardon) them or punishes them; verily, they are the wrong-doers." (3:128)

**e.** God, the Exalted, says:

"The Prophet frowned and turned away. Because there came to him the blind man. And how can you know that he might become pure from sins? Or he might receive admonition, and the admonition might profit him?" (80:1-4)

Abdullah b. Umm Maktoom, who was blind, came to the Prophet (pbuh) while he was preaching to one or some of the Quraish leaders, and the Prophet (pbuh) frowned and turned away - and God admonished him on account of that.

Therefore, were the Prophet (pbuh) an imposter, these verses would not be found in the Qur'an.

**Muhammad Marmaduke Pickthall** said:

One day when the Prophet was in conversation with one of the great men of Qureysh, seeking to persuade him of the truth of Al-Islam, a blind man came and asked him a question concerning the faith. The Prophet was annoyed at the interruption, frowned and turned away from the blind man. In this Surah he is told that a man's importance is not to be judged from his appearance or worldly station.<sup>43</sup>

**9. One of the sure signs of his Prophethood is found in the Chapter of Lahab (chapter 111) in the Qur'an.** In it God, the Exalted, condemned Abu Lahab (the Prophet's uncle) to the torment of Hell. This chapter was revealed during the early stages of his Da'wah (call to Islam). Were the Prophet (pbuh) an imposter he would not issue a ruling like this; since his uncle might accept Islam afterwards!

**Dr. Gary Miller** says:

For example, the Prophet (pbuh) had an uncle by the name of Abu Lahab. This man hated Islam to such an extent that he used to follow the Prophet around in order to discredit him. If Abu Lahab saw the Prophet (pbuh) speaking to a stranger, he would wait until they parted and then would go back to the stranger and ask him, 'What did he tell you? Did he say black? Well, it's white. Did he say 'Morning?' Well, it's night.' He faithfully said the exact opposite of whatever he heard Muhammad (pbuh) say. However, about ten years before Abu Lahab died a little chapter in the Qur'an was revealed to him. It distinctly stated that he would go to the Fire (i.e. Hell). In other words, it affirmed that he would never become a Muslim and would therefore be condemned forever. For ten years all Abu Lahab had to do was say, 'I heard that it has been revealed to Muhammad that I will never change – that I will never become a Muslim and will enter the Hellfire. Well I want to become a Muslim now. How do you like that? What do you think of your divine revelation now?' But he never did that. And yet, that is exactly the kind of behavior one would have expected from him since he always sought to contradict Islam. In essence, Muhammad (pbuh) said: 'You hate me and you want to finish me? Here, say these words, and I am finished. Come on, say them!' But Abu Lahab never said them. Ten years! And in all that time he never accepted Islam or even became sympathetic to the Islamic cause. How could Muhammad possibly have known for sure that Abu Lahab would fulfill the Qur'anic revelation if he (i.e. Muhammad) was not truly the Messenger of Allah? How could he possibly have been so confident as to give someone ten years to discredit his claim of Prophethood? The only answer is that he was Allah's Messenger; for in order to put forth such a risky challenge, one has to be entirely convinced that he has a divine revelation.<sup>44</sup>

**10. The Prophet (pbuh) is called: 'Ahmed' in a verse of the Qur'an instead of 'Muhammad'.**

God, the Exalted, says:

"And remember when Eesa, son of Maryam said: 'O Chil-dren of Israel! I am the Messenger of God unto you, con-firming the Torah which came before me, and giving glad tidings of a Messenger to come after me, whose name shall be Ahmed. But when he came to them with clear proofs, they said: 'This is plain magic.' " (61:6)

Were he an imposter, the name 'Ahmed' would not have been mentioned in the Qur'an, since he was known as 'Muhammad' amongst his people.

**11. The religion of Islam still exists today and is spreading all over the Globe.** Thousands of people embrace Islam and prefer it over all other religions. This happens even though the callers to Islam are not financially backed as expected; and in spite of the efforts of the enemies of Islam to halt the spread of Islam. God, the Exalted, says:

"Verily, We sent down the Reminder (i.e. the Qur'an) and surely, We will guard it from corruption."  
(15:9)

**Thomas Carlyle** said:

A false man found a religion? Why, a false man cannot build a brick house! If he does not know and follow truly the proper-ties of mortar, burnt clay and what else he works in, it is no house that he makes, but a rubbish-heap. It will not stand for twelve centuries, to lodge a hundred and eighty millions; it will fall straightway. A man must conform himself to Na-ture's laws, \_be\_ verily in communion with Nature and the truth of things, or Nature will answer him, No, not at all! Spe-ciosities are specious--ah me!--a Cagliostro, many Cagliostros, prominent world-leaders, do prosper by their quackery, for a day. It is like a forged bank-note; they get it passed out of \_their\_ worthless hands: others, not they, have to smart for it. Nature bursts up in fire-flames; French Revolutions and such like, proclaiming with terrible veracity that forged notes are forged. But of a Great Man especially, of him I will venture to assert that it is incredible he should have been other than true. It seems to me the primary foundation of him, and of all that can lie in him, this.<sup>45</sup>

The Prophet pbuh preserved the Qur'an, after God had preserved it in the Books, chests of men generation after generation. In-deed memorizing and reciting it, learning and teaching it are among the things Muslims are very keen on doing, for the Prophet pbuh said:

"The best of you are those who learn the Qur'an and teach it."

((Bukhari #4639))

Many have tried to add and omit verses from the Qur'an, but they have never been successful; for these mistakes are discov-ered almost immediately.

As for the Sunnah of the Messenger of God (pbuh) which is the second source of legislation in Islam, it has been preserved by trustworthy pious men. They spent their lives gathering these traditions, and scrutinizing them to separate the weak from the authentic; they even clarified which narrations were fabricated. Whoever looks at the books written in the science of Hadeeth will realize this, and that the narrations that are authentic are in fact authentic.

**Michael Hart**<sup>46</sup> says:

Muhammad founded and promulgated one of the world's great religions<sup>47</sup>, and became an immensely effective political leader. Today, thirteen centuries after his death, his influence is still powerful and pervasive.

**12. Veracity and truthfulness of his principles and that they are good and suitable for every time and place.** The results of the application of Islam are clear and well known, which in turn testify that it is indeed a revelation from God. Further-more, is it not possible for Prophet Muhammad (pbuh) to be a Prophet, as many Prophets and Messengers were sent before him? If the answer to this query is that there is nothing that prevents this - we then ask, 'why do you reject his Prophethood, and confirm the Prophethood of the Prophets be-fore him?'

**13. Man cannot bring about laws similar to the laws of Islam which deal with every aspect of life, such as transactions, marriage, social conduct, politics, acts of worship and the like.**

So, how can an unlettered man bring something like this? Isn't this a clear proof and sign of his Prophethood?

**14. The Prophet (pbuh) did not start calling people to Islam until he turned forty years old.**

His youth had passed and the age in which he should have rest and spend his time leisurely, was the age in which he was commissioned as a Prophet and charged with the dissemination of Islam.

**Thomas Carlyle**, said:

It goes greatly against the impostor theory, the fact that he lived in this entirely unexceptionable, entirely quiet and commonplace way, till the heat of his years was done. He was forty before he talked of any mission from Heaven. All his irregularities, real and supposed, date from after his fiftieth year, when the good Kadajah died. All his "ambition," seemingly, had been, hitherto, to live an honest life; his "fame," the mere good opinion of neighbors that knew him, had been sufficient hitherto. Not till he was already getting old, the prurient heat of his life all burnt out, and \_peace\_ growing to be the chief thing this world could give him, did he start on the "career of ambition;" and, belying all his past character and existence, set up as a wretched empty charlatan to acquire what he could now no longer enjoy! For my share, I have no faith whatever in that.<sup>48</sup>

**Surah 47. Muhammad (this part of the Quran was revealed when Muhammad was forced out of Mecca & it was a time of war & crimes against Muslims)**

**1.** Those who reject Allah and hinder (men) from the Path of Allah,- their deeds will Allah render astray (from their mark).

**2.** But those who believe and work deeds of righteousness, and believe in the (Revelation) sent down to Muhammad - for it is the Truth from their Lord,- He will remove from them their ills and improve their condition.

**3.** This because those who reject Allah follow vanities, while those who believe follow the Truth from their Lord: Thus does Allah set forth for men their lessons by similitudes. **4.** Therefore, when ye meet the Unbelievers (in war), smite at their necks; At length, when ye have thoroughly subdued them, bind a bond firmly (on them): thereafter (is the time

for) either generosity or ransom: Until the war lays down its burdens. Thus (are ye commanded): but if it had been Allah's Will, He could certainly have exacted retribution from them (Himself); but (He lets you fight) in order to test you, some with others. But those who are slain in the Way of Allah,- He will never let their deeds be lost.

**5.** Soon will He guide them and improve their condition,

**6.** And admit them to the Garden which He has announced for them.

**7.** O ye who believe! If ye will aid (the cause of) Allah, He will aid you, and plant your feet firmly.

**8.** But those who reject (Allah),- for them is destruction, and (Allah) will render their deeds astray (from their mark).

- 9.** That is because they hate the Revelation of Allah. so He has made their deeds fruitless.
- 10.** Do they not travel through the earth, and see what was the End of those before them (who did evil)? Allah brought utter destruction on them, and similar (fates await) those who reject Allah.
- 11.** That is because Allah is the Protector of those who believe, but those who reject Allah have no protector.
- 12.** Verily Allah will admit those who believe and do righteous deeds, to Gardens beneath which rivers flow; while those who reject Allah will enjoy (this world) and eat as cattle eat; and the Fire will be their abode.
- 13.** And how many cities, with more power than thy city which has driven thee out, have We destroyed (for their sins)? and there was none to aid them.
- 14.** Is then one who is on a clear (Path) from his Lord, no better than one to whom the evil of his conduct seems pleasing, and such as follow their own lusts?
- 15.** (Here is) a Parable of the Garden which the righteous are promised: in it are rivers of water incorruptible; rivers of milk of which the taste never changes; rivers of wine, a joy to those who drink; and rivers of honey pure and clear. In it there are for them all kinds of fruits; and Grace from their Lord. (Can those in such Bliss) be compared to such as shall dwell for ever in the Fire, and be given, to drink, boiling water, so that it cuts up their bowels (to pieces)?
- 16.** And among them are men who listen to thee, but in the end, when they go out from thee, they say to those who have received Knowledge, "What is it he said just then?" Such are men whose hearts Allah has sealed, and who follow their own lusts.
- 17.** But to those who receive Guidance, He increases the (light of) Guidance, and bestows on them their Piety and Restraint (from evil).
- 18.** Do they then only wait for the Hour,- that it should come on them of a sudden? But already have come some tokens thereof, and when it (actually) is on them, how can they
- benefit then by their admonition?
- 19.** Know, therefore, that there is no god but Allah, and ask forgiveness for thy fault, and for the men and women who believe: for Allah knows how ye move about and how ye dwell in your homes.
- 20.** Those who believe say, "Why is not a sura sent down (for us)?" But when a sura of basic or categorical meaning is revealed, and fighting is mentioned therein, thou wilt see those in whose hearts is a disease looking at thee with a look of one in swoon at the approach of death. But more fitting for them-
- 21.** Were it to obey and say what is just, and when a matter is resolved on, it were best for them if they were true to Allah.
- 22.** Then, is it to be expected of you, if ye were put in authority, that ye will do mischief in the land, and break your ties of kith and kin?
- 23.** Such are the men whom Allah has cursed for He has made them deaf and blinded their sight.
- 24.** Do they not then earnestly seek to understand the Qur'an, or are their hearts locked up by them?



**25.** Those who turn back as apostates after Guidance was clearly shown to them,- the Evil One has instigated them and busied them up with false hopes.

**26.** This, because they said to those who hate what Allah has revealed, "We will obey you in part of (this) matter"; but Allah knows their (inner) secrets.

**27.** But how (will it be) when the angels take their souls at death, and smite their faces and their backs?

**28.** This because they followed that which called forth the Wrath of Allah, and they hated Allah's good pleasure; so He made their deeds of no effect.

**29.** Or do those in whose hearts is a disease, think that Allah will not bring to light all their rancour?

**30.** Had We so wiled, We could have shown them up to thee, and thou shouldst have known them by their marks: but surely thou wilt know them by the tone of their speech! And Allah knows all that ye do.

**31.** And We shall try you until We test those among you who strive their utmost and persevere in patience; and We shall try your reported (mettle).

**32.** Those who reject Allah, hinder (men) from the Path of Allah, and resist the Messenger, after Guidance has been clearly shown to them, will not injure Allah in the least, but He will make their deeds of no effect.

**33.** O ye who believe! Obey Allah, and obey the apostle, and make not vain your deeds!

**34.** Those who reject Allah, and hinder (men) from the Path of Allah, then die rejecting Allah,- Allah will not forgive them.

**35.** Be not weary and faint-hearted, crying for peace, when ye should be uppermost: for Allah is with you, and will never put you in loss for your (good) deeds.

**36.** The life of this world is but play and amusement: and if ye believe and guard against Evil, He will grant you your recompense, and will not ask you (to give up) your possessions.

**37.** If He were to ask you for all of them, and press you, ye would covetously withhold, and He would bring out all your ill-feeling.

**38.** Behold, ye are those invited to spend (of your substance) in the Way of Allah. But among you are some that are niggardly. But any who are niggardly are so at the expense of their own souls. But Allah is free of all wants, and it is ye that are needy. If ye turn back (from the Path), He will substitute in your stead another people; then they would not be like you! (Quran)

### **Muhammad In The Bible By Dr. Jamal Badawi**

*Those who follow the Apostle, the unlettered Prophet, Whom they find mentioned in their own Scriptures, in the Torah and the Gospel... (Holy Qu'ran: VII - 157; Translation: Yusif Ali)*

---

### **BIBLE PROPHECIES ABOUT THE ADVENT OF MUHAMMAD**

Abraham is widely regarded as the Patriarch of monotheism and the common father of the Jews, Christians and Muslims. Through His second son, Isaac, came all Israelite prophets including such towering figures as

Jacob, Joseph, Moses, David, Solomon and Jesus. May peace and blessings be upon them all. The advent of these great prophets was in partial fulfillment of God's promises to bless the nations of earth through the descendents of Abraham (**Genesis 12:2-3**). Such fulfillment is wholeheartedly accepted by Muslims whose faith considers the belief in and respect of all prophets an article of faith.

## **BLESSINGS OF ISHMAEL AND ISAAC**

Was the first born son of Abraham (Ishmael) and his descendants included in God's covenant and promise? A few verses from the Bible may help shed some light on this question;

1) **Genesis 12:2-3** speaks of God's promise to Abraham and his descendants before any child was born to him.

2) **Genesis 17:4** reiterates God's promise after the birth of Ishmael and before the birth of Isaac.

3) In **Genesis, ch. 21**. Isaac is specifically blessed but Ishmael was also specifically blessed and promised by God to become "a great nation" especially in **Genesis 21:13, 18**.

4) According to **Deuteronomy 21:15-17** the traditional rights and privileges of the first born son are not to be affected by the social status of his mother (being a "free" woman such as Sarah, Isaac's mother, or a "Bondwoman" such as Hagar, Ishmael's mother). This is only consistent with the moral and humanitarian principles of all revealed faiths.

5) The full legitimacy of Ishmael as Abraham's son and "seed" and the full legitimacy of his mother, Hagar, as Abraham's wife are clearly stated in **Genesis 21:13** and **16:3**. After Jesus, the last Israelite messenger and prophet, it was time that God's promise to bless Ishmael and his descendants be fulfilled. Less than 600 years after Jesus, came the last messenger of God, Muhammad, from the progeny of Abraham through Ishmael. God's blessing of both of the main branches of Abraham's family tree was now fulfilled. But are there additional corroborating evidence that the Bible did in fact foretell the advent of prophet Muhammad?

## **MUHAMMAD: The Prophet Like Unto Moses**

Long time after Abraham, God's promise to send the long-awaited Messenger was repeated this time in Moses' words.

In **Deuteronomy 18:18**, Moses spoke of the prophet to be sent by God who is:

1) From among the Israelite's "brethren", a reference to their Ishmaelite cousins as Ishmael was the other son of Abraham who was explicitly promised to become a "great nation".

2) A prophet like unto Moses. There were hardly any two prophets, who were so much alike as Moses and **Muhammad**. Both were given comprehensive law code of life, both encountered their enemies and were victors in miraculous ways, both were accepted as prophets/statesmen and both migrated following conspiracies to assassinate them. Analogies between Moses and Jesus overlooks not only the above similarities but other crucial ones as well (e.g. the natural birth, family life and death of Moses and **Muhammad** but not of Jesus, who was regarded by His followers as the Son of God and not exclusively a messenger of God, as Moses and **Muhammad** were and as Muslim belief Jesus was).

## THE AWAITED PROPHET WAS TO COME FROM ARABIA

**Deuteronomy 33:1-2** combines references to Moses, Jesus and Muhammad. It speaks of God (i.e. God's revelation) coming from Sinai, rising from Seir (probably the village of Sa'ir near Jerusalem) and shining forth from Paran. According to **Genesis 21:21**, the wilderness of Paran was the place where Ishmael settled (i.e. Arabia, specifically Mecca).

Indeed the King James version of the Bible mentions the pilgrims passing through the valley of Ba'ca (another name of Mecca) in **Psalms 84:4-6**.

**Isaiah 42:1-13** speaks of the beloved of God. His elect and messenger who will bring down a law to be awaited in the isles and who "shall not fail nor be discouraged till he have set judgement on earth." Verse 11, connects that awaited one with the descendants of Ke'dar. Who is Ke'dar? According to **Genesis 25:13**, Ke'dar was the second son of Ishmael, the ancestor of prophet **Muhammad**.

## MUHAMMAD'S MIGRATION FROM MECCA TO MEDINA: PROPHECIED IN THE BIBLE?

**Habakkuk 3:3** speaks of God (God's help) coming from Te'man (an Oasis North of Medina according to J. Hasting's Dictionary of the Bible), and the holy one (coming) from Paran. That holy one who under persecution migrated from Paran (Mecca) to be received enthusiastically in Medina was none but prophet **Muhammad**.

Indeed the incident of the migration of the prophet and his persecuted followers is vividly described in **Isaiah 21:13-17**. That section foretold as well about the battle of Badr in which the few ill-armed faithful miraculously defeated the "mighty" men of Ke'dar, who sought to destroy Islam and intimidate their own folks who turned - to Islam.

## THE QUR'AN (KORAN) FORETOLD IN THE BIBLE?

For twenty-three years, God's words (the Qur'an) were truly put into **Muhammad's** mouth. He was not the "author" of the Qur'an. The Qur'an was dictated to him by Angel Gabriel who asked **Muhammad** to simply repeat the words of the Qur'an as he heard them. These words were then committed to memory and to writing by those who hear them during **Muhammad's** life time and under his supervision.

Was it a coincidence that the prophet "like unto Moses" from the "brethren" of the Israelites (i.e. from the Ishmaelites) was also described as one in whose mouth God will put his words and that he will speak in the name of God, (**Deuteronomy 18:18-20**). Was it also a coincidence the "Paraclete" that Jesus foretold to come after Him was described as one who "shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak (**John 16:13**)

Was it another coincidence that Isaiah ties between the messenger connected with Ke'dar and a new song (a scripture in a new language) to be sang unto the Lord (**Isaiah 42:10-11**). More explicitly, prophesies Isaiah "For with stammering lips, and another tongue, will he speak to this people" (**Isaiah 28:11**). This latter verse correctly describes the "stammering lips" of **Prophet Muhammad** reflecting the state of tension and concentration he went through at the time of revelation. Another related point is that the Qur'an was revealed in piece-meals over a span of twenty three years. It is interesting to compare this with **Isaiah 28:10** which speaks of the same thing.

## THAT PROPHET- PARACLETE- MUHAMMAD

Up to the time of Jesus (peace be upon him), the Israelites were still awaiting for that prophet like unto Moses prophesied in **Deuteronomy 18:18**. When John the Baptist came, they asked him if he was Christ and he said "no". They asked him if he was Elias and he said "no". Then, in apparent reference to **Deuteronomy 18:18**, they asked him "Art thou that Prophet" and he answered, "no". (**John 1: 19-21**).

In the Gospel according to **John (Chapters 14, 15, 16)** Jesus spoke of the "Paraclete" or comforter who will come after him, who will be sent by Father as another Paraclete, who will teach new things which the contemporaries of Jesus could not bear. While the Paraclete is described as the spirit of truth, (whose meaning resemble **Muhammad's** famous title Al-Amin, the trustworthy), he is identified in one verse as the Holy Ghost (**John 14:26**). Such a designation is however inconsistent with the profile of that Paraclete. In the words of the **Dictionary of the Bible**, (Ed. J. Mackenzie) "These items, it must be admitted do not give an entirely coherent picture."

Indeed history tells us that many early Christians understood the Paraclete to be a man and not a spirit. This might explain the followings who responded to some who claimed, without meeting the criteria stipulated by Jesus, to be the awaited "Paraclete".

It was **Prophet Muhammad** (peace be upon him) who was the Paraclete, Comforter, helper, admonisher sent by God after Jesus. He testified of Jesus, taught new things which could not be borne at Jesus' time, he spoke what he heard (revelation), he dwells with the believers (through his well-preserved teachings). Such teachings will remain forever because he was the last messenger of God, **the only Universal Messenger to unite the whole of humanity under God and on the path of PRESERVED truth**. He told of many things to come which "came to pass" in the minutest detail meeting, the criterion given by Moses to distinguish between the true prophet and the false prophets (**Deuteronomy 18:22**). He did reprove the world of sin, of righteousness and of judgement (**John 16:8-11**)

## WAS THE SHIFT OF RELIGIOUS LEADERSHIP PROPHECIED?

Following the rejection of the last Israelite prophet, Jesus, it was about time that God's promise to make Ishmael a great nation be fulfilled (**Genesis 21:13, 18**)

In **Matthew 21:19-21**, Jesus spoke of the fruitless fig tree (A Biblical symbol of prophetic heritage) to be cleared after being given a last chance of three years (the duration of Jesus' ministry) to give fruit. In a later verse in the same chapter, Jesus said: "Therefore, say I unto you, The Kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruit thereof" (**Matthew 21:43**). That nation of Ishmael's descendants (the rejected stone in **Matthew 21:42**) which was victorious against all super-powers of its time as prophesied by Jesus: "And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken, but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder" (**Matthew 21:44**).

**OUT OF CONTEXT COINCIDENCE?** Is it possible that the numerous prophecies cited here are all individually and combined out of

context misinterpretations? Is the opposite true, that such infrequently studied verses fit together consistently and clearly point to the advent of the man who changed the course of human history, Prophet Muhammad (peace be upon him). Is it reasonable to conclude that all these prophecies, appearing in different books of the Bible and spoken by various prophets at different times were all coincidence? If this is so here is another strange "coincidence"!

One of the signs of the prophet to come from Paran (Mecca) is that he will come with "ten thousands of saints" (**Deuteronomy 33:2 KJV**). That was the number of faithful who accompanied **Prophet Muhammad** to

Paran (Mecca) in his victorious, bloodless return to his birthplace to destroy the remaining symbols of idolatry in the Ka'bah.

**Says God as quoted by Moses:**

And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him. (**Deuteronomy 18:19**)

**Biography of Muhammad(PBUH) by a Muslim**

**by Muhammad Hamidullah (Centre Culturel Islamique, Paris, 1969)**

*[Taken from Introduction to Islam by Muhammad Hamidullah (Centre Culturel Islamique, Paris, 1969), with some changes to make it more readable. The changes are marked by pairs of brackets like around this paragraph. Dr. Hamidullah's present address is: 9 Beaver Court, Wilkes Barre PA, 18702, USA.]*

IN the annals of men, individuals have not been lacking who conspicuously devoted their lives to the socio-religious reform of their connected peoples. We find them in every epoch and in all lands. In India, there lived those who transmitted to the world the Vedas, and there was also the great Gautama Buddha; China had its Confucius; the Avesta was produced in Iran. Babylonia gave to the world one of the greatest reformers, the Prophet Abraham (not to speak of such of his ancestors as Enoch and Noah about whom we have very scanty information). The Jewish people may rightly be proud of a long series of reformers: Moses, Samuel, David, Solomon, and Jesus among others.

2. Two points are to note: Firstly these reformers claimed in general to be the bearers each of a Divine mission, and they left behind them sacred books incorporating codes of life for the guidance of their peoples. Secondly there followed fratricidal wars, and massacres and genocides became the order of the day, causing more or less a complete loss of these Divine messages. As to the books of Abraham, we know them only by the name; and as for the books of Moses, records tell us how they were repeatedly destroyed and only partly restored.

**Concept of God**

3. If one should judge from the relics of the past already brought to light of the homo sapiens, one finds that man has always been conscious of the existence of a Supreme Being, the Master and Creator of all. Methods and approaches may have differed, but the people of every epoch have left proofs of their attempts to obey God. Communication with the Omnipresent yet invisible God has also been recognised as possible in connection with a small fraction of men with noble and exalted spirits. Whether this communication assumed the nature of an incarnation of the Divinity or simply resolved itself into a medium of reception of Divine messages (through inspiration or revelation), the purpose in each case was the guidance of the people. It was but natural that the interpretations and explanations of certain systems should have proved more vital and convincing than others.

3/a. Every system of metaphysical thought develops its own terminology. In the course of time terms acquire a significance hardly contained in the word and translations fall short of their purpose. Yet there is no other method to make people of one group understand the thoughts of another. Non-Muslim readers in particular are requested to bear in mind this aspect which is a real yet unavoidable handicap.

4. By the end of the 6th century, after the birth of Jesus Christ, men had already made great progress in diverse walks of life. At that time there were some religions which openly proclaimed that they were reserved for definite races and groups of men only, of course they bore no remedy for the ills of humanity at large. There were also a few which claimed universality, but declared that the salvation of man lay in the renunciation of the world. These were the religions for the elite, and catered for an extremely limited number of men. We need not speak of regions where there existed no religion at all, where atheism and materialism reigned supreme, where the thought was solely of occupying one self with one's own pleasures, without any regard or consideration for the rights of others.

**Arabia**

5. A perusal of the map of the major hemisphere (from the point of view of the proportion of land to sea), shows the Arabian Peninsula lying at the confluence of the three great continents of Asia, Africa and Europe. At the time in question, this extensive Arabian subcontinent composed mostly of desert areas was inhabited by people of settled habitations as well as nomads. Often it was found that members of the same tribe were divided into these two groups, and that they preserved a relationship although following different modes of life. The means of subsistence in Arabia were meagre. The desert had its handicaps, and trade

caravans were features of greater importance than either agriculture or industry. This entailed much travel, and men had to proceed beyond the peninsula to Syria, Egypt, Abyssinia, Iraq, Sind, India and other lands.

6. We do not know much about the Libyanites of Central Arabia, but Yemen was rightly called Arabia Felix. Having once been the seat of the flourishing civilizations of Sheba and Ma'in even before the foundation of the city of Rome had been laid, and having later snatched from the Byzantians and Persians several provinces, greater Yemen which had passed through the hey-day of its existence, was however at this time broken up into innumerable principalities, and even occupied in part by foreign invaders. The Sassanians of Iran, who had penetrated into Yemen had already obtained possession of Eastern Arabia. There was politico-social chaos at the capital (Mada'in = Ctesiphon), and this found reflection in all her territories. Northern Arabia had

succumbed to Byzantine influences, and was faced with its own particular problems. Only Central Arabia remained immune from the demoralising effects of foreign occupation.

7. In this limited area of Central Arabia, the existence of the triangle of Mecca-Ta'if-Madinah seemed something providential. Mecca, deserts, deprived of water and the amenities of agriculture in physical features represented Africa and the burning Sahara. Scarcely fifty miles from there, Ta'if presented a picture of Europe and its frost. Madinah in the North was not less fertile than even the most temperate of Asiatic countries like Syria. If climate has any influence on human character, this triangle standing in the middle of the major hemisphere was, more than any other region of the earth, a miniature reproduction of the entire world. And here was born a descendant of the Babylonian Abraham, and the Egyptian Hagar, Muhammad the Prophet of Islam, a Meccan by origin and yet with stock related, both to Madinah and Ta'if.

### **Religion**

8. From the point of view of religion, Arabia was idolatrous; only a few individuals had embraced religions like Christianity, Mazdaism, etc. The Meccans did possess the notion of the One God, but they believed also that idols had the power to intercede with Him. Curiously enough, they did not believe in the Resurrection and Afterlife. They had preserved the rite of the pilgrimage to the House of the One God, the Ka'bah, an institution set up under divine inspiration by their ancestor Abraham, yet the two thousand years that separated them from Abraham had caused to degenerate this pilgrimage into the spectacle of a commercial fair and an occasion of senseless idolatry which far from producing any good, only served to ruin their individual behaviour, both social and spiritual.

### **Society**

9. In spite of the comparative poverty in natural resources, Mecca was the most developed of the three points of the triangle. Of the three, Mecca alone had a city-state, governed by a council of ten hereditary chiefs who enjoyed a clear division of power. (There was a minister of foreign relations, a minister guardian of the temple, a minister of oracles, a minister guardian of offerings to the temple, one to determine the torts and the damages payable, another in charge of the municipal council or parliament to enforce the decisions of the ministries. There were also ministers in charge of military affairs like custodianship of the flag, leadership of the cavalry etc.). As well reputed caravan-leaders, the Meccans were able to obtain permission from neighbouring empires like Iran, Byzantium and Abyssinia – and to enter into agreements with the tribes that lined the routes traversed by the caravans – to visit their countries and transact import and export business. They also provided escorts to foreigners when they passed through their country as well as the territory of allied tribes, in Arabia (cf. Ibn Habib, Muhabbar). Although not interested much in the preservation of ideas and records in writing, they passionately cultivated arts and letters like poetry, oratory discourses and folk tales. Women were generally well treated, they enjoyed the privilege of possessing property in their own right, they gave their consent to marriage contracts, in which they could even add the condition of reserving their right to divorce their husbands. They could remarry when widowed or divorced. Burying girls alive did exist in certain classes, but that was rare.

### **Birth of the Prophet**

10. It was in the midst of such conditions and environments that Muhammad was born in 569 after Christ. His father, 'Abdullah had died some weeks earlier, and it was his grandfather who took him in charge. According to the prevailing custom, the child was entrusted to a Bedouin foster-mother, with whom he passed several years in the desert. All biographers state that the infant prophet sucked only one breast of his foster-mother, leaving the other for the sustenance of his foster-brother. When the child was brought back home, his mother, Aminah, took him to his maternal uncles at Madinah to visit the tomb of 'Abdullah. During the return journey, he lost his mother who died a sudden death. At Mecca, another bereavement awaited him, in the death of his affectionate grandfather. Subjected to such privations, he was at the age of eight, consigned at last to the care of his uncle, Abu-Talib, a man who was generous of nature but always short of resources and hardly able to provide for his family.

11. Young Muhammad had therefore to start immediately to earn his livelihood; he served as a shepherd boy to some neighbours. At the age of ten he accompanied his uncle to Syria when he was leading a caravan there. No other travels of Abu-Talib are mentioned, but there are references to his having set up a shop in Mecca. (Ibn Qutaibah, Ma'arif). It is possible that Muhammad helped him in this enterprise also.

12. By the time he was twenty-five, Muhammad had become well known in the city for the integrity of his disposition and the honesty of his character. A rich widow, Khadijah, took him in her employ and consigned to him her goods to be taken for sale to Syria. Delighted with the unusual profits she obtained as also by the personal charms of her agent, she offered him her hand. According to divergent reports, she was either 28 or 40 years of age at that time, (medical reasons prefer the age of 28 since she gave birth to five more children). The union proved happy. Later, we see him sometimes in the fair of Hubashah (Yemen), and at least once in the country of the 'Abd al-Qais (Bahrain-Oman), as mentioned by Ibn Hanbal. There is every reason to believe that this refers to the great fair of Daba (Oman), where, according to Ibn al-Kalbi (cf. Ibn Habib, Muhabbar), the traders of China, of Hind and Sind (India, Pakistan), of Persia, of the East and the West assembled every year, travelling both by land and sea. There is also mention of a commercial partner of Muhammad at Mecca. This person, Sa'ib by name reports: "We relayed each other; if Muhammad led the caravan, he did not enter his house on his return to Mecca without clearing accounts with me; and if I led the caravan, he would on my return enquire about my welfare and speak nothing about his own capital entrusted to me."

### **An Order of Chivalry**

13. Foreign traders often brought their goods to Mecca for sale. One day a certain Yemenite (of the tribe of Zubaid) improvised a satirical poem against some Meccans who had refused to pay him the price of what he had sold, and others who had not supported his claim or had failed to come to his help when he was victimised. Zuhair, uncle and chief of the tribe of the Prophet, felt great remorse on hearing this just satire. He called for a meeting of certain chieftains in the city, and organized an order of chivalry, called Hilf al-fudul, with the aim and object of aiding the oppressed in Mecca, irrespective of their being dwellers of the city or aliens. Young Muhammad became an enthusiastic member of the organisation. Later in life he used to say: "I have participated in it, and I am not prepared to give up that privilege even against a herd of camels; if somebody should appeal to me even today, by virtue of that pledge, I shall hurry to his help."

### **Beginning of Religious Consciousness**

14. Not much is known about the religious practices of Muhammad until he was thirty-five years old, except that he had never worshipped idols. This is substantiated by all his biographers. It may be stated that there were a few others in Mecca, who had likewise revolted against the senseless practice of paganism, although conserving their fidelity to the Ka'bah as the house dedicated to the One God by its builder Abraham.

15. About the year 605 of the Christian era, the draperies on the outer wall of the Ka'bah took fire. The building was affected and could not bear the brunt of the torrential rains that followed. The reconstruction of the Ka'bah was thereupon undertaken. Each citizen contributed according to his means; and only the gifts of honest gains were accepted. Everybody participated in the work of construction, and Muhammad's shoulders were injured in the course of transporting stones. To identify the place whence the ritual of circumambulation began, there had been set a black stone in the wall of the Ka'bah, dating probably from the time of Abraham himself. There was rivalry among the citizens for obtaining the honour of transposing this stone in its place. When there was danger of blood being shed, somebody suggested leaving the matter to Providence, and accepting the arbitration of him who should happen to arrive there first. It chanced that Muhammad just then turned up there for work as usual. He was popularly known by the appellation of al-Amin (the honest), and everyone accepted his arbitration without hesitation. Muhammad placed a sheet of cloth on the ground, put the stone on it and asked the chiefs of all the tribes in the city to lift together the cloth. Then he himself placed the stone in its proper place, in one of the angles of the building, and everybody was satisfied.

16. It is from this moment that we find Muhammad becoming more and more absorbed in spiritual meditations. Like his grandfather, he used to retire during the whole month of Ramadan to a cave in Jabal-an-Nur (mountain of light). The cave is called 'Ghar-i-Hira' or the cave of research. There he prayed, meditated, and shared his meagre provisions with the travellers who happened to pass by.

### **Revelation**

17. He was forty years old, and it was the fifth consecutive year since his annual retreats, when one night towards the end of the month of Ramadan, an angel came to visit him, and announced that God had chosen him as His messenger to all mankind. The angel taught him the mode of ablutions, the way of worshipping God and the conduct of prayer. He communicated to him the following Divine message:

*With the name of God, the Most Merciful, the All-Merciful.*

*Read: with the name of thy Lord Who created,*

*Created man from what clings,*

*Read: and thy Lord is the Most Bounteous,*

*Who taught by the pen,*

*Taught man what he knew not. (Quran 96:1-5)*

18. Deeply affected, he returned home and related to his wife what had happened, expressing his fears that it might have been something diabolic or the action of evil spirits. She consoled him, saying that he had always been a man of charity and generosity, helping the poor, the orphans, the widows and the needy, and assured him that God would protect him against all evil.

19. Then came a pause in revelation, extending over three years. The Prophet must have felt at first a shock, then a calm, an ardent desire, and after a period of waiting, a growing impatience or nostalgia. The news of the first vision had spread and at the pause the sceptics in the city had begun to mock at him and cut bitter jokes. They went so far as to say that God had forsaken him.

20. During the three years of waiting, the Prophet had given himself up more and more to prayers and to spiritual practices. The revelations were then resumed and God assured him that He had not at all forsaken him: on the contrary it was He Who had guided him to the right path: therefore he should take care of the orphans and the destitute, and proclaim the bounty of God on him (cf. Q. 93:3-11). This was in reality an order to preach. Another revelation directed him to warn people against evil practices, to exhort them to worship none but the One God, and to abandon everything that would displease God (Q. 74:2-7). Yet another revelation commanded him to warn his own near relatives (Q. 26:214); and: "Proclaim openly that which thou art commanded, and withdraw from the Associators (idolaters). Lo! we defend thee from the scoffers" (15:94-5). According to Ibn Ishaq, the first revelation (n. 17) had come to the Prophet during his sleep, evidently to reduce the shock. Later revelations came in full wakefulness.

### **The Mission**

21. The Prophet began by preaching his mission secretly first among his intimate friends, then among the members of his own tribe and thereafter publicly in the city and suburbs. He insisted on the belief in One Transcendent God, in Resurrection and the Last Judgement. He invited men to charity and beneficence. He took necessary steps to preserve through writing the revelations he was receiving, and ordered his adherents also to learn them by heart. This continued all through his life, since the Quran was not revealed all at once, but in fragments as occasions arose.

22. The number of his adherents increased gradually, but with the denunciation of paganism, the opposition also grew intenser on the part of those who were firmly attached to their ancestral beliefs. This opposition degenerated in the course of time into physical torture of the Prophet and of those who had embraced his religion. These were stretched on burning sands, cauterized with red hot iron and imprisoned with chains on their feet. Some of them died of the effects of torture, but none would renounce his religion. In despair, the Prophet Muhammad advised his companions to quit their native town and take refuge abroad, in Abyssinia, "where governs a just ruler, in whose realm nobody is oppressed" (Ibn Hisham). Dozens of Muslims profited by his advice, though not all. These secret flights led to further persecution of those who remained behind.

23. The Prophet Muhammad [was instructed to call this] religion "Islam," i.e. submission to the will of God. Its distinctive features are two:

A harmonious equilibrium between the temporal and the spiritual (the body and the soul), permitting a full enjoyment of all the good that God has created, (Quran 7:32), enjoining at the same time on everybody duties towards God, such as worship, fasting, charity, etc. Islam was to be the religion of the masses and not merely of the elect.

A universality of the call – all the believers becoming brothers and equals without any distinction of class or race or tongue. The only superiority which it recognizes is a personal one, based on the greater fear of God and greater piety (Quran 49:13).



## Social Boycott

24. When a large number of the Meccan Muslims migrated to Abyssinia, the leaders of paganism sent an ultimatum to the tribe of the Prophet, demanding that he should be excommunicated and outlawed and delivered to the pagans for being put to death. Every member of the tribe, Muslim and non-Muslim rejected the demand. (cf. Ibn Hisham). Thereupon the city decided on a complete boycott of the tribe: Nobody was to talk to them or have commercial or matrimonial relations with them. The group of Arab tribes called Ahabish, inhabiting the suburbs, who were allies of the Meccans, also joined in the boycott, causing stark misery among the innocent victims consisting of children, men and women, the old and the sick and the feeble. Some of them succumbed yet nobody would hand over the Prophet to his persecutors. An uncle of the Prophet, Abu Lahab, however left his tribesmen and participated in the boycott along with the pagans. After three dire years, during which the victims were obliged to devour even crushed hides, four or five non-Muslims, more humane than the rest and belonging to different clans proclaimed publicly their denunciation of the unjust boycott. At the same time, the document promulgating the pact of boycott which had been hung in the temple, was found, as Muhammad had predicted, eaten by white ants, that spared nothing but the words God and Muhammad. The boycott was lifted, yet owing to the privations that were undergone the wife and Abu Talib, the chief of the tribe and uncle of the Prophet died soon after. Another uncle of the Prophet, Abu-Lahab, who was an inveterate enemy of Islam, now succeeded to the headship of the tribe. (cf. Ibn Hisham, Sirah).

## The Ascension

25. It was at this time that the Prophet Muhammad was granted the mi'raj (ascension): He saw in a vision that he was received on heaven by God, and was witness of the marvels of the celestial regions. Returning, he brought for his community, as a Divine gift, the [ritual prayer of Islam, the salaah], which constitutes a sort of communion between man and God. It may be recalled that in the last part of Muslim service of worship, the faithful employ as a symbol of their being in the very presence of God, not concrete objects as others do at the time of communion, but the very words of greeting exchanged between the Prophet Muhammad and God on the occasion of the former's mi'raj: "The blessed and pure greetings for God! – Peace be with thee, O Prophet, as well as the mercy and blessing of God! – Peace be with us and with all the [righteous] servants of God!" The Christian term "communion" implies participation in the Divinity. Finding it pretentious, Muslims use the term "ascension" towards God and reception in His presence, God remaining God and man remaining man and no confusion between the twain.

26. The news of this celestial meeting led to an increase in the hostility of the pagans of Mecca; and the Prophet was obliged to quit his native town in search of an asylum elsewhere. He went to his maternal uncles in Ta'if, but returned immediately to Mecca, as the wicked people of that town chased the Prophet out of their city by pelting stones on him and wounding him.

## Migration to Madinah

27. The annual pilgrimage of the Ka'bah brought to Mecca people from all parts of Arabia. The Prophet Muhammad tried to persuade one tribe after another to afford him shelter and allow him to carry on his mission of reform. The contingents of fifteen tribes, whom he approached in succession, refused to do so more or less brutally, but he did not despair. Finally he met half a dozen inhabitants of Madinah who being neighbour of the Jews and the Christians, had some notion of prophets and Divine messages. They knew also that these "people of the Books" were awaiting the arrival of a prophet – a last comforter. So these Madinans decided not to lose the opportunity of obtaining an advance over others, and forthwith embraced Islam, promising further to provide additional adherents and necessary help from Madinah. The following year a dozen new Madinans took the oath of allegiance to him and requested him to provide with a missionary teacher. The work of the missionary, Mus'ab, proved very successful and he led a contingent of seventy-three new converts to Mecca, at the time of the pilgrimage. These invited the Prophet and his Meccan companions to migrate to their town, and promised to shelter the Prophet and to treat him and his companions as their own kith and kin. Secretly and in small groups, the greater part of the Muslims emigrated to Madinah. Upon this the pagans of Mecca not only confiscated the property of the evacuees, but devised a plot to assassinate the Prophet. It became now impossible for him to remain at home. It is worthy of mention, that in spite of their hostility to his mission, the pagans had unbounded confidence in his probity, so much so that many of them used to deposit their savings with him. The Prophet Muhammad now entrusted all these deposits to 'Ali, a cousin of his, with instructions to return in due course to the rightful owners. He then left the town secretly in the company of his faithful friend, Abu-Bakr. After several adventures, they succeeded in reaching Madinah in safety. This happened in 622, whence starts the Hijrah calendar.

## Reorganization of the Community

28. For the better rehabilitation of the displaced immigrants, the Prophet created a fraternization between them and an equal number of well-to-do Madinans. The families of each pair of the contractual brothers worked together to earn their livelihood, and aided one another in the business of life.

29. Further he thought that the development of the man as a whole would be better achieved if he co-ordinated religion and politics as two constituent parts of one whole. To this end he invited the representatives of the Muslims as well as the non-Muslim inhabitants of the region: Arabs, Jews, Christians and others, and suggested the establishment of a City-State in Madinah. With their assent, he endowed the city with a written constitution – the first of its kind in the world – in which he defined the duties and rights both of the citizens and the head of the State – the Prophet Muhammad was unanimously hailed as such – and abolished the customary private justice. The administration of justice became henceforward the concern of the central organisation of the community of the citizens. The document laid down principles of defence and foreign policy: it organized a system of social insurance, called ma’aqil, in cases of too heavy obligations. It recognized that the Prophet Muhammad would have the final word in all differences, and that there was no limit to his power of legislation. It recognized also explicitly liberty of religion, particularly for the Jews, to whom the constitutional act afforded equality with Muslims in all that concerned life in this world (cf. infra n. 303).

30. Muhammad journeyed several times with a view to win the neighbouring tribes and to conclude with them treaties of alliance and mutual help. With their help, he decided to bring to bear economic pressure on the Meccan pagans, who had confiscated the property of the Muslim evacuees and also caused innumerable damage. Obstruction in the way of the Meccan caravans and their passage through the Madinan region exasperated the pagans, and a bloody struggle ensued.

31. In the concern for the material interests of the community, the spiritual aspect was never neglected. Hardly a year had passed after the migration to Madinah, when the most rigorous of spiritual disciplines, the fasting for the whole month of Ramadan every year, was imposed on every adult Muslim, man and woman.

#### Struggle Against Intolerance and Unbelief

32. Not content with the expulsion of the Muslim compatriots, the Meccans sent an ultimatum to the Madinans, demanding the surrender or at least the expulsion of Muhammad and his companions but evidently all such efforts proved in vain. A few months later, in the year 2 H., they sent a powerful army against the Prophet, who opposed them at Badr; and the pagans thrice as numerous as the Muslims, were routed. After a year of preparation, the Meccans again invaded Madinah to avenge the defeat of Badr. They were now four times as numerous as the Muslims. After a bloody encounter at Uhud, the enemy retired, the issue being indecisive. The mercenaries in the Meccan army did not want to take too much risk, or endanger their safety.

33. In the meanwhile the Jewish citizens of Madinah began to foment trouble. About the time of the victory of Badr, one of their leaders, Ka’b ibn al-Ashraf, proceeded to Mecca to give

assurance of his alliance with the pagans, and to incite them to a war of revenge. After the battle of Uhud, the tribe of the same chieftain plotted to assassinate the Prophet by throwing on him a mill-stone from above a tower, when he had gone to visit their locality. In spite of all this, the only demand the Prophet made of the men of this tribe was to quit the Madinan region, taking with them all their properties, after selling their immovables and recovering their debts from the Muslims. The clemency thus extended had an effect contrary to what was hoped. The exiled not only contacted the Meccans, but also the tribes of the North, South and East of Madinah, mobilized military aid, and planned from Khaibar an invasion of Madinah, with forces four times more numerous than those employed at Uhud. The Muslims prepared for a siege, and dug a ditch to defend themselves against this hardest of all trials. Although the defection of the Jews still remaining inside Madinah at a later stage upset all strategy, yet with a sagacious diplomacy, the Prophet succeeded in breaking up the alliance, and the different enemy groups retired one after the other.

34. Alcoholic drinks, gambling and games of chance were at this time declared forbidden for the Muslims.

#### The Reconciliation

35. The Prophet tried once more to reconcile the Meccans and proceeded to Mecca. The barring of the route of their Northern caravans had ruined their economy. The Prophet promised them transit security, extradition of their fugitives and the fulfillment of every condition they desired, agreeing even to return to Madinah without accomplishing the pilgrimage of the Ka’bah. Thereupon the two contracting parties promised at Hudaibiyah in the suburbs of Mecca, not only the maintenance of peace, but also the observance of neutrality in their conflicts with third parties.

36. Profiting by the peace, the Prophet launched an intensive programme for the propagation of his religion. He addressed missionary letters to the foreign rulers of Byzantium, Iran, Abyssinia and other lands. The Byzantine autocrat priest – Dughatur of the Arabs – embraced Islam, but for this, was lynched by the Christian mob; the prefect of Ma’an (Palestine) suffered the same fate, and was decapitated and crucified by order of the emperor. A Muslim ambassador was assassinated in Syria-Palestine; and

instead of punishing the culprit, the emperor Heraclius rushed with his armies to protect him against the punitive expedition sent by the Prophet (battle of Mu'tah).

37. The pagans of Mecca hoping to profit by the Muslim difficulties, violated the terms of their treaty. Upon this, the Prophet himself led an army, ten thousand strong, and surprised Mecca which he occupied in a bloodless manner. As a benevolent conqueror, he caused the vanquished people to assemble, reminded them of their ill deeds, their religious persecution, unjust confiscation of the evacuee property, ceaseless invasions and senseless hostilities for twenty years continuously. He asked them: "Now what do you expect of me?" When everybody lowered his head with shame, the Prophet proclaimed: "May God pardon you; go in peace; there shall be no responsibility on you today; you are free!" He even renounced the claim for the Muslim property confiscated by the pagans. This produced a great psychological change of hearts

instantaneously. When a Meccan chief advanced with a fulsome heart towards the Prophet, after hearing this general amnesty, in order to declare his acceptance of Islam, the Prophet told him: "And in my turn, I appoint you the governor of Mecca!" Without leaving a single soldier in the conquered city, the Prophet retired to Madinah. The Islamization of Mecca, which was accomplished in a few hours, was complete.

38. Immediately after the occupation of Mecca, the city of Ta'if mobilized to fight against the Prophet. With some difficulty the enemy was dispersed in the valley of Hunain, but the Muslims preferred to raise the siege of nearby Ta'if and use pacific means to break the resistance of this region. Less than a year later, a delegation from Ta'if came to Madinah offering submission. But it requested exemption from prayer, taxes and military service, and the continuance of the liberty to adultery and fornication and alcoholic drinks. It demanded even the conservation of the temple of the idol al-Lat at Ta'if. But Islam was not a materialist immoral movement; and soon the delegation itself felt ashamed of its demands regarding prayer, adultery and wine. The Prophet consented to concede exemption from payment of taxes and rendering of military service; and added: You need not demolish the temple with your own hands: we shall send agents from here to do the job, and if there should be any consequences, which you are afraid of on account of your superstitions, it will be they who would suffer. This act of the Prophet shows what concessions could be given to new converts. The conversion of the Ta'ifites was so whole hearted that in a short while, they themselves renounced the contracted exemptions, and we find the Prophet nominating a tax collector in their locality as in other Islamic regions.

39. In all these "wars," extending over a period of ten years, the non-Muslims lost on the battlefield only about 250 persons killed, and the Muslim losses were even less. With these few incursions, the whole continent of Arabia, with its million and more of square miles, was cured of the abscess of anarchy and immorality. During these ten years of disinterested struggle, all the peoples of the Arabian Peninsula and the southern regions of Iraq and Palestine had voluntarily embraced Islam. Some Christian, Jewish and Parsi groups remained attached to their creeds, and they were granted liberty of conscience as well as judicial and juridical autonomy.

40. In the year 10 H., when the Prophet went to Mecca for Hajj (pilgrimage), he met 140,000 Muslims there, who had come from different parts of Arabia to fulfil their religious obligation. He addressed to them his celebrated sermon, in which he gave a resume of his teachings: "Belief in One God without images or symbols, equality of all the Believers without distinction of race or class, the superiority of individuals being based solely on piety; sanctity of life, property and honour; abolition of interest, and of vendettas and private justice; better treatment of women; obligatory inheritance and distribution of the property of deceased persons among near relatives of both sexes, and removal of the possibility of the cumulation of wealth in the hands of the few." The Quran and the conduct of the Prophet were to serve as the bases of law and a healthy criterion in every aspect of human life.

41. On his return to Madinah, he fell ill; and a few weeks later, when he breathed his last, he had the satisfaction that he had well accomplished the task which he had undertaken – to preach to the world the Divine message.

42. He bequeathed to posterity, a religion of pure monotheism; he created a well-disciplined State out of the existent chaos and gave peace in place of the war of everybody against everybody else; he established a harmonious equilibrium between the spiritual and the temporal, between the mosque and the citadel; he left a new system of law, which dispensed impartial justice, in which even the head of the State was as much a subject to it as any commoner, and in which religious tolerance was so great that non-Muslim inhabitants of Muslim countries equally enjoyed complete juridical, judicial and cultural autonomy. In the matter of the revenues of the State, the Quran fixed the principles of budgeting, and paid more thought to the poor than to anybody else. The revenues were declared to be in no wise the private property of the head of the State. Above all, the Prophet Muhammad set a noble example and fully practised all that he taught to others.

### **Biography of Mohammad**

He was born in 570 A.D. to Amina and Abdallah, a trader in Mecca – a wealthy caravan trading community, in the renowned tribe of **Quraish**. He became an orphan before his birth and his mother also died when he was 6 years old. His parents did not leave him any wealth. He was taken care of by his grandfather and after his death by his paternal uncle Abu-Talib. His uncle had a large family himself and he was not wealthy. Very soon Mohammed had to support himself by tending the sheep flocks of rich Meccan families as it is reported.

As a young man he started working as a caravan trader for the wealthy **Meccan widow Khadijah**. His work took him to distant places in today's Palestine and Syria and possibly to the North African countries. He became known and trusted because of his attempts to resolve inter-tribal differences. In fact, he was known within his Quraish tribe as "al-Ameen", or "the trustworthy".

**At the age of 25 he married Khadijah, a twice widowed lady, 15 years of his senior** and they had 6 children together, 4 girls and 2 sons (who both died in infancy). He remained married to her for 25 years, in a time and place where unlimited polygamy was quite acceptable and until her death it remained an one-wife marriage.

Mohammed was of a deeply religious nature and had long detested the decadence of his society. It became his habit to meditate from time to time in the Cave of Hera near the summit of Jabal al-Nur, the "Mountain of Light" near Mecca. **He was elevated to prophethood at the age of 40, on Feb.12th 610 A.D.** His first revelation came while fasting and observing night vigil among the peaks of Mount Hera as angel Gabriel appeared to him.

**"Recite in the name of your Lord who has created, Created man out of a germ-cell. Recite for your Lord is the Most Generous one, Who has taught by the pen, Taught man what he did not know!..."** (Qur'an 36:1-5).

**"O you wrapped up, Arise and deliver thy warning ..."**(Qur'an 74.1-10)

These are the first two oldest Verses of the Qur'an.

The Prophet (p.b.u.h.) returned home after his first revelation his heart trembling and said to Khadijah: "*Wrap me up, wrap me up!*" She wrapped him till fear had left him. He then said: "*O Khadijah! What has happened to me?*" – and he told her what had happened, saying "*fear for myself.*" She replied: "*It cannot be. Be happy. I swear by God that he shall never humiliate you. By Allah – you join tie of relationship, you speak the truth, you bear people's burden, you help the destitute, you entertain guests and you help against the vicissitudes which affect people.*" Those words of Khadijah were a source of great comfort to him. She was the first person to convert to Islam.

**"Say: I am but a man like yourselves, (but) the inspiration has come to me ...."** (Qur'an 18:110)

As the Prophet continued to receive revelations and attract a community of believers, he also attracted the hostility of Mecca's aristocracy, which reaped profits from the pilgrimages and trade brought by Mecca's role as a center for idol worship. His uncompromising message of monotheism brought persecution from the ruling class.

**The second phase**, public life began at the end of the 3rd year of his prophethood:

*"And warn your nearest kinsfolk, And lower your wing (in kindness) to the believers who follow you, Then if they disobey you, say: I am free (of responsibility) of what you do".* (Qur'an 26:215-216)

*"Therefore, proclaim (openly) that which you are commanded, and turn away from the polytheists. Verily, we are sufficient unto you against the scoffers, who take with God another god, but they will come to know."* (Qur'an 15:94-96)

Mohammad and his followers met active persecution in **Mecca** in the 3rd year of his prophethood and in the 5th year (615 A.D.) oppression intensified and a small group of believers migrated to Abyssinia (today's Ethiopia), a Christian community in Northern Africa. Muslims in Mecca faced boycott, hostility and oppression and struggled for almost 10 years.

**On Sept. 16th 622 A.D.** Prophet Mohammad and about 200 of his followers migrated to Yathreb (Mohammad was 53 ), a journey that took 12 days. That is the date of the beginning of Islamic Calendar, "Hijrah" (migration).

Jathreb was an important Jewish farming and trading community 200 miles North of Mecca. After some traders had met Mohammad in Mecca and had become believers they invited the Prophet and his followers Jathreb. A bloody tribal rivalry going on and a truce was desperately needed. After the Prophet's arrival Jathreb was called "Medinat an-Nabi" or short "**Medina**".

**An Islamic model state in Medina was established** in the same year ( 623 A.D.). Prophet Mohammad was disappointed by the rejection of his message by the Jews in Medina. Young Islam struggled to be accepted there and the believers were harassed and ridiculed by the hypocrites.

In Medina, Mohammad and his followers demonstrated the practicality of the new religion's social application by resolving bitter rivalries and tensions among the city's rival groups and clans. Seeing the virtues of Islam in action, many inhabitants of Medina became Muslims.

Through military activity and political negotiation Prophet Mohammed became the most powerful leader in Arabia. Several important battles ensued, the first and biggest one (624 A.D.) in Badr (near Medina). Muslim forces, though greatly outnumbered (more than threefold), defeated the Meccan army. In the battle of Uhud (625 A.D.) Muslims were defeated and Mohammad was also wounded.

**Finally in 627 (A.D.)** frustrated by the growing strength of the Muslims, the Meccans mounted an all-out siege of Medina. At the battle of "Ditch" (so named because a trench was dug out to fend off the Meccan cavalry) the Muslims successfully held out against a coalition of Meccans and mercenary Bedouins that the coalition disintegrated and the Meccans withdrew. The failure of the Meccan Quraish enhanced the Prophet's prestige and leadership among the tribes of Arabia.

***John L. Esposito, quote\*:** "The final phase in the struggle between Medina and Mecca highlights the method and political genius of Mohammad. He employed both military and diplomatic means, often preferring the latter. Instead of seeking to rout his Meccan opponents, Mohammad sought to gain submission to God and His messenger by incorporating them within the Islamic community-state. A truce was struck in 628 (A.D.) at Hudaibiyah to permit Muslims to make their pilgrimage to Mecca the following year. In 629 (A.D.) Mohammad established Muslim control over the Hijaz and led the pilgrimage to Mecca as had been scheduled. Then in 630 (A.D.) Mohammad accused the Quraish of breaking the treaty and the Muslims marched on Mecca, ten thousand strong. The Meccans capitulated. Eschewing vengeance and the plunder of conquest the Prophet instead accepted a settlement granting amnesty rather than wielding the sword toward his former enemies."*

**It was a triumphant return to Mecca on Ramadan 20th, the 8th year after Hijrah (630 A.D.)**. Mecca welcomed the Muslims and it converted without violent resistance to Islam. His first act upon returning to Mecca was to cleanse the 'Kaaba' of its pagan idols, restoring it to the Abrahamic tradition of monotheism.

**On his last Hajj** (pilgrimage to Mecca) in the 10th year after Hijrah (632 A.D.) Mohammad delivered a farewell speech to his followers.

By that time Arabia was united under the banner of Islam after many battles in its cause. His death – a high fever had befallen him – in Medina came to his followers as a grave shock. Medina fell into despair for days. The city was consumed with sorrow and ceremony. The Prophet (p.b.u.h.) wanted to be buried very simple with no marker over his grave. He did not want people to worship his grave, that would interfere with their worship of God.

He was buried on the very spot where he died, in the house of Lady Aisha. Later a large mosque was built next to it and it is today one of the three most Holy Places of Islam, with Mecca and the Al-Aqsa Mosque in Jerusalem. Here was the secret to Islam's strength and profound influence: the unifying power of one God, merciful and compassionate, the power of one people bound by a common faith.

By 750 A.D. Islam had expanded to China, India, along the Southern shore of the Mediterranean and into Spain. By 1550 it had reached Vienna. Wars resulted expelling Muslims from Spain and Europe. Believers are currently concentrated from the West coast of Africa to the Philippines (well over 1 billion believers).

*"It is one of the functions of Islamic Law to protect the privileged status of minorities, and this is why non-Muslim places of worship have flourished all over the Islamic world. History provides many examples of Muslim tolerance towards other faiths: when the Caliph Omar entered Jerusalem in the year 634 A.D., Islam granted freedom of worship to all religious communities in the city. Islamic law also permits non-Muslim minorities to set up their own courts, which implement family laws drawn up by minorities by themselves." \*\* Quote*

**The advent of Islam brought about a social revolution in the Arabian peninsula**, as the new religion fought against slavery, the mistreatment of women and other social injustices that had become an accepted way of life. The diversity found among Muslim communities in language, culture, skin color and ethnic origin is a source of pride for Muslims, who believe in the universal and timeless message of Islam.

The Prophet's personality is reported to have been very kind, calm, modest and righteous. As he grew up, in his young adult years he became known for his truthfulness, generosity and sincerity, so that he was sought after for his ability to arbitrate in disputes.... *"Features handsome, middle in height, temperament likeable, long dark and curly hair, large black eyes, a man of grace, captivating at a distance."* He was called *"Al-Ameen"*, *"the trustworthy"*. **He never claimed to be something else than human, a messenger and devoted servant of God.**

The hardships he endured in his early childhood, poor and orphan losing many of his closest relatives at an early age may have formed his character and prepared him to be the Messenger of God.

**He was a man of peace.** He never took revenge for his own personal self. For example it is reported, that the Prophet would pass by the house of a Jewish woman in Medina every day at the same time. She used to wait for him just so she could throw garbage on him. One day she was not there, so out of concern the Prophet went to ask about her. Upon seeing his thoughtfulness, she felt embarrassed and ashamed and she converted to Islam.

### **Prophet's wives**

This topic is not a problem for the believers knowing the character of the Prophet, but something that is hard to understand for non-Muslims. Prophet Mohammad (p.b.u.h) has widely been portrayed in the past by orientalist as a lustful man pursuing his lusts and sensuous pleasures, that he was not satisfied with one wife or even four, but married ten or more driven by his desires. **But all his wives were elderly ladies or widows except Lady Aisha, whom the Prophet married when she was still a young maiden and Maria (a slave girl, whom he freed and married).** If the aim had been seeking sexual pleasures, he would have done so in his youth and would have married young maidens, not aged widows.

First we must remember the life in Arabia in the pre-Islamic time. Due to the tribal wars and blood revenge there had always been a large number widows and orphans who had to be taken care of. This must have been the main reason for polygamy in those days. It was the same ancient custom that was practiced in Palestine in the centuries before Jesus (p.b.u.h.).

**Most of the twelve marriages had political or social motives.** As it was customary for the Arab chiefs, many were political marriages to cement alliances. European and other world rulers married for the same reason for centuries. Others were marriages to the widows of his companions who had fallen in combat and were in need of protection, since traditionally remarriage was difficult for widows.

As I already mentioned **Mohammad was married for 25 years to Khadijah**, a twice-widowed lady 15 years older than him. Their marriage was very happy and they had 6 children (4 girls and 2 boys) together and he remained faithful to her until her death.

After 3 years he married **a young woman Aisha** (p.b.u.h.), with whom he had the closest relationship. The Prophet had spent the prime of his youth with Khadijah. Once Lady Aisha asked the Prophet if Khadijah had been the only woman worthy of his love, he replied in an honest burst of emotion: *"She believed in me when none else did. She embraced Islam when people disbelieved me. She helped and comforted me when there was none else to lend me a helping hand."*

Aisha was the third lady to enter the house of the Holy Prophet as his wife. She was the lady, who had the second strongest influence on the Prophet's private and family life. She was the daughter of his lifelong friend and companion Abu Bakr, who succeeded him as ruler of the Islamic state. Aisha was the most intelligent and the most versed in religion among the *"Mothers of the Faithful"*; she was even more knowledgeable than the companions. Many of the companions of the Prophet (p.b.u.h.) used to ask her questions regarding religion.

After the death of his first wife Khadijah (65 at the time, p.b.u.h.) the Prophet (at the age of 50) desperately needed a companion. Young Islam was struggling in Mecca and in the same year the Prophet lost also his beloved uncle Abu Talib, who had taken care of him as a child. A woman close to him, Khawlah Bint-Hakeem (wife of one of the Prophet's early companions) suggested Aisha, if he wishes to marry a young virgin. She was the daughter of his lifelong friend. But if he preferred a more mature woman, there was **Sawdah (bint Zama'a), the widow of Al Sakran ibn Amr Al Ansari**, an emigrant to Abyssinia in the early years of persecution in Mecca, who died on their way back home. Sawdah turned to the Prophet himself for shelter since her husband had died in the cause of Islam. The Prophet gave her shelter and married her. She was not young (55 years old) nor pretty with a quick and loose temper as it is reported (in the Hadith's she is described to have been *"a fat huge lady"* and *"a tall lady"*). Soon afterwards he married Lady Aisha.

Later after 5 or 6 years he married widows of his companions, also two women war captives as they were integrated in the Muslim society through legal marriages with the believers. Although the Prophet loved Aisha so much, he treated her in the same way as the rest of his wives. The Prophet referred to her as "*the mother of the believers*". Aisha was also a fine scholar of Arabic and good orator. When she needed to make speeches, particularly after the assassination of Uthman, the third Khalif, her speeches were of superb literary quality. She was a scholar of broad knowledge and great ability. Lady Aisha died ( p.b.u.h.) at the age of 58 without having any children.

**In some sources it is asserted that Lady Aisha was a child when she married the Prophet.**

At that time no official birth records existed in Mecca and they did not even have a recognized calendar. They knew that a year is composed of 12 lunar months, each lasting 29 or 30 days, and they dated matters on the basis of major events in their community. Hence, their dating was considerably lacking in accuracy.

In one Hadith (probably the only one) it is suggested that Aisha was only six or seven at the time of her marriage. It is illogical to assert that Khawlah would have suggested a child as a companion for the Prophet, Aisha must have been of marriageable age. Anyway, the marriage took place after 3 years in Medina (after it was first suggested by Khawlah and after the marriage to Sawdah).

**More evidence is provided also by one of the earliest authors of Islam, Ibn Ishaq, who writes, that Aisha and her elder sister Asmaa were among the first 80 people in Mecca, who accepted the Prophets call to Islam.** He adds as he mentions Aisha, that she was then a young girl. But how old can she have been then? Old enough to be mentioned among the people, who had taken an important step adopting a new religion. Maybe 10 or so? (Adil Salahi: Muhammad, Man and Prophet)

We know, that the time between the first revelation of the Prophet and the migration to Medina (where the marriage to Aisha took place) were thirteen years. So we can say that **even if Aisha was only a newborn baby when she became Muslim, she must have been at least fourteen years old at the time of her marriage.** The Prophets daughter Fatimah (p.b.u.them) was born when he was 35 years old, meaning that at the time of the marriage to Aisha in Medina **she would have been 17 or 18 years old.**

According to another account (by Ibn Hajar) his daughter Fatimah was 5 years older than Aisha, meaning that by no means she could not have been younger than 15 or 16 years old at the time of her marriage. How can we believe that the Prophet would have married a girl of 6 years of age, even a girl of 9 years? The whole assertion about the Prophet marrying a six- or nine-year-old child is highly questionable.

It is amazing how the question of Aisha's age comes up so very often. However, if we regard the sources (the Hadiths) 100% reliable we should also i.e. unconditionally accept the fact that Prophet Mohammad (p.b.u.h.) did cause the moon to split into two.

If anybody of my readers have any other evidence concerning this theme I would appreciate it if you would share it with me. Knowing the circumstances and the character of the Prophet in all other aspects and that he was a father of girls himself and remembering the fact that Aisha was the daughter of his lifelong companion, it can be taken for granted (in my opinion) that she was of marriageable age . It is hard to imagine that the Prophet, who strived to be an example to his followers, would have done such a thing knowing that the believers were encouraged by the Qur'an to follow his example in all aspects. What an uproar it would have caused, in his own family and in the community! I think we would have much more evidence in the Hadith's about it.

**There is no real evidence for that kind of assertion.** The only evidence comes from Hadith's ( Hadith's = reports about the lifetime of the Prophet, collections dated ca. 250-300 years later). Also in Islam religious duties (like fasting, praying etc.) become obligatory only after a girl reaches puberty. Why should it be otherwise in marriage, a much graver aspect of life?

**Islam introduced the right of a girl to choose her husband,** a suitable husband can only be suggested by parents or guardians. Until today it was and still is common practice in Arab countries that marriage becomes a matter of discussion only after a girl reaches puberty. As far as I know in Pakistan and India child marriages were common in the past but are banned today by civil law.

Two highly reliable Hadith's (Muslim): *"Abu Hurairah reports that the Prophet (p.b.u.h.) said: 'A grown-up girl shall be asked permission about herself. If she is silent, it is her permission; and if she declines, there shall be no compulsion on her.' "*

A report from Ibn Abbas states that: *"the Prophet (p.b.u.h.) said: 'A previously married woman is more a guardian for herself than her guardian and a virgin should be asked permission about herself, and her permission is her silence.' "*

Many Hadith's are narrated by Aisha herself about her marriage in general. In one of them she claims, that (according to the Prophet himself) she was the only virgin among the wives of the Prophet.

The only child from all his wives after his first wife Khadijah was born to a Coptic Christian servant girl Maria, whom he married as she was presented to him as a gift from an Egyptian ruler – a son who died in infancy. All other wives remained childless.

The fact that the Prophet did not have more children later on is an indication, that his marriages were more of a sociopolitical nature, to ensure peace between the tribes of Arabia after they were united under Islam.

*"There were many war prisoners captured by the Muslims and entitled to security and protection. They were not killed or denied any human or physical rights. On the contrary, they were helped to settle down through legal marriages to Muslims instead of being taken concubines and common mistresses. That also was another moral burden on Muslims and had to be shouldered jointly as a common responsibility. Here, again, Mohammad carried his share and took some responsibilities by marrying two of those captivities... The Prophet married some women for sociopolitical reasons. His principal concern was the future of Islam. He was most interested in strengthening the Muslims by all bonds. That is why he married the daughter (Aisha) of Abu Bakr, his first successor, and the daughter of Umar, his second successor. It was by his marriage to Juwairiyah that he gained the support for Islam of the whole clan of Bani Al-Mustalew and all their allied tribes. It was by marrying Safiyah that he neutralized a great section of the hostile Jews of Arabia. By accepting Mary the Copt from Egypt as his wife, he formed a political alliance with a king of great magnitude. It was also a gesture of friendship with a neighboring king that Mohammad married Zaynab who was presented to him by the Negus of Abyssinia (today's Ethiopia) where many early Muslims found refuge. By most of these marriages, the Prophet meant to eliminate the caste system, the racial and national vanities, and the religious prejudices... "* (c. Hamouda Abdul Aati, 'Islam in Focus')

Qur'an 33:32 : *"O wives of the Prophet! you are not like any other of the women; If you will be on your guard, then be not soft in (your) speech, lest he in whose heart is a disease yearn; and speak a good word."*

**In Islam the number of wives for the believers was reduced to four.** This was an unheard progress for the rights of women after centuries of unlimited polygamy. The Qur'an does not advocate polygamy, in the contrary it says :

*"... then marry such women as may seem good to you, two, three or four. If you feel that you will not act justly, then one."* (Qur'an 4:3)

*"You will never manage to deal equitably with women no matter how hard you try"* (Qur'an 4:129).

**Since equal treatment according to these two verses of the Qur'an is a practical impossibility, we understand that Islam prefers monogamy.** Here, like concerning some other issues (i.e. slavery) Islam made concessions to prevailing social practices of that time.

This is a Hadith which makes us smile, and the Prophet (p.b.u.h.) appear very human to us, narrated by Lady Aisha: *"Allah's messenger was fond of honey and sweet edible things and it was his habit that after finishing the 'Asr' (afternoon) prayer he would visit his wives and stay with one of them at that time. Once he went to Hafsa, the daughter of Omar and stayed with her more than usual. I got jealous and asked for the reason for that. I was told that a lady in her folk had given her a skin filled with honey as a present, and that she made a syrup from it and gave it to the prophet to drink (and that was the reason for the delay). I said, 'By Allah, we will play a trick on him (to prevent him delaying so).' So I said to Sawdah bint Zam'a, 'The Prophet will approach you, and when he comes near you, say: 'Have you taken Maghafir (=a bad-smelling gum)? He will say: 'No'. Then say to him: 'Then what is this bad smell which I smell on you?' He will say to you, 'Hafsa made me drink honey syrup.' Then say: 'Perhaps the bees of that honey had sucked the juice of the tree of Al-Urfut.' I shall also say the same. O you, Safiya, say the same.' Later Sawdah said: 'By Allah, as soon as he (the Prophet) stood at the door, I was about to say to him what you had ordered me to say because I was afraid of you.' So when the Prophet came near Sawdah, she said to him: 'O Allah's messenger! Have you taken Maghafir?' He said: 'No.' She said: 'Then what is this bad smell I detect on you?' He said: 'Hafsa made me*



drink honey syrup.' She said: 'Perhaps its bees had sucked the juice of Al-Urfut tree.' When he came to me, I also said the same, and when he went to Safiya, she also said the same. And when the Prophet again went to Hafsa, she said: 'O Allah's messenger! Shall I give you more of that drink?' He said: 'I am not in need of it.' Sawdah said: 'By Allah we have deprived him (of it). 'I said to her: 'Keep quiet!'. "

Because this theme being such a controversial topic I include some quotes from Ayesha's Age

"According to a narrative reported by Ahmad ibn Hanbal, after the death of Khadijah (ra), when Khaulah (ra) came to the Prophet (pbuh) advising him to marry again, the Prophet (pbuh) asked her regarding the choices she had in her mind. Khaulah said: "You can marry a virgin (bikr) or a woman who has already been married (thayyib)". When the Prophet (pbuh) asked about who the virgin was, Khaulah proposed Ayesha's (ra) name. All those who know the Arabic language, are aware that the word "bikr" in the Arabic language is not used for an immature nine year old girl. The correct word for a young playful girl, as stated earlier is "Jariyah". "Bikr" on the other hand, is used for an unmarried lady, and obviously a nine year old is not a "lady". "

"According to the generally accepted tradition, Ayesha (ra) was born about eight years before Hijrah. But according to another narrative in Bukhari (kitabul-tafseer) Ayesha (ra) is reported to have said that at the time Surah Al-Qamar, the 54th chapter of the Qur'an, was revealed, "I was a young girl". The 54th surah of the Qur'an was revealed nine years before Hijrah. According to this tradition, Ayesha (ra) had not only been born before the revelation of the referred surah, but was actually a young girl (jariyah), not an infant (sibyah) at that time. Obviously, if this narrative is held to be true, it is in clear contradiction with the narratives reported by Hisham ibn `urwah. I see absolutely no reason that after the comments of the experts on the narratives of Hisham ibn `urwah, why we should not accept this narrative to be more accurate. "

"According to almost all the historians Asma (ra), the elder sister of Ayesha (ra) was ten years older than Ayesha (ra). It is reported in Taqri'bu'l-tehzi'b as well as Al-bidayah wa'l-nihayah that Asma (ra) died in 73 hijrah when she was 100 years old. Now, obviously if Asma (ra) was 100 years old in 73 hijrah she should have been 27 or 28 years old at the time of hijrah. If Asma (ra) was 27 or 28 years old at the time of hijrah, Ayesha (ra) should have been 17 or 18 years old at that time. Thus, Ayesha (ra), if she got married in 1 AH (after hijrah) or 2 AH, was between 18 to 20 years old at the time of her marriage. "

"According to a number of narratives, Ayesha (ra) accompanied the Muslims in the battle of Badr and Uhud. Furthermore, it is also reported in books of hadith and history that no one under the age of 15 years was allowed to take part in the battle of Uhud. All the boys below 15 years of age were sent back. Ayesha's (ra) participation in the battle of Badr and Uhud clearly indicate that she was not nine or ten years old at that time. After all, women used to accompany men to the battle fields to help them, not to be a burden on them. "

"Tabari in his treatise on Islamic history, while mentioning Abu Bakr (ra) reports that Abu Bakr had four children and all four were born during the Jahiliyyah — the pre Islamic period. Obviously, if Ayesha (ra) was born in the period of jahiliyyah, she could not have been less than 14 years in 1 AH — the time she most likely got married. "

"According to Ibn Hisham, the historian, Ayesha (ra) accepted Islam quite some time before Umar ibn Khattab (ra). This shows that Ayesha (ra) accepted Islam during the first year of Islam. While, if the narrative of Ayesha's (ra) marriage at seven years of age is held to be true, Ayesha (ra) should not have been born during the first year of Islam. "

"Tabari has also reported that at the time Abu Bakr planned on migrating to Habshah (8 years before Hijrah), he went to Mut'am — with whose son Ayesha (ra) was engaged — and asked him to take Ayesha (ra) in his house as his son's wife. Mut'am refused, because Abu Bakr had embraced Islam, and subsequently his son divorced Ayesha (ra). Now, if Ayesha (ra) was only seven years old at the time of her marriage, she could not have been born at the time Abu Bakr decided on migrating to Habshah. On the basis of this report it seems only reasonable to assume that Ayesha (ra) had not only been born 8 years before hijrah, but was also a young lady, quite prepared for marriage. "

"According to Ibn Hajar, Fatimah (ra) was five years older than Ayesha (ra). Fatimah (ra) is reported to have been born when the Prophet (pbuh) was 35 years old. Thus, even if this information is taken to be correct, Ayesha (ra) could by no means be less than 14 years old at the time of hijrah, and 15 or 16 years old at the time of her marriage. "

*“In my opinion, neither was it an Arab tradition to give away girls in marriage at an age as young as nine or ten years, nor did the Prophet (pbuh) marry Ayesha (ra) at such a young age. The people of Arabia did not object to this marriage, because it never happened in the manner it has been narrated.” (c. Adil Salahi, “Muhammad, Man and Prophet”)*

#### **The wives of the Prophet (p.b.u.h.):**

**Khadijah bint Khuwaylid** (p.b.u.h.), twice widowed lady, 40 years old at the time of their marriage (the Prophet was 25 years old).

**Sawdah bint Zama’a** (p.b.u.h.), 55 years old (the Prophet was 50), the widow of Al Sakran ibn Amr Al Ansari

**Aisha bint Abu Bakr** (p.b.u.h.), age most probably late teens/early twenties, the daughter of his devoted friend and lifelong companion Abu Bakr. She died at the age of 58 without having any children.

**Hafsah bint Omar** (p.b.u.h.) a widow, whose husband Khanis ibn Huthafah was a martyr in the battle of Badr.

**Zainab bint Khuzaimah** (p.b.u.h.), the widow of Obidah ibn Al Hareth ibn Abd Al Muttalib, a martyr in the battle of Badr. She continued nursing the wounded unaffected by the martyrdom of her husband . When the Prophet heard of her patience and steadfastness and that no one supported her, he proposed to marry her. She was 60 years old and had two more years to live before she died at 62.

**Zainab bint Jahsh** (p.b.u.h.), a divorced woman who had been married to Zaid ibn Haritha. The Prophet knew Zainab since his childhood; she was his cousin. She was previously married to Zaid Ibn Haritha ibn Sharaheel but their marriage did not last long. She ill-treated him as she felt socially superior to him as he had been just a slave before the Prophet adopted him and she herself was of a great ancestral line. Zaid divorced her and Prophet Mohammad married her to annul the custom of adoption, to set up the principles of Islam and to destroy the pre-Islamic practices completely. The prophet (p.b.u.h.) feared the hypocrites and the slanderers would say that Mohammad married his “son’s” divorced wife. In this way the pre-Islamic custom of adoption came to an end and the Holy Qur’an supported this new divine legislation saying: *“Mohammad is not the father of any of your men, but (he is) the Messenger of God, and the seal of the prophets; And God has full knowledge of all things.”* (Qur’an 33: 40) Al Bukhari (Hadiths) mentions that Zainab said boastfully to the other wives of the Prophet: *“Your families have married you, but it is only me that God from over seven Heavens has decreed my marriage.”*

**Hind Al Makhzoumiah** (Umm Salama), the widow of Abd Allah ibn Abdel Asad who had been one of the first people to embrace Islam. He migrated with his family to Ethiopia where Salama was born. He was a martyr in the battle of Uhud and left four helpless orphans. The Prophet (p.b.u.h.) saw no better solution than to ask her hand to support her and her children. She (p.b.u.h.) apologized to him saying: *“I am an aged mother of orphans and I have much jealousy”*.

**Ramlah Bint Abu Sufian**(Umm Habibah), the widow of the Ubaid Allah ibn Jahsh who had died in Ethiopia. Her father Abu Sufian was at that time the leader of the disbelievers and a strong enemy of the Prophet. She embraced Islam in Makkah and migrated to Ethiopia with her husband. When the Prophet (p.b.u.h.) knew of her husband’s death in Ethiopia, he sent to the King of Ethiopia, Al Najashi, to marry him Umm Habibah. She was extremely pleased because if she had returned to her father in Mecca he would have forced her to forsake Islam . When she returned to Madina the Prophet married her. Later her father Abu Suffian embraced Islam and knew of her marriage to the Prophet, consented to it and boasted of the Prophet being a good

match to his daughter. The prophet’s marriage to the daughter of Abu Suffian led to the lessening of enmity against the Muslims.

**Juwryiah bint Al Hareth**, the daughter of Al Hareth, the leader of the tribe of Bani Al Mustalaq and the widow of Musafei ibn Dhirar, one of the strongest enemies of Islam who had been killed in the battle of Al Muraysei. She together with the whole tribe, had been taken war prisoners by the Muslims in one of the Prophet’s battles. She, as the daughter of the tribe’s leader came to the Prophet to ask for money to pay as a ransom to be set free. The Prophet (p.b.u.h.) offered to pay the ransom for her and marry her. The Muslims thought it was not becoming to keep the Prophet’s in-laws prisoners of war, and set them all free. Seeing the Muslim’s noble-mindedness, the whole tribe of Bani Al Mustalaq embraced Islam.

**Saffiah bint Huyay ibn Akhtab** (p.b.u.h.). After the Battle of Khybar (a Jewish community) Saffiah, the daughter of Huyay ibn Akhtab was captivated by the Muslims after her husband had been killed. The Prophet (p.b.u.h.) gave her the choice, either to set her free and he would marry her or to set her free and she would return to her Jewish family. Seeing the Prophet’s nobleness of character, decency and gentlemanliness, she chose to be set free and be his wife. Moreover, she, as well as many people with her, embraced Islam. It is narrated that when the Messenger (may the blessings and peace of Allah be upon him) told Saffiah that her father was most antagonistic among the Jews against him, she answered, “O Messenger of Allah! Allah says in His Holy Book: *“... no bearer of burdens can bear the burden of another ....”* (Qur’an 6:164)

**Maria**, a Coptic-Christian slave girl whom he manumitted and married as she was presented to him as a gift by an Egyptian ruler and who bore the Prophet the only child after his first wife Khadijah, a son Ibrahim who died in infancy.

**Maymouna bint Al Hareth** (p.b.u.h.), the widow of Abi Rahan ibn Abdul Uzza. Her name had been Barraah, the Prophet named her Maymouna, she was the last of his wives. Lady Aisha said of her that she was one of those who most fear God the Almighty and of those who always join ties of relationship.

\*\*\*\*\*

\* "Islam, the straight Path", Prof. John L. Esposito

### **What Did Muhammad Say?**

Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, taught many important principles and morals, and even set forth rules for combat setting the precedent and still exceeding the rules of war set forth by the Geneva Convention.

Consider the following:

All innocent life was sacred and as such none could be harmed, except those who were engaged against them in active combat. Saving one life was as if one had saved the entire world, while taking an innocent life was as if one had taken the lives of the entire world.

There was to be no genocide of any tribes even up until some had committed genocide against some Muslims. He offered mutual protection and forgiveness to the all even after certain ones broke their covenants with him many times. He did not allow them to be attacked until it was clearly proven they were traitors during time of war and tried to bring down the prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, and the Muslims at any cost. Retaliation was only to those Jews who had turned traitor and not others.

Slaves were common in those days for all nations and tribes. It was Islam that encouraged freeing of the slaves and the great reward from Allah for those who did so. Prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, gave the example of this by freeing slaves and encouraging all of his followers to do the same. Examples include his own servant (who was actually considered like a son to him) Zaid ibn Al Haritha and Bilal the slave who was bought by Abu Bakr only for the purpose of freeing him.

While there were many attempts of assassination made on Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, (most famous was the night that Ali took his place in bed while he and Abu Bakr escaped to Madinah), he did not allow his companions to slaughter any of those who had been involved in these attempts. Proof for this is when they entered Makkah triumphantly and his first words were to command his followers not to harm such and such tribes and so and so families. This was one of the most famous of his acts of forgiveness and humbleness.

Military combat was forbidden for the first thirteen years of prophet hood. The desert Arabs did not need anyone to tell them how to fight or do combat. They were experts in this area and held feuds amongst tribes that lasted for decades. It was not until the proper method of warfare was instituted by Allah in the Quran, with proper rights and limitations according His Commandments, that any retaliation or combat was sanctioned. Orders from Allah made it clear who was to be attacked, how and when and to what extent fighting could take place.

Destruction of infrastructures is absolutely forbidden except when it is ordained by Allah in certain instances and then only according to His Commands.

Cursing and invoking evil actually came to the prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, from his enemies, while he would be praying for their guidance. Classic example is that of his journey to At-Taif where the leaders would not even hear him out nor offer so much as the normal courtesy called for and instead they set the children of the street against him, throwing rocks and stones at him until his body was bleeding so much, blood filled his sandals. He was offered revenge by the angel Gabriel, if he would give the command, Allah would cause the surrounding mountains to fall down upon them destroying them all. Instead of cursing them or asking for their destruction, he prayed for them to be guided to worship their Lord alone, without any partners.

Prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, claimed every person who is born is born in a state of ISLAM (submission to God on His Terms in Peace), as a Muslim (MU-Islam means; "one who does ISLAM" i.e.; submits to God's Will and obeys His Commandments). He further stated, God has created each person in the image that is His according to His plan, and their spirit is His. Then as they grow older they begin to distort their faith according to the influence of the prevailing society and their own prejudices.

Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, taught his followers to believe in the God of Adam, Noah, Abraham, Jacob, Moses, David, Solomon and Jesus, peace be upon them all, and to believe in them as true prophets, messengers and servants of Almighty Allah. He insisted on ranking all the prophets up at the highest level without any distinction between them, and ordered his followers to say the words, "peace and blessings be upon him" after mentioning their names.

He also taught the Torah (Old Testament), Zabur (Psalms) and Enjil (Gospel or New Testament) were originally from the very same source as the Quran, from Allah to the angel Gabriel. He asked the Jews to judge according to their own Book, and they tried to cover up some of it to hide the correct judgment, knowing he, peace and blessings be upon him, could not read.

He prophesied, predicted and foretold of events to come and they happened just as he had said they would. He mentioned so many things that people of his time could not have known, yet we have seen the

evidences manifest over and over throughout the centuries in science, medicine, biology, embryology, psychology, metrology, geology and many other disciplines and even space travel and wireless communications, all of which we take for granted today. He even predicted something from the past that would come true in the future, and it has..

The Quran states pharaoh was drowned in the Red Sea while chasing after Moses and Allah said He would preserve Pharaoh as a sign for the future. Dr. Maurice Bucaille in his book, "Bible, Quran and Science" makes it clear this has happened and the very person of Pharaoh has been discovered in Egypt and is now on display for all to see. This event took place thousands of years before Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, and it came true in the last few decades, many centuries after his death.

Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, or his followers never at any time claimed that he was a son of God or the God-incarnate or a man with divinity – but he always was and is even today considered as only a Messenger chosen by God. He insisted people praise Almighty God, alone and not to celebrate him or his companions in any way. While most people do not hesitate to raise to divinity and even make 'gods' out of other individuals whose lives and missions have been lost in legend. Historically speaking, none of these legends achieved even a fraction of what Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, accomplished.

Uniting mankind together for the purpose of worshipping the One God of Adam and all the other prophets, peace be upon them all, was his main motivating cause and his striving was for the sole purpose having everyone to understand and follow the codes of moral excellence set forth by Allah in His Revelations.

Today after a lapse of fourteen centuries, the life and teachings of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, have survived without the slightest loss, alteration or interpolation. They offer the same undying hope for treating mankind's many ills, which they did when he was alive. This is not a claim of Muhammad's, peace and blessings be upon him, followers, but the inescapable conclusion forced upon by a critical and unbiased history.

Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, claimed to be a servant, messenger and prophet of the Almighty God; the same God of Adam, Abraham, Moses, David and Solomon and of Jesus, the Christ, son of Mary (peace be upon them all). He claimed he was receiving revelation from Almighty God (Allah) through the Arch Angel Gabriel, calling it the Recitation (Quran).

He ordered people to believe in God as One, without partners, and to follow the Commandments of Almighty God to the best of their abilities.

He forbade himself and his followers from evil practices and filthy habits, showing them the proper ways to eat, drink, use the toilet and proper behavior in all relationships. This he claimed was all from Allah.

#### **What Did He Do?**

Almost everyone on the earth today is discussing Prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him. People want to know, "Who was he exactly?" "What did he teach?" "Why was he loved so much by some and hated so much by others?" "Did he live up to his claims?" "Was he a holy man?" "Was he a prophet of God?" "What is the truth about this man - Muhammad?"

How can we discover the truth and be totally honest in our judgment?

We will begin with the very simple historical evidences, facts as narrated by thousands of people, many of whom knew him personally. The following is based on books, manuscripts, texts and actual eyewitness accounts, too numerous list herein, yet all have been preserved in original form throughout the centuries by both Muslims and non-Muslims.

Muhammad ibn (son of) Abdullah ibn (son of) Abdul Mutalib, was born in the year 570 C.E. (Christian Era) in Makkah, Felix Arabia (today: Saudi Arabia) and he died in 633 C.E. in Yathrib (today: Madinah, Saudi Arabia).

**A.** His names: When he was born, his grandfather, Abdul Mutalib, gave him the name Muhammad. And it means "praised one" or "praising one." He was later called "As-Saddiq" (the Truthful) by all of those who knew of his truthful and honest nature. He always said only the truth. He was also called "Al-Amin" (the Trustworthy) due to his integrity and always upholding any trust given to him. When the tribes were battling against each other, both sides would entrust him with their possessions during the fighting, even if it might be against some of his own tribesmen, because they knew he would always uphold any trust given to him. All of his names indicated the very nature of a man who was praised for his honesty, integrity and trustworthiness. He was also well known for advocating the reconciliation of kinship and relationships. He ordered his followers to always honor the "ties of the wombs" (siblings and other close relatives).

***This fits right in with the prophecy mentioned in the Bible in the Book of John in chapters 14 and 16, as the coming of a prophet known as the "Spirit of Truth" or "Comforter" or "Advocate."***

**B.** Born as a descendent of Abraham, peace and blessings be upon him, through his first born son, Ishmael (Ismail in Arabic), peace and blessings be upon him, to the noble tribe of the Quraish who were the leaders of Makkah in those days. Muhammad's blood line traces directly back to Abraham, peace and blessings be upon him. ***This could certainly point to fulfillment of Old Testament (Torah) prophecies in Deuteronomy (chapter 18:15) of a prophet, like unto Moses from "their brethren."***

**C.** He kept the Commandments of Almighty God, just as his great grandfathers and prophets of old had done in the past (peace be upon them). Here is a statement from Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, while the Quran was being revealed to him by the angel Gabriel;



***"Come, I will recite what your Lord has prohibited you from: Join not anything in worship with Him; be good and dutiful to your PARENTS; do not kill your children because of poverty - (Allah) provide sustenance for you and for them; do not come near to Al-Fawahish (shameful sins, illegal sexual intercourse, etc.) whether committed openly or secretly, and kill not anyone whom Allah has forbidden, except for a just cause. This He has commanded you that you may understand."***

[Holy Quran 6:151]

**D.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, lived in total commitment to his Belief in One God, and as such, he worshipped God alone, without any other "gods" beside Him. This is the very first commandment in the Old Testament (Exodus chapter 20 and Deuteronomy, chapter 5) and in the New Testament as well (Mark, chapter 12, verse 29).

**E.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, ordered his followers to obey Allah Almighty. He ordered following the Commandments as were revealed to him by the angel Gabriel from Almighty Allah. Read below, one of many similar statements from the Quran:



***Surely, Allah Commands absolute justice and steadfast commitment to performing your duties to Almighty Allah, in total sincerity and giving help to relatives: and He forbids evil, and disobedience and all that is prohibited by Allah (such as; illegal sexual acts, disobedience of PARENTS, polytheism, to tell lies, to give false witness, to kill a life without right, etc.), and (He Forbids) any evil (i.e. all that is prohibited by God's Law, such as: polytheism of every kind, disbelief and every kind of evil deeds, etc.), and all kinds of oppression, He admonishes you, that you may take heed.***

[Holy Quran 16:90]

**F.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, never fell into the common practice of his tribesmen to worship statues, idols or man-made "gods." He forbid his followers to ever engage in worship outside of the One True God (Allah) of Adam, Abraham, Moses and all the prophets, peace be upon them all.



***And the people of the Scripture Jews and Christians did not differed amongst themselves until after there came to them clear evidence.***



***And they were commanded only to worship Allah, and worship none but Him Alone (no gods beside God), and perform prayers and give charity: and that is the right religion.***

[Holy Quran 98:4-5]

He despised false worship to any man-made gods or images or anything in creation as a god. He hated all of the complexities and degradation to which it leads.

This is in direct obedience to the second commandment in the above mentioned verses, "Thou shalt not make any graven images."

**G.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, always held the Name of God (Allah) in the highest of reverence and never took God's Name in vain or for any vainglorious purpose.

He forbid his followers for ever doing anything like this and encouraged them to use names such as "Servant of

Almighty God" (Abdullah).

**H.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, upheld the proper worship and ceremonies of his grandfathers, Abraham and Ishmael, peace be upon them. Here is something from the second chapter of the Quran. Read closely;

★  
***"Recall when Abraham's Lord (Allah) tested him with Commands, that he fulfilled. Allah said, "Surely, I am going to make you a leader (prophet) of mankind. (Abraham said) "And my offspring, too." (Allah) said, "My Covenant (prophethood, etc.) does not include wrong-doers (thamimun).***

★  
***"And recall when (Allah) made the House (ka'bah in Bakkah, which later was called "Makkah") a place of resort for mankind and a place of safety. And it is your place of prayer, and (Allah) commanded Abraham and Ishmael to purify (God's House at Makkah) for those who are circling it, or staying there or bowing or prostrating themselves (there, in worship).***

★  
***"And when Abraham said, 'My Lord, make this city (Makkah) a place of security and provide its people with fruits, for them that believe in Allah Almighty and the Last Day.' (Allah) answered, "As for him who doesn't believe, I shall leave him in contentment for a while, then I shall compel him to the torment of the Fire, and worst indeed is that destination!"***

★  
***"And when Abraham and Ishmael were raising the foundations of the Sacred House (Ka'bah in Makkah), saying, 'Our Lord! Accept from us. Certainly! You are the All-Hearer, the All-Knower.'"***

★  
***"Our Lord! And make us submissive unto You and of our offspring a nation submissive unto You, and show us our Manasik (all the ceremonies of pilgrimage - Hajj and 'Umrah, etc.), and accept our repentance. Truly, You are the One Who accepts repentance, the Most Merciful.***

★  
***"Our Lord! Send amongst them a Messenger of their own (and indeed Allah answered by sending Muhammad peace and blessings be upon him ), who shall recite unto them Your Verses and instruct them in the Book (this Quran) and full knowledge of (Allah's) Laws and jurisprudence, and sanctify them. Verily! You are the All-Mighty, the All-Wise."***

★  
***And who turns away from the religion of Abraham (Monotheism) except him who fools himself? Truly, (Allah) chose him in this world and verily, in the Hereafter he will be among the righteous.***

★  
***When his Lord said to him, "Submit ("Islam" means "submission")!" He said, "I have submitted myself ("Muslim" means "one who submits") to the Lord of all that exists."***

★  
***And this (submission to Allah) was ordered by Abraham upon his sons and by Jacob; saying, "O my sons! Allah has chosen for you the (true) religion; then die not except in the Faith of Submission (like those in true submission to God's Will)."***

[Holy Quran 2:124-132]

**I.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, performed these same ceremonies in worship to what we find the prophets doing before him, bowing to toward the ground and prostrating (falling on the face) while praying and worshipping. He would face Jerusalem for his devotionals and commanded his followers to do the same (until Allah sent down the angel Gabriel with revelation to change the direction (Qiblah) mentioned in Quran).

**J.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, advocated rights for all members of the family and especially ties to the parents, both mother and father, also rights for infant girls, orphaned girls and certainly for wives, as well.

It is known from the Quran, Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, ordered his followers to be kind and respectful to their parents. They were told not to even say, "Ooh" to them while caring for them in their old age. Read from the Quran:



***And your Lord has decreed that you worship none but Him. And that you be dutiful to your parents. If one of them or both of them attain old age in your life, say not to them a word of disrespect, nor shout at them but address them in terms of honor.***

**[Holy Quran 17:23]**

**K.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was the defender of the orphans and even the newborn children. He ordered the care of orphans and feeding of the poor as the means to enter Paradise and if anyone held back the rights of those who were destitute, they could forget about ever seeing Paradise. He also forbade the killing of newborn girls, as was a custom of ignorance according to primitive Arab traditions. This is referred to in the Quran; when, on the Day of Judgment those who practiced the evil deed of terminating the life of their own infant daughters, will have it exposed, the Quran says:



***"And when the female (infant) buried alive (as the pagan Arabs used to do) is going to be asked; about what sin could she (as an infant) have possibly committed."***

**[Holy Quran 81:8]**



***Those who spend their wealth (in Allah's Cause) by night and day, in secret and in public, they shall have their reward with their Lord. On them shall be no fear, nor shall they grieve.***

**[Holy Quran 2:274]**

**L.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, ordered men not to "inherit women against their will," and not to marry them except by mutual consent and never to touch their wealth or inheritance in order to improve their own financial conditions.



***O you who believe! You are forbidden to inherit women against their will, and you should not treat them with harshness, that you may take away part of the Mahr you have given them, unless they commit open illegal sexual intercourse. And live with them honorably. If you dislike them, it may be that you dislike a thing and Allah brings through it a great deal of good.***

**[Holy Quran 4:19]**

We also notice from this verse, He forbid the common practice of wife-beating and abuse, (his own wife said he never once hit her).

He never once engaged in sex outside of marriage, nor did he ever approve of it, even though it was very common at the time. His only relationships with women were in legitimate, contractual marriages with proper witnesses according to law. His relationship to Ayesha was only that of marriage. He did not marry her the first time her father offered her hand to him in marriage. He married her only after she reached the age of puberty and could decide for herself. Their relationship is described in every detail by Ayesha herself in the most loving and respectful manner as a match truly made in heaven. Ayesha is considered as one of the highest scholars of Islam and lived out her entire life only having been married to Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him. She never desired any other man, nor did she ever utter a single negative statement against Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him.

**M.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, ordered men to "provide and protect" women, whether it was their own mother, sister, wife or daughter or even those of others, whether they were Muslims or not.



***"Men are the protectors and maintainers of women, because Allah has made one of them to excel the other, and because they spend (to support the women) from their means. Therefore the righteous women are devoutly obedient (to Allah and to their husbands), and guard in the husband's absence what Allah orders them to guard (e.g. their chastity, their husband's property, etc.). As to those women on whose part you see illconduct, admonish them, refuse to share their beds, startle them (set forth a clear example or parable for them, to make clear the point of what is going on before divorcing them) so if they return to proper obedience (to Allah and their husbands), do not annoy them any further. Surely, Allah is Ever Most High, Most Great."***

**[Holy Quran 4:34]**

**N.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, prohibited killing of children for fear of poverty and also forbade killing any innocent people.



**Say (O Muhammad peace and blessings be upon him): "Come, I will recite what your Lord has prohibited you from: Join not anything in worship with Him; be good and dutiful to your parents; kill not your children because of poverty - We provide sustenance for you and for them; come not near to Al-Fawahish (shameful sins, illegal sexual intercourse, etc.) whether committed openly or secretly, and kill not anyone whom Allah has forbidden, except for a just cause (according to Law). This He has commanded you that you may understand.**

**[Holy Quran 6:151]**

**O.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, never committed adultery, and he required his followers to engage only in lawful marriage relationships with women, and forbid sex outside of Almighty God's Ordinance.



**Satan (the devil) threatens you with poverty and orders you to commit Fahsha (evil deeds, illegal sexual intercourse, sins etc.); whereas Allah promises you Forgiveness from Himself and Bounty, and Allah is All-Sufficient for His creatures' needs, All-Knower.**

**[Holy Quran 2:268]**



**Say (O Muhammad SAW): "(But) the things that my Lord has indeed forbidden are AlFawahish (great evil sins, every kind of unlawful sexual intercourse, etc.) whether committed openly or secretly, sins (of all kinds), unrighteous oppression, joining partners (in worship) with Allah for which He has given no authority, and saying things about Allah of which you have no knowledge."**

**[Holy Quran 7:33]**



**And come not near to the unlawful sexual intercourse. Verily, it is a Fahishah [i.e. anything that transgresses its limits (a great sin)], and an evil way (that leads one to Hell unless Allah forgives him).**

**[Holy Quran 17:32]**



**The adulterer marries not but an adulteress or a Mushrikah and the adulteress none marries her except an adulterer or a Muskrík [and that means that the man who agrees to marry (have a sexual relation with) a Mushrikah (female polytheist, pagan or idolatress) or a prostitute, then surely he is either an adulterer, or a Mushrik (polytheist, pagan or idolater, etc.) And the woman who agrees to marry (have a sexual relation with) a Mushrik (polytheist, pagan or idolater) or an adulterer, then she is either a prostitute or a Mushrikah (female polytheist, pagan, or idolatress, etc.)]. Such a thing is forbidden to the believers (of Islamic Monotheism).**

**[Holy Quran 24:3]**



**Verily, those who like that (the crime of) illegal sexual intercourse should be propagated among those who believe, they will have a painful torment in this world and in the Hereafter. And Allah knows and you know not.**

**[Holy Quran 24:19]**



**O Prophet! When believing women come to you to give you the pledge, that they will not associate anything in worship with Allah, that they will not steal, that they will not commit illegal sexual intercourse, that they will not kill their children, that they will not utter slander, intentionally forging falsehood (i.e. by making illegal children belonging to their husbands), and that they will not disobey**



***you in any Ma'ruf (Islamic Monotheism and all that which Islam ordains) then accept their Bai'a (pledge), and ask Allah to forgive them, Verily, Allah is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful.***  
[Holy Quran 60:12]

People committed fornication and adultery in most places around the world in Muhammad's time, yet he never once did so, and he forbade all of his followers from this evil practice.

**P.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, forbade usury and interest on money lending, as Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, had done centuries before him. It can be easily shown how usury eats away at wealth and destroys the economic systems throughout history. Yet, just as in the teachings of the prophets of old, Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, held that such practices were most evil and must be avoided in order to be at peace with the Creator (Allah).

★  
***Those who eat usury (deal in interest) will not stand (on the Day of Resurrection) except like the standing of a person beaten by Satan leading him to insanity. That is because they say: "Trading is only like usury," whereas Allah has permitted trading and forbidden usury. So whosoever receives an admonition from his Lord and stops eating usury shall not be punished for the past; his case is for Allah (to judge); but whoever returns to dealing in usury, such are the dwellers of the Fire - they will abide therein.***

★  
***Allah will destroy Riba (usury) and will give increase for charity, alms, etc. And Allah likes not the disbelievers, sinners.***

★  
***Truly those who believe, and do deeds of righteousness, and perform Salat, and give Zakat, they will have their reward with their Lord. On them shall be no fear, nor shall they grieve.***

★  
***You who believe! Be afraid of Allah and give up what remains (due to you) from usury, if you are believers.***

★  
***And if you do not do it, then take a notice of war from Allah and His Messenger but if you repent, you shall have your capital sums. Deal not unjustly, and you shall not be dealt with unjustly.***  
[Holy Quran 2:275-279]

**Q.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, never gambled and did not allow it. Like usury, gambling takes away wealth but at an even faster pace.

★  
***"People ask you (Muhammad) about alcohol and gambling. Say, 'There is great sin in both of them and (some benefit) for humans, but the sin is greater than any benefit from them.' And they ask you what they should spend (for charity, etc.). Say, 'Whatever is above your basic needs.' So, Allah makes it clear to you His Laws in order for you to give thought."***

[Holy Quran 2:219]

Gambling had not been viewed as so evil until the time of Muhammad, peace be upon. Today, it is well established the damage gambling causes to families and even mental health. The idea of getting something for nothing is not the proper way of life prescribed by the teachings of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him.

**R.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, never drank alcohol or strong drink, even though it was a very normal thing for people of his time and place.

★  
***"O you believers! Intoxicating drinks, gambling, fortune telling, etc. is the hated work of the devil. So stay away from all of that horrible stuff, that you will be successful."***

★

***"The devil only wants to create hatred between you with intoxicants (alcoholic drinks, etc.) and gambling and to keep you from the remembrance of Allah and from your proper worship (prayers). So, why won't you away from them?"***

**[Holy Quran 5:90-91]**

The Arabs, like most other cultures at his time, drank alcohol without concern for their health or for their altered behavior while intoxicated. Many of them were alcoholics.

In today's world there is little need to present long discussions on the evil and dangers of drinking alcohol. Besides causing diseases and ruining a person's health, alcohol is often attributed to be the cause of many traffic accidents resulting in property damage, injuries and deaths. The first order was for the followers of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, to leave off drinking while engaged in worship, then came stronger orders to leave drinking all together. Thus, offering a time for the early Muslims to break off from their addiction to strong drink.

**S.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, did not engage in gossip or backbiting and he always turned away from hearing anything related to it.



***O you who believe! If a rebellious evil person comes to you with a news, verify it, lest you harm people in ignorance, and afterwards you become regretful to what you have done.***

**[Holy Quran 49:6]**



***O you who believe! Do not allow one group scoff at another group, it may be that the latter are better than the former; nor let (some) women scoff at other women, it may be that the latter are better than the former, nor defame one another, nor insult one another by nicknames. How bad is it, to insult one's brother after having Faith? And whosoever does not repent, then such are indeed wrong-doers.***

★ ***O you who believe! Avoid much suspicions, indeed some suspicions are sins. And spy not, neither backbite one another. Would one of you like to eat the flesh of his dead brother? You would hate it (so hate backbiting) . And fear Allah. Verily, Allah is the One Who accepts repentance, Most Merciful.***

**[Holy Quran 49:11-12]**

Certainly, these teachings would be well appreciated in today's world where we find almost everyone engaging in the worst of gossiping and insulting of others, even the closest of relatives and loved ones.

**T.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was most generous and encouraged others to be the same way in their dealings with others. He even asked them to forgive the debts of others with hope of receiving a better reward with their Lord (Allah).



***And if the debtor is in a hard time (has no money), then grant him time till it is easy for him to repay, but if you remit it by way of charity, that is better for you if you did but know.***



***And be afraid of the Day when you shall be brought back to Allah. Then every person shall be paid what he earned, and they shall not be dealt with unjustly.***

**[Holy Quran 2:280-281]**

**S.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, commanded the payment of charity to the poor and he was the defender and protector of widows, orphans and the wayfarers.



***"Therefore, do not oppress the orphan, nor repulse the beggar."***

**[Holy Quran 93:9-10]**

★  
**Charity is for the poor, who in Allah's Cause are restricted (from travel), and cannot move about in the land (for trade or work). The one who knows them not, thinks that they are rich because of their modesty. You may know them by their mark, they do not beg of people at all. And whatever you spend in good, surely Allah knows it well.**  
[Holy Quran 2:273]

U. Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, taught people how to deal with the most extreme difficulties and tests that occur to us throughout our lives. He held that only through patience and a humble attitude would we find true resolution and understanding of life's complications and disappointments. He the most patient of all and was exemplary in his own humbleness. All who knew him had to admit to these virtues.

★  
**O you who believe! Seek help in patience and the prayer. Truly! Allah is with the patient ones.**  
[Holy Quran 2:153]

He explained this life was a test from Allah:

★  
**And certainly, Allah shall test you with something of fear, hunger, loss of wealth, lives and fruits, but give glad tidings to the patient ones.**  
[Holy Quran 2:155]

★  
**Who, when afflicted with calamity, say: "Truly! To Allah we belong and truly, to Him we shall return."**  
[Holy Quran 2:156]

V. Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, fasted for days at a time to be closer to Almighty God and away from the narrowness of worldly attractions.

★  
**O you who believe! Observing the fasting is prescribed for you as it was prescribed for those before you, that you may become pious.**  
[Holy Quran 2:183]

W. Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, called for an end to racism and tribalism from the beginning to the end of his mission. He was truly the peacemaker for all times and all people.

★  
**O mankind! (Allah) has created you from a male and a female, and made you into nations and tribes, that you may know one another. Verily, the most honourable of you with Allah is that (believer) who is one of the pious. Verily, Allah is All-Knowing, All-Aware**  
[Holy Quran 49:13]

And in another verse of the Quran:

★  
**O mankind! Have piety and be most dutiful to your Lord, Who created you from a single person (Adam), and from him (Adam) He created his wife (Eve), and from them both He created many men and women and fear Allah through Whom you demand your mutual (rights), and (do not cut the relations of) the wombs (kinship). Surely, Allah is Ever an All-Watcher over you.**  
[Holy Quran 4:1]

X. Regarding keeping up good relationships and bringing people back together after a falling out, the Quran says:

★

***And if two parties or groups among the believers fall to fighting, then make peace between them both, but if one of them rebels against the other, then fight you (all) against the one that which rebels till it complies with the Command of Allah; then if it complies, then make reconciliation between them justly, and be equitable. Verily! Allah loves those who are equitable.***



***The believers are nothing else than brothers to each other. So make reconciliation between your brothers, and fear Allah, that you may receive mercy.***

**[Holy Quran 49:9-10]**

**Y.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, taught that Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, was the immaculate conception and miracle birth of Mary, and that she was the best creation of Almighty God. He insisted even to the Jews of Madinah, that Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, was the Messiah, the Christ, the one predicted to come in their Torah (Old Testament). He also taught that Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, did many miracles by the permission of Almighty God, curing the lepers, restoring sight to the blind and even bringing a dead man back to life, and he was not dead, rather Almighty God had raised him up. He also predicted Jesus, peace and blessings be upon him, is going to return again in the Last Days to lead the true believers in a victory over the evil and unrighteous people, and he will destroy the Anti-Christ.

**Z.** Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, forbade any killing, even when his followers were being killed, until the orders for retaliation came from Allah. Even then the limits were clearly spelled out and only those engaged in active combat against the Muslims or Islam were to be fought in combat. And even then, only according to very strict rules from Allah. fought in combat. And even then, only according to very strict rules from Allah.

### **What Did His Followers Say?**

**"His name was Muhammad"** (peace and blessings be upon him)

To begin: You may be a Christian Protestant, Catholic, Jew, an atheist or an agnostic; or you may belong to any of many different religious denominations existing in today's world. You might even be a communist or believe in man's democracy as the rule on earth. Whoever you are and whatever ideological or political beliefs, social habits you may hold, there is no doubt - you should understand what others have to say about this man.

The world has had its share of great personalities. But these were one sided figures who distinguished themselves in but one or two fields, such as religious thought or military leadership. The lives and teachings of these great personalities of the earth are shrouded in the mist of time. There is so much speculation about the time and place their birth, the mode and style of their life, the nature and detail of their teachings and the degree and measure of their success or failure that is impossible for humanity to reconstruct, accurately the lives and teachings of these men and women.

But this is not the case of this man, Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, who accomplished so much in such diverse fields of human thought and behavior in the fullest blaze of human history. Every detail of his private life and public utterances has been accurately documented and faithfully preserved up until our day. The authenticity of the records so preserved is vouched for not only by the faithful followers but even by his prejudiced critics.

Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was a religious teacher, a social reformer, a moral guide, an administrative colossus, a faithful friend, a wonderful companion, a devoted husband, a loving father - all in one. No other man in history ever excelled or equaled him in any of these different aspects of life - but it was only for the selfless personality of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, to achieve such incredible perfection.

He was by far, the most remarkable man that ever set foot on this earth. He preached a religion, founded a state, built a nation, laid down a moral code, initiated numerous social and political reforms, established a powerful and dynamic society to practice and represent his teachings and completely revolutionized the worlds of human thought and behavior for all times to come.

Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was born in what was then known as Felix Arabia, fourteen hundred years ago. He started his mission of preaching a religion of monotheism; a Way of Life based on the surrender, submission and obedience to the Commandments of Almighty God, in sincerity and peace.

The word "Islam" in Arabic means "the submission to God, in peace."

Muhammad's (peace and blessings be upon him) mission began at the age of forty and departed from this world at

the age of sixty-three. During this short period of 23 years of his prophethood, he changed the complete Arabian Peninsula from paganism and idolatry to worship of One God, from tribal quarrels and wars to national solidarity and cohesion, from drunkenness and debauchery to sobriety and piety, from lawlessness and anarchy to disciplined living, from utter bankruptcy to the highest standards of moral excellence.

Human history has never known such a complete transformation of a people or a place before or since - and IMAGINE all these unbelievable wonders in JUST OVER TWO DECADES.

Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was nothing more or less than a human being. but he was a man with a noble mission, which was to unite humanity on the worship of ONE and ONLY ONE GOD and to teach them the way to honest and upright living, based on the commands of God. He always described himself as, 'A Servant and Messenger of God' and so indeed every action of his proclaimed to be.

Today after a lapse of fourteen centuries, the life and teachings of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, have survived without the slightest loss, alteration or interpolation. They offer the same undying hope for treating mankind's many ills, which they did when he was alive. This is not a claim of Mohammed's(peace and blessings be upon him) followers, but the inescapable conclusion forced upon by a critical and unbiased history.

The least YOU can do as a thinking and concerned human being is to stop for a moment and ask your self: Could these statements sounding so extraordinary and revolutionary really be true? And supposing they really are true and you did not know this man Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, or hear about him, isn't it time you responded to this tremendous challenge and put in some effort to know him?

It will cost you nothing, but it may prove to be the beginning of a completely new era in your life.

We invite you to make a discovery of this wonderful man, Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, the like of whom never walked on the face of this earth

### **What Do Others Say About Him?**

#### **Before We Begin our "A to Z of Muhammad" - Let's See What 12 Famous People Have Said About Muhammad (peace and blessings be upon him) Throughout the Centuries...**

**His complete biography has been authenticated and circulated amongst scholars around the world starting while he was still alive and continuing up until today. One of the first examples we quote from is from the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, as it confirms:**

***(Regarding Muhammad) "... a mass of detail in the early sources shows that he was an honest and upright man who had gained the respect and loyalty of others who were likewise honest and upright men."***

**[Vol. 12]**

**Another impressive tribute to Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him is in the very well written work of Michael H. Hart, "The 100: A Ranking of the Most Influential Persons in History." He states that the most influential person in all history was Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, with Jesus second. Examine his actual words:**

***"My choice of Muhammad to lead the list of the world's most influential persons may surprise some readers and may be questioned by others, but he was the only man in history who was supremely successful on both the religious and secular level."***

**[Michael H. Hart, THE 100: A RANKING OF THE MOST INFLUENTIAL PERSONS IN HISTORY, New York: Hart Publishing Company, Inc., 1978, page. 33.]**

**According to the Quran, Prophet Muhammad was the most excellent example for all of humanity. Even non-Muslim historians recognize him to be one of the most successful personalities in history. Read what the Reverend R. Bosworth-Smith wrote in "Mohammed & Mohammedanism" in 1946: *"Head of the state as well as the Church, he was Caesar and Pope in one; but, he was pope without the pope's claims, and Caesar without the legions of Caesar, without a standing army, without a bodyguard, without a palace, without a fixed revenue. If ever any man had the right to say that he ruled by a Right Divine, it was Mohammad, for he had all the power without instruments and without its support. He cared not for dressing of power. The simplicity of his private life was in keeping with his public life."***

While we are reviewing statements from famous non-Muslims about Prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, consider this:

*"Philosopher, orator, apostle, legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, of a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire, that is Muhammad. As regards all standards by which human greatness may be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?"*

[Lamartine, HISTOIRE DE LA TURQUIE, Paris, 1854, Vol. II, pp. 276-277.]

And then we read what George Bernard Shaw, a famous writer and non-Muslim says:  
*"He must be called the Savior of Humanity. I believe that if a man like him were to assume the dictatorship of the modern world, he would succeed in solving its problems in a way that would bring it much needed peace and happiness."*

[The Genuine Islam, Singapore, Vol. 1, No. 8, 1936]

Then we found that K. S. Ramakrishna Rao, an Indian (Hindu) professor of Philosophy, in his booklet *"Muhammad the Prophet of Islam"* calls him the "perfect model for human life." Professor Ramakrishna Rao explains his point by saying:  
*"The personality of Muhammad, it is most difficult to get into the whole truth of it. Only a glimpse of it I can catch. What a dramatic succession of picturesque scenes. There is Muhammad the Prophet. There is Muhammad the Warrior; Muhammad the Businessman; Muhammad the Statesman; Muhammad the Orator; Muhammad the Reformer; Muhammad the Refuge of Orphans; Muhammad the Protector of Slaves; Muhammad the Emancipator of Women; Muhammad the Judge; Muhammad the Saint. All in all these magnificent roles, in all these departments of human activities, he is alike a hero."*

What should we think about our prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, when someone with the worldly status such as Mahatma Gandhi, speaking on the character of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, says in *'Young India'*:  
*"I wanted to know the best of one who holds today undisputed sway over the hearts of millions of mankind... I became more than convinced that it was not the sword that won a place for Islam in those days in the scheme of life. It was the rigid simplicity, the utter self-effacement of the Prophet, the scrupulous regard for his pledges, his intense devotion to his friends and followers, his intrepidity, his fearlessness, his absolute trust in God and in his own mission. These and not the sword carried everything before them and surmounted every obstacle. When I closed the 2nd volume (of the Prophet's biography), I was sorry there was not more for me to read of the great life."*

English author Thomas Carlyle in his *'Heroes and Hero Worship'*, was simply amazed:  
*"How one man single handedly, could weld warring tribes and wandering Bedouins into a most powerful and civilized nation in less than two decades."*

And Diwan Chand Sharma wrote in *"The Prophets of the East"*:  
*"Muhammad was the soul of kindness, and his influence was felt and never forgotten by those around him"*

[D.C. Sharma, The Prophets of the East, Calcutta, 1935, pp. 12]

*Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was nothing more or less than a human being, but he was a man with a noble mission, which was to unite humanity on the worship of ONE and ONLY ONE GOD and to teach them the way to honest and upright living based on the commands of God. He always described himself as, 'A Servant and Messenger of God' and so indeed every action of his proclaimed to be.*

Speaking on the aspect of equality before God in Islam, the famous poetess of India, Sarojini Naidu says:  
*"It was the first religion that preached and practiced democracy; for, in the mosque, when the call for prayer is sounded and worshippers are gathered together, the democracy of Islam is embodied five times a day when the peasant and king kneel side by side and proclaim: 'God Alone is Great'... I have*

***been struck over and over again by this indivisible unity of Islam that makes man instinctively a brother."***

**[S. Naidu, Ideals of Islam, vide Speeches & Writings, Madras, 1918, p. 169]**

**In the words of Professor Hurgonje:**

***"The league of nations founded by the prophet of Islam put the principle of international unity and human brotherhood on such universal foundations as to show candle to other nations." He continues, "the fact is that no nation of the world can show a parallel to what Islam has done towards the realization of the idea of the League of Nations."***

**Edward Gibbon and Simon Ockley, on the profession of ISLAM, writes in "History of the Saracen Empires":**

***"I BELIEVE IN ONE GOD, AND MAHOMET, AN APOSTLE OF GOD' is the simple and invariable profession of Islam. The intellectual image of the Deity has never been degraded by any visible idol; the honor of the Prophet have never transgressed the measure of human virtues; and his living precepts have restrained the gratitude of his disciples within the bounds of reason and religion."***

**[History of the Saracen Empires, London, 1870, p. 54]**

**EWolfgang Goethe, perhaps the greatest European poet ever, wrote about Prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him. He said:**

***"He is a prophet and not a poet and therefore his Koran is to be seen as Divine Law and not as a book of a human being, made for education or entertainment."***

**[Noten und Abhandlungen zum Weststlichen Dvan, WA I, 7, 32]**

### **What Do Muslims Say?**

Considering the qualities and teachings of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, testified to by some many people throughout history and even testified to by Allah Himself, we conclude the following to be only a partial list of the qualities, morals and virtues of Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him.

**A. Articulate** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, although unable to read or write throughout his entire life, was able to express himself in clear and decisive terms and in the best of classical Arabic language.

**B. Brave** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was praised for his courage and bravery during and after his life by his followers and opponents alike. He has always been an inspiration to Muslims and even non-Muslims throughout the centuries.

**C. Courteous** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, always put other people's feelings ahead of his own and was the most courteous of hosts and the best of guests wherever he went.

**D. Dedicated** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was determined to carry out his mission and present the message with which he had been sent, to the entire world.

**E. Eloquent** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, claimed he was not a poet, yet he could express himself in the most concise manner, using the least amount of words in a most classic manner. His words are still quoted by millions of Muslims and non-Muslims today everywhere.

**F. Friendly** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was noted for being the most friendly and considerate of all who knew him.

**G. Generous** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was most generous with his possessions and never wanted to keep anything if there was anyone who was in need. This was true of gold, silver, animals and even food and drink.

**H. Hospitable** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was indeed, noted to be the most gracious of hosts and taught his companions and followers to be the best of hosts to all their guests as a part of their religion.

**I. Intelligent** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, has been proclaimed by many commentators who

have studied his life and actions, to be of the most intelligent of all men who ever lived.

**J. Just** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was most fair and just in all of his dealings. Whether in business or in giving judgment in any matter, he practiced justice on all levels.

**K. Kindness** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was kind and considerate to everyone he met. He tired his best to present the message of worship of the Creator instead of the creations to all he met in the kindest fashion and most considerate manner.

**L. Loving** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was the most loving toward Allah and to his family members, friends, companions and even those who did not accept his message but remained peaceful to him and his followers.

**M. Messenger of Mercy** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, is proclaimed in the Quran by Allah, as being sent to the entire world as the "Mercy to all mankind and jinn."

**N. Noble** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was the most noble and distinguished of all men. Everyone knew of his fine character and honorable background.

**O. "Oneness"** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, is most famous for his proclamation of the "Oneness of Allah" or monotheism (called "Tawheed" in Arabic).

**P. Patient** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was the most steadfast and forbearing in all of the trials and tests he lived through.

**Q. Quiet** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was often very quiet and never was heard to be boastful, loud or obnoxious on any occasion.

**R. Resourceful** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was most clever and resourceful in handling even the most serious of difficulties and problems confronting him and his companions.

**S. Straightforward** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was known by all to speak directly to a subject and not twist things around in his speech. He also used a minimal amount of verbiage and considered excessive talk to be vain and unproductive.

**T. Tactful** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was the most delicate and tactful in his dealings with the people. He never scratched the dignity of someone, even though unbelievers often insulted him and maligned him.

**U. Unmatched** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, is known throughout the world today as the man who most influenced the lives of so many people during his own time and for all times to come.

**V. Valiant** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, gave new meaning to the word valiant and he was always most honorable in all of his affairs, whether defending the rights of orphans or preserving the honor of widows or fighting for those in distress. He was not intimidated when outnumbered in battle, nor did he turn away from his duties in protecting and defending the truth and freedom.

**W. Wali** - The Arabic word, "**wali**" (plural is owliya) is a bit difficult to bring into English without some explanation. For this reason I decided to leave it in Arabic and offer from my humble understanding one of the most important aspects of the character and personality of the prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him. Some say the word means; "**protectors**" and others have said "**darlings**" or "those in whom you put full trust and confide everything" like the Catholics might do with their priests. While still others simply offered the word "friends." While discussing this subject with one of my beloved teachers, Salim Morgan, he mentioned to me the meaning might be closer to the English word, "**ally**." This is perhaps, a lot closer in meaning because when a person gives their pledge of allegiance to someone he or she is taking that person as a "**wally**" and this is called giving "**bay'ah**" in Arabic. Allah tells us the Quran not to take the Jews and Christians as "**owliya**" in place of Allah. While we understand the People of the Book (Jews and Christians) are the closest to us in faith, at the same time we are instructed here not to take anyone as our "**confessor**" or "**intimate ally**" or "one to whom we give our pledge of allegiance" in place of Allah or His messenger, Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him. The prophet, peace and blessings be upon him, was the living example of the most trustworthy and loyal of all human beings who ever lived on this earth. Anything mentioned to him in confidence would never be divulged nor shared with others. And when he was put in place of authority or "**wali**" over the people, they found him to be the best of those to be trusted.

**X. "X"** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, could neither read nor write, not even his own name. In today's world he would have to use an "X" to "sign" a document. He used a signet ring worn on the little finger of



his right hand to seal any documents or letters sent to the leaders of other lands.

**Y. Yielding** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, would yield his own desires and forego his own ideas in favor of whatever Allah directed him to do. While considering opinions from his followers, he often accepted their ideas over his own, preferring to yield in favor of others as much as possible.

**Z. Zealous** - Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him, was the most zealous of all the prophets of Allah, in carrying out his mission of "Peace through the submission to the Will of God." He truly was the most enthusiastic in regard to delivering the message with which he had been entrusted by Allah; the message of "**Laa elaha illa-Allah, Muhammadar-Rasoolulah**" (There is none worthy of worship, except Allah and Muhammad is the messenger of Allah).

**Alief. "AJEEB" (AMAZING) - We couldn't resist the chance for one more letter - even if it is the first letter of the Arabic alphabet ("A" alief).**

Muhammad was truly amazing in every respect. He delivered a message of a complete and total way of life, encompassing everything from the time a person wakes up until time to sleep and from the cradle to the grave. And if someone were to follow this Way of Life ("deen" in Arabic), they would achieve the greatest success here in this life and the greatest success in the Next Life as well.

**Conclusion**

**Before concluding our review of Muhammad, A to Z, it must be mentioned, that although Muhammad is deeply loved, revered and emulated by Muslims as God's final messenger, he is NOT the object of worship for Muslims.**

Now it is up to you. You are a rational thinking, concerned human being. As such, you should already be asking yourself:

Could these extraordinary, revolutionary and amazing statements, all about this one man, really be true? What if this is true?

You have read what famous writers, thinkers, poets, philosophers, clergy and humanitarians have said about Muhammad. You have seen the recordings of those who knew him and knew of him and what others have said, about Prophet Muhammad, peace and blessings be upon him.

**So, the question now is, "What do you say about Muhammad?"**

**You be the judge. [www.guideus.tv](http://www.guideus.tv) BY YUSUF ESTEZ**

## **What do Muslims think of Jesus?**

There are many questions that come to mind when the name Jesus is mentioned. Some people say he was a prophet, others call him a god, while others say he was a very wise man. But whatever your idea is, one thing remains certain: he was not your ordinary man. So if there is something special about him, why all the confusion?

Just who was Jesus anyway?

**His Origin**

Jesus lived about 2,000 years ago in ancient Palestine when the Roman Empire was at its zenith. He was not conceived in the usual way, but was implanted in the womb of a young woman named Mary. God simply commanded, "Be" and he was. In this sense, he was "a word" of God and a special sign for humanity. In fact, he was the last in a long line of religious guides sent to the Jews.

**Mary, The Blessed**

Mary was a righteous woman. Her mother dedicated her to God's service even before she was born. As a child, she lived a life marked by health and righteousness, which others pointed to in admiration. She was raised by the wise Zechariah, who instilled in her, a beautiful sense of faith in God. When she had become a young woman, Mary sought to purify herself further before her Lord. Knowing that the hustle of life in the towns was distracting, she withdrew from her people to a sanctuary in the East. There she could meditate in seclusion and peace. Suddenly, on a day that seemed no different from the rest, an angel of God visited her, disguised in the likeness of a human. Afraid of so strange a sight, Mary prayed for protection, but the strange being reassured her and declared that he was a messenger from the Lord to announce the glad-tidings of a faultless son. Mary, astounded, asked how this was possible seeing that no man had ever touched her. But the angel replied, "Your Lord says, it is easy for Me ...". But when she felt the little child within her, she fled her sanctuary out of fear of what her family would do or say when they heard the news. Mary, however, was not to face hardship. When in her despair she cried out to God for oblivion, a voice soothed her and she found shade and

a cool spring. Under a date-palm in the warmth of late summer, she made her dwelling and there bore the child unlike any other in human history.

Shortly thereafter, Mary returned to her community carrying the child who was to be called Messiah, Jesus, and son of Mary. When her people saw her with the baby in her arms they couldn't believe their eyes, let alone accept her word. They refused to believe when she told of an angel who came and told her she was chosen above all other women to carry this burden. They accused her of infidelity and implied that she had ruined the family name. Mary, being overwhelmed, simply motioned towards the child meekly.

#### The Miracles

Now the child was the product of a miracle and consequently, miraculous things began to happen. In defense of his mother and of the truth, the infant Jesus spoke saying, "I am a servant of God. He has given me Scripture and has made me a Prophet. He has blessed me wherever I may be and has made prayer and charity my duty as long as I live." This put the detractors to rest.

Throughout his youth, Jesus remained dutiful to his mother and developed quickly in intelligence, wisdom, and piety. He dumfounded the learned and was greatly admired by those around him who appreciated his talents. He claimed to be a sign of God and a Messenger to the Israelites.

His people had strayed from the spirit of truth and placed their trust in legalism, thereby burying their sense of mercy beneath dusty scrolls and rituals. Finally, when he came of age, Jesus began to travel and preach throughout the land of Palestine about a return to the truth of the old revelations and a rejection of all that man had added. In his task he was supported by the spirit of truth, the angel Gabriel.

#### The Gospel, His Message

He taught that love and mercy overcome hate and anger and that only a true and sincere faith in the Creator and obedience to His will can bring a person salvation in this life as well as in the next. To reinforce his message, which was called "Injeel" (Good News), God granted him the performance of miracles. He healed the sick, uplifted the distressed and revived the dead. All these things he did with the permission of God, never taking credit for them himself.

He led a simple and pious life. Soon he attracted an inner-circle of devoted followers who listened to his teachings with fervor and humility. These disciples, among them Peter, Barnabas, and John helped him carry the message of Divine Love to the people. They helped him in his mission.

#### A Test Of Wills

But no righteous man of God is without trial and tribulation. As the message of Jesus began to gain wider acceptance, a small clique of hypocrites and evil men began to plot against him. They were the priests and leaders of the Jews whose position and wealth depended upon their place as the sole interpreters of religion to the masses. They pursued him and his followers and eventually captured him. Though they abused him, he never renounced his faith in the one God. So in their anger they plotted to crucify him on a Roman cross. But Jesus slipped from their grip at the last moment, and all the while they thought they had succeeded. They were sure they had killed him but God answered Jesus' prayer and saved him from their schemes. Confusion overtook the mob and they might have killed the man who betrayed Jesus instead. In any case, Jesus escaped from their grasp. Then God removed Jesus from this world into another dimension, to a place with Him, not to return until a later time.

With their teacher gone, the devoted followers of Jesus tried to maintain the purity and simplicity of his teachings. But they were soon besieged and overtaken by a flood of Roman and Greek influences, which eventually so buried and distorted the message of Jesus that only a little of its truth now remains. Strange doctrines of Jesus being a man-god, of God dying, of saint worship and of God being made up of different parts came into vogue and were accepted by many of those who took the name "Christians" centuries after Jesus.

#### Conclusion

The only records that have come down to us concerning Jesus are some sketchy biographical material, poorly researched and compiled, which can in no way be representative of the full and accurate Message of Jesus, the Son of Mary. The time of the final and incorruptible Message was not yet at hand. It would be left to the last prophet of God, Muhammad (peace be upon him), to clarify the truth from man's additions and deletions.

Jesus taught the same eternal message that was taught by all the Messengers of God, from Adam, on through Noah, Abraham, Moses and ending with the mission of God's last Guidepost to humanity, Muhammad (peace be on them all), whose coming was foretold by Jesus himself.

Every nation and every people, from the Aztecs to the Greeks, have received a Prophet or a Messenger from God. Jesus was the last of a series of Messengers sent to the Israelites, but they consistently strayed from the path of surrender to God. Each of the many Messengers spoke a different language and followed varied customs. Yet the core faith taught by each was the same: surrender your imperfect and fickle will to the perfect will of the Power that is greater than you. You will then find the peace and freedom that only the Creator of all things can provide. Then you must do what is right and good to your fellow creatures. This way of life is called Islam (surrender to God and find peace).

By Yahiya Emerick

Muslims respect and venerate Jesus Christ. They consider him to be one of God's greatest messengers to humankind. The Qur'an re-affirms his miraculous birth and his miraculous abilities.

Furthermore, his mother Mary is regarded as one of the most pure and exalted women of all creation. As the Qur'an says:

“Behold! the angel said: ‘God has chosen you and purified you and has chosen you above the women of all nations. O Mary! God gives you the good news of a word from Him, whose name shall be Messiah, Jesus son of Mary, honored in this world and the hereafter, and one of those brought near to God” (3:42).

Islam regards its teachings to be a re-affirmation and culmination of the teachings of previous monotheistic religions like Judaism and Christianity. Hence, all Muslims believe in Moses and Jesus as Prophets of God. Prophet Muhammad was commanded to recite in the Qur’an:

“Say, we believe in God and that which was revealed unto us, and that which was revealed unto Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac and Jacob, and the tribes and that which was entrusted unto Moses and Jesus and the Prophets from their Lord We make no distinction between any of them and unto Him we have submitted” (3:84).

A Muslim never refers to him simply as “Jesus”, but always adds the phrase “upon him be peace.” The Qur’an confirms his virgin birth, and an entire surah (chapter) of the Qur’an is entitled “Mary.” The Qur’an describes the Annunciation as follows:

“She said: ‘O my Lord! How shall I have a son when no man has touched me?’ He said: ‘Even so; God creates what He wills. When He decrees a thing, He says to it, “Be!” and it is.’” (Qur’an 3:42-7)

Jesus was born miraculously through the same power that had brought Adam into being without a father: “Truly the likeness of Jesus with God is as the likeness of Adam. He created him of dust and then said to him, ‘Be!’ and he was.” (Qur’an 3:59)

During his prophetic mission, Jesus performed many miracles. The Qur’an tells us that he said: “I have come to you with a sign from your Lord: I make for you out of clay, as it were, a figure of a bird, and breathe into it and it becomes a bird by God’s leave. And I heal the blind, and the lepers, and I raise the dead by God’s leave.” (Qur’an 3:49)

Neither Muhammad nor Jesus came to change the basic doctrine of the belief in One God, brought by earlier prophets, but to confirm and renew it. In the Qur’an, Jesus is reported as saying that he came: “To attest the law which was before me. And to make lawful to you part of what was forbidden to you; I have come to you with a sign from your Lord, so fear God and obey me.” (Qur’an 3:50)

Source: [islamicity.com/JesusInIslam/Jesus.htm](http://islamicity.com/JesusInIslam/Jesus.htm)

## *Jesus existed according to historians*

The question of the existence of Jesus as a historical figure is distinct from the study of the historical Jesus which goes beyond the analysis of his historicity and attempts to reconstruct portraits of his life and teachings, based on methods such as biblical criticism of gospel texts and the history of first century Judea.

Virtually all modern scholars of antiquity agree that Jesus existed, and most biblical scholars and classical historians see the theories of his non-existence as effectively refuted. In antiquity, the existence of Jesus was never denied by those who opposed Christianity. Robert E. Van Voorst states that the idea of the non-historicity of the existence of Jesus has always been controversial, and has consistently failed to convince virtually all scholars of many disciplines. There is, however, widespread disagreement among scholars on the details of the life of Jesus mentioned in the gospel narratives, and the agreement on his existence does not include agreement on his divinity.

Although a very small number of modern scholars argue that Jesus never existed, that view is a distinct minority and virtually all scholars consider theories that Jesus' existence was a Christian invention as implausible.

Christopher Tuckett states that the existence of Jesus and his crucifixion by Pontius Pilate seem to be part of the bedrock of historical tradition, based on the availability of non-Christian evidence. Graham Stanton states that "Today nearly all historians, whether Christians or not, accept that Jesus existed".

A number of ancient non-Christian documents, such as Jewish and Greco-Roman sources, have been used in historical analyses of the existence of Jesus. These include the works of 1st century Roman historians Josephus and Tacitus.

Josephus scholar Louis H. Feldman has stated that "few have doubted the genuineness" of Josephus' reference to Jesus in Antiquities 20, 9, 1 and it is only disputed by a small number of scholars. Bart D. Ehrman states that the existence of Jesus and his crucifixion by the Romans is attested to by a wide range of sources, including Josephus and Tacitus.

The Mishnah (c. 200) may refer to Jesus and reflect the early Jewish traditions of portraying Jesus as a sorcerer or magician. Other possible references to Jesus and his execution may exist in the Talmud, but they also aim to discredit his actions, not deny his existence.

Scholars generally agree that Jesus was a Galilean Jew who was born between 7 and 2 BC and died 30–36 AD. However, in a review of the state of modern scholarship, Amy-Jill Levine stated: "Beyond recognizing that 'Jesus was Jewish' rarely does scholarship address what being 'Jewish' means."

Most scholars hold that Jesus lived in Galilee and Judea. The Talmud refers to "Jesus the Nazarene" several times and scholars such as Andreas Kostenberger and Robert Van Voorst hold that some of these references are to Jesus. Nazareth is not mentioned in the Hebrew Bible and the Christian gospels portray it as an insignificant village, John 1:46 asking "Can any good thing come out of Nazareth?" Craig S. Keener states that it is rarely disputed that Jesus was from Nazareth, an obscure small village not worthy of invention. Gerd Theissen concurs with that conclusion.

The languages spoken in Galilee and Judea during the first century include the Semitic Aramaic and Hebrew languages as well as Greek, with Aramaic being the predominant language. Most scholars agree that during the early part of the first century, Aramaic was the mother tongue of virtually all women in Galilee and Judea. Most scholars support the theory that Jesus spoke Aramaic and that he may have also spoken Hebrew and Greek.

Most scholars reject that there is any evidence that an adult Jesus traveled or studied outside Galilee and Judea. Robert Van Voorst states that modern scholarship has "almost unanimously agreed" that claims of the travels of Jesus to Tibet, Kashmir or India contain "nothing of value".<sup>1</sup>

A page from a 1466 copy of *Antiquities of the Jews*

The writings of the 1st century Romano-Jewish historian Flavius Josephus include references to Jesus and the origins of Christianity. Josephus' *Antiquities of the Jews*, written around 93–94 AD, includes two references to Jesus in Books 18 and 20.

Of the two passages the James passage in Book 20 is used by scholars to support the existence of Jesus, the Testimonium Flavianum in Book 18 his crucifixion. Josephus' James passage not only attests to the existence of Jesus as a historical person but that some of his contemporaries considered him the Messiah.

The passage deals with the death of "James the brother of Jesus" in Jerusalem, and given that works of Josephus refer to at least twenty different people with the name Jesus, Josephus clarifies that this Jesus was the one "who was called Christ". Louis Feldman states that this passage, above others, indicates that Josephus did say something about Jesus. Modern scholarship has almost universally acknowledged the authenticity of the reference in Book 20, Chapter 9, 1 of the *Antiquities* to "the brother of Jesus, who was called Christ, whose name was James" and considers it as having the highest level of authenticity among the references of Josephus to Christianity.

The *Testimonium Flavianum* (meaning the testimony of Flavius [Josephus]) is the name given to the passage found in Book 18, Chapter 3, 3 of the *Antiquities* in which Josephus describes the condemnation and crucifixion of Jesus at the hands of the Roman authorities. Scholars have differing opinions on the total or partial authenticity of the reference in Book 18, Chapter 3, 3 of the *Antiquities* to the execution of Jesus by Pontius Pilate, a passage usually called the *Testimonium Flavianum*. The general scholarly view is that while the *Testimonium Flavianum* is most likely not authentic in its entirety, it is broadly agreed upon that it originally consisted of an authentic nucleus with a reference to the execution of Jesus by Pilate which was then subject to Christian interpolation. Although the exact nature and extent of the Christian redaction remains unclear there is broad consensus as to what the original text of the *Testimonium* by Josephus would have looked like.

The references found in *Antiquities* have no parallel texts in the other work by Josephus such as the *Jewish War*, written 20 years earlier, but some scholars have provided explanations for their absence, e.g. that the *Antiquities* covers a longer time period and that during the 20 year gap between the writing of the *Jewish Wars* (c. 70 AD) and *Antiquities* (after 90 AD) Christians had become more important in Rome and were hence given attention in the *Antiquities*.

A number of variations exist between the statements by Josephus regarding the deaths of James and the New Testament accounts. Scholars generally view these variations as indications that the Josephus passages are not interpolations, for a Christian interpolator would have made them correspond to the Christian traditions, not differ from them.

Muhammad existed according to evidences:

The main source on Muhammad's life are Muslim sources written in Arabic, which include the Qur'an and accounts of Muhammad's life written down by later Muslims, based on oral traditions. These sources are known as *sīra* and *hadith*.

There are also non-Muslim sources written in Greek, Syriac, Armenian, and Hebrew by the Jewish and Christian communities. These non-Muslim written sources go back to about 636 AD and many of the interesting ones date to within some decades later. One, attributed to a 7th-century Armenian scholar Sebeos, states that Muhammad was a merchant and that his preaching revolved around the figure of Abraham. There are also confirmations of Muhammad's migration from Mecca to Medina in them. However, they also contain some essential differences with regard to Muslim sources and in particular about chronology and about Muhammad's attitude towards the Jews and Palestine.

It is notoriously difficult to know anything for sure about the founder of a world religion. Just as one shrine after the other obliterates the contours of the localities in which he was active, so one doctrine after another reshapes him as a figure for veneration and imitation for a vast number of people in times and places that he never knew.

In the case of Mohammed, Muslim literary sources for his life only begin around 750–800 CE (common era), some four to five generations after his death, and few Islamicists (specialists in the history and study of Islam) these days assume them to be straightforward historical accounts. For all that, we probably know more about Mohammed than we do about Jesus (let alone Moses or the Buddha), and we certainly have the potential to know a great deal more.

There is no doubt that Mohammed existed, occasional attempts to deny it notwithstanding. His neighbours in Byzantine Syria got to hear of him within two years of his death at the latest; a Greek text written during the Arab invasion of Syria between 632 and 634 mentions that "a false prophet has appeared among the Saracens" and dismisses him as an impostor on the ground that prophets do not come "with sword and chariot". It thus conveys the impression that he was actually leading the invasions.

Mohammed's death is normally placed in 632, but the possibility that it should be placed two or three years later cannot be completely excluded. The Muslim calendar was instituted after Mohammed's death, with a

starting-point of his emigration (*hijra*) to Medina (then Yathrib) ten years earlier. Some Muslims, however, seem to have correlated this point of origin with the year which came to span 624-5 in the Gregorian calendar rather than the canonical year of 622.

If such a revised date is accurate, the evidence of the Greek text would mean that Mohammed is the founder of a world religion who is attested in a contemporary source. But in any case, this source gives us pretty irrefutable evidence that he was an historical figure. Moreover, an Armenian document probably written shortly after 661 identifies him by name and gives a recognizable account of his monotheist preaching.

#### Muhammad & science:

"If you hear of an outbreak of plague in a land, do not enter it; but if the plague breaks out in a place while you are in it, do not leave that place." The Prophet (peace be upon him) said: "If you hear of an outbreak of plague in a land, do not enter it; but if the plague breaks out in a place while you are in it, do not leave that place."

(Reported by al-Bukhari and Muslim.)

Also, he (peace be upon him) said: "He who runs away from the place of plague is like the one running away from fighting in the cause of Allah; and he who is patient and stays where he is, he will be rewarded with the reward of a martyr." (Reported by Ahmad.)

#### The Scientific Fact:

Modern science now understands the ways in which microorganisms multiply and the diseases they cause. Scientists affirm that healthy people who have no symptoms in the place of plague are already carrying the microbe and so they represent a real threat because they may transfer the plague to another place if they move to it.

Thus, this system of quarantine, in which all the people of the city that suffers from plague are prevented from leaving, and visitors are also prevented from entering, has now been established worldwide. In the 15th century, plague hit Europe causing the death of a quarter of its citizens. At that time, plagues and contagious diseases were much less in the Muslim world.

#### Facets of Scientific Inimitability:

At the time of the Prophet (peace be upon him) as well as before and after his time until Pasteur managed to discover the existence of microbes, people used to think that diseases were caused by devils, demons, and stars. That is they were not related to cleanliness or certain behaviors; thus, they resorted to sorcery and magic as a remedy.

In such an environment, the Prophet (peace be upon him) established the system of quarantine which is considered the basis of modern preventative medicine after the discovery of the microbes that cause diseases and plagues. The Prophet (peace be upon him) ordered his Companions: "If you hear of an outbreak of plague in a land, do not enter it; but if the plague breaks out in a place while you are in it, do not leave that place." In order to make sure that his order would be carried out properly, he (peace be upon him) established a wall around the area of the plague and promised those who are patient and stay in the area of the plague with the reward of the martyrs, and those who run away from it were promised doom and perdition.

Thus, he (peace be upon him) said: "He who runs away from the place of the plague is like the one running away from fighting in the cause of Allah and he who forbears it and stays where he is, he will be rewarded with the reward of a martyr."

If a healthy person was asked two hundred years ago to stay with the sick people in a plague area, he would have considered this some kind of nonsense and in response to his desire to live he would have run away to another place. Only Muslims did not run away and leave at the time of plague in compliance with the order of the Prophet (peace be upon him). Non-Muslims mocked them for this act until it was later discovered that those who appear to be healthy with no symptoms, are the germ carriers who might transfer the plague to another place if they moved to it. They would move freely and mingle with healthy people, so they might cause them to catch the disease.

Who told the Prophet (peace be upon him) this fact? Could a human being know something like this fourteen centuries ago, or is it revelation from the All-Knowing, the Almighty Allah. Allah, the Almighty, says:

[And say, O Muhammad, to these polytheists and pagans, 'All the praises and thanks be to Allah. He will show you His signs and you shall recognize them. And your Lord is not unaware of what you do.'](An-Naml: 93)

Sunnah & Science

By: admin

Abu Mas'ud (A.S.) narrated that Allah's Messenger said:

*"The sun and the moon do not eclipse because of someone's death but they are two signs amongst the signs of Allah. Whenever you see these eclipses invoke Allah, pray, exclaim, (Allah is Most Great) and give charity."*

'A'ishah (A.S.) narrated that, "There was a solar eclipse during the life-time of Allah's Messenger (PBUH). The Prophet (PBUH) led the people in prayer, and stood up and performed a lengthy recital during the prayer. Then bowed for a long while (made a long *Ruku*). He stood up again and performed another long recital of the Qur'an, but this time the period of standing (*Qiyam*) was shorter than the first one. He bowed again for a long time but shorter than the first one (*Ruku*), then he prostrated and prolonged the prostration. He did the same in the second *Rak'ah* as he did in the first and then finished the prayer. By then the sun (eclipse) had cleared. He delivered the *Khutbah* (sermon) and after praising and glorifying Allah, he said:

*"The sun and the moon are two signs from amongst Allah's signs and they do not eclipse because of the death or life of anyone. Therefore, whenever you see an eclipse, remember Allah and say Takbir (exclaim, Allah is Most Great), pray and give Sadaqah (charity)."*

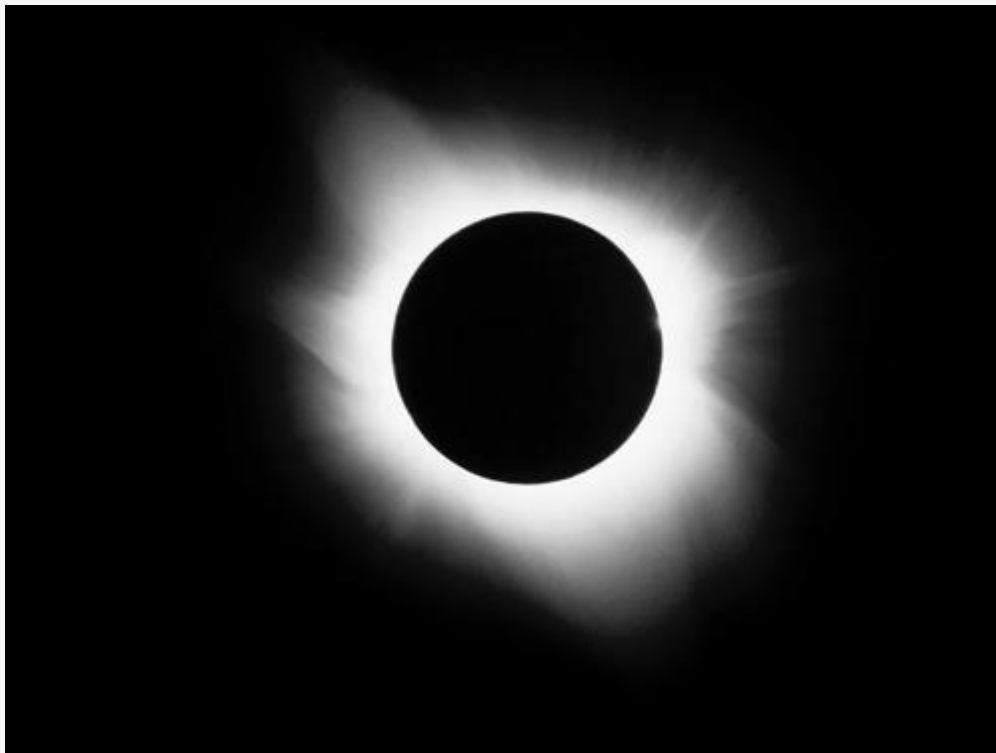
Explanation of the Hadith

A solar eclipse occurs when the moon passes between the sun and the earth, which causes a total or partial solar eclipse. A total eclipse takes place in a limited zone on that part of the earth directly facing the sun, at which the sunlight dims to resemble bright moonlight within a few minutes. To the north and south of this band or zone, a partial eclipse takes place. The part of the sun, which eclipses keep getting smaller as we get away from the total eclipse band towards the direction of the two poles.

The Prophet (PBUH) says in this Hadith:

*"The sun and the moon do not eclipse because of the death or life (i.e. the birth) of someone but they are two signs amongst the signs of Allah."*

This means that they are two cosmic phenomena, which frequently occur, regardless of the death or life (i.e. birth) of anyone, contrary to what some people used to claim in the Arab Peninsula and other parts of the world. They used to relate the occurrence of these cosmic phenomena to the birth or death of a great person. The Prophet (PBUH) in this Hadith totally denies all of these superstitions, and assures that they are cosmic phenomena, which recur frequently.



Islam deals with ECLIPSE as cosmic phenomena

Science has proven that the moon is followed by a conical shadow, called the umbra, as it blocks the sunrays. In its movement around the earth, the moon's conical shadow passes along with it. At the time of conjunction, which occurs once

every lunar month, the moon falls exactly in the middle between the sun and the earth, thus blocking its light totally or partially. Nevertheless, in most of the lunar months, the moon's shadow does not reach the earth, while passing between it and the sun and in such case the sunlight is not blocked. Hence, no eclipse takes place. That is why total solar eclipses are very rare. Sometimes during a solar eclipse the moon falls in the middle between the earth and the sun, and the visible sun narrows to a thin crescent, and the corona appears. At the moment before totality, brilliant points of light, called Bailey's beads, flash out.

When the total eclipse takes place, the sky becomes completely dark and the stars become visible in the middle of the day. So in a few minutes, broad daylight turns into what looks like the night, which causes a feeling of panic and depression, not only for human beings, but for all creatures. Birds shelter in their nests, and animals hide in their dens, or get into a state of cautious stillness.

As for the lunar eclipse, it takes place when the earth, being between the sun and the moon, casts a long, conical shadow, called the umbra, with an area of partial shadow called the penumbra around it. This is a phenomenon, which can be observed from all parts of the earth. In most months, the moon passes above or under the umbra, the conical shadow of the earth, and does not enter it. Thus, the lunar eclipse does not take place. During the solar eclipse, the solar energy that reaches the earth decreases and hence the temperature of the earth drops. However, during the lunar eclipse, the solar energy, which reaches the earth increases, causing the temperature of the earth to relatively increase for a few minutes. Since these phenomena are very accurately calculated, the earth is exposed to extreme dangers that only Allah knows how grave they are. That is why the Prophet (PBUH) asked Muslims to invoke Allah, the Almighty, praise Him, exclaim, "Allah is Most Great", and glorify Him. Moreover, the Prophet asked Muslims to pray and pay charity, praying that Allah will protect the earth and its inhabitants from these dangers.

This is the reason why the Prophet (PBUH) said in other narrations of the same Hadith: "*Rush to prayer*" and in another narration he said:

*"These signs sent by Allah do not occur because of the life or death of somebody, but Allah frightens His worshippers with them. So when you see anything thereof, rush to invoke Allah, pray to Him and ask for His forgiveness."*

One cannot help wondering how the Prophet (PBUH) could attain such accurate scientific facts, more than fourteen hundred years ago, at a time when people were up to their ears in superstitions and myths. It really is an explicit proof of the Prophet's Divine Message.

Sunnah & Science

By: Dr. Zaghoul El-Naggar

#### THE SUN: NEVER CEASE NOR DISAPPEAR

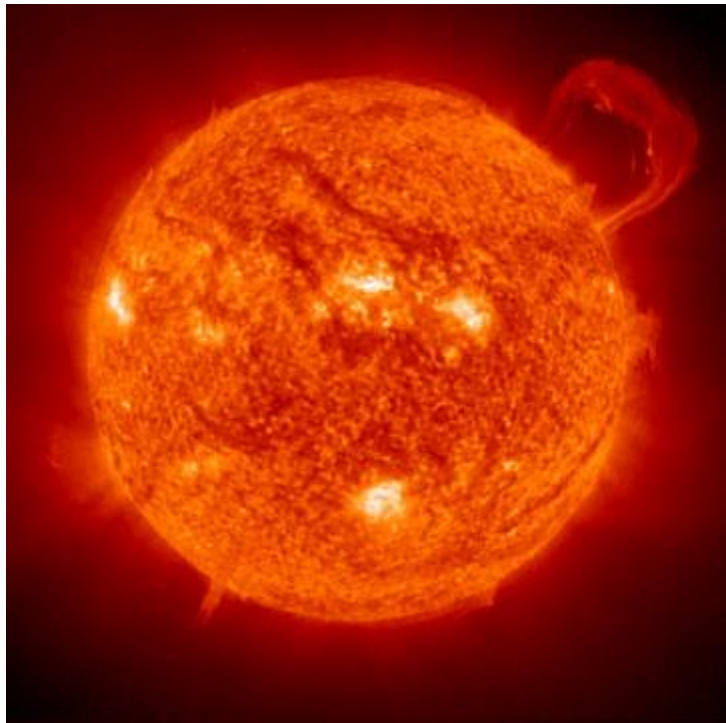
Ibn 'Abbas (R.A.) narrated that the Prophet (PBUH) was asked:

"Where does the sun set, and where does it rise from? The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) answered, "It is going in a (nonstop) regular motion; it does not cease or disappear. It sets in one place and rises in another, and sets in another place and rises elsewhere and so on. So, some people would say the sun has set and others would say it has just risen (at the same moment)."

Explanation of the Hadith

This hadith refers to the fact that there is a continuous alternate sunrise and sunset on earth. This could only take place if the earth is spherical or spheroid, and is, at the same time, continuously rotating round its axis facing the sun. This motion pattern leads to the continuous alternation of day and night on its surface, until life on earth comes to an end, i.e. until the Day of Resurrection.

One of the most prominent phenomena linked to this spherical shape of the earth, is that there are different places of sunrise and sunset for different zones of the globe. Each of the sun, the moon and other celestial bodies, sets somewhere in the



globe and rises in another. They are all rotating, regularly, in fixed orbits, which they never leave or depart from. Truly, Allah says:

(...They all float, each in an orbit.) (Surat Ya-Sin: 40).

The Messenger of Allah (PBUH) talked about all these cosmic facts in such accurate scientific style at a period of time when people thought that the earth was flat and stationary. This is definitely one of the signs, which testifies to the truthfulness of the message of Muhammad (PBUH). For sure, no one in the Arabian Peninsula at the time of revelation, and for centuries to follow realized the fact that the earth is spherical and that it rotates around its axis facing the sun. Needless to say that at that time, no one was able to perceive the real or the apparent motion of the moon, the sun and other celestial bodies, as Arabia was but a simple and primitive environment.

The Glorious Qur'an refers to the spherical shape of the earth and its axial rotating, and to its revolving in its orbit around the sun. The Qur'an refers to these issues in many verses but in a subtle implicit way which may not astound the Bedouins in the desert of the Arabian Peninsula at the time of revelation, but still keeps the scientific fact in context.



Sun does not cease or disappear

Among these verses are the following:

Allah the Almighty says:

(He has created the heavens and the earth with truth. He makes the night to go in the day and makes the day to go in the night. And He has subjected the sun and the moon. Each running (on a fixed course) for an appointed term. Verily, He is the All-Mighty, the oft-Forgiving.) (Surat Az-Zumar (The Groups):5)

1. The Glorious Qur'an also confirms in more than one verse that the earth is "spread out" without ending at an edge. This could only be possible if the earth is spherical or spheroid, as the spherical shape is the only shape, which could endlessly be spread out or extended. For example, Allah the Almighty says:

(And it is He Who spread out the earth, and placed therein firm mountains and rivers...) (Surat Ar-Ra'd (The Thunder): 3)

2. The same fact is also assured when the Qur'an refers to the East and the West in different forms. First in the singular, then in the dual form by indicating that there are "Two Easts and Two Wests", and in the plural form by referring to "Easts and Wests". This also emphasizes the fact that the earth is spherical and that it rotates round its axis while facing the sun. These verses also emphasize the fact that the Earth is tilted on its axis and that it does not orbit the sun in a perfect circle.

3. The fact that the earth is spherical in shape is also emphasized by the verses referring to the alternation of night and day. The Glorious Qur'an indicates how Allah makes the 'Night overlap (Kawwar) the Day and the Day overlap the Night' (Surat Az-Zumar: 5). Among the verses that indicate the spherical shape of the earth is the one referring to the passing away of the mountains in the same way the clouds do:



(And you will see the mountains and think them solid, but they shall pass away as the passing away of the clouds...) (Surat An-Naml (The Ants):88)

All of the above facts mentioned in the Qur'an have urged Muslims, at the time of the Abbasid Caliph al-Ma'mun, to measure the circumference of the earth very accurately. Their motive was the firm belief that the earth is spherical and that it rotates around its axis facing the sun. Moreover, the Muslim scholar and scientist "al-Bayyruni" divided the earth into lines of longitude and latitude, in his book:" Tahdid Nihayat al-Amakin li Tas-hih Masafat al-Masakin," which he wrote in 416 A.H (about 1040 A.C.).

The source of all this knowledge is the illuminating signs that are mentioned in the Qur'an and Sunnah of the Prophet (PBUH), and each of them testifies to the truthfulness and the Divine nature of the Message of the last of the Prophets and Messengers. This accurate scientific knowledge could not be obtained except for a Divine Revelation.

Sunnah & Science

By: Dr. Zaghloul El-Naggar

#### THE MOON CLEFT ASUNDER

Anas ibn Malik (A.S.) narrated that the people of Makkah asked the Prophet (PBUH) to show them a miracle , so he showed them the splitting of the moon , into two distinct parts , that they even saw the mountain of Hira' between them.

Explanation of the Hadith

This incident was narrated by a number of the companions of the Prophet (PBUH), among them were: 'Abdullah ibn 'Umar, 'Abdullah ibn Abbas and others. The Indian and Chinese calendars have recorded the incident of the splitting of the moon.



Artistic impression of moon splitting by Prophet Muhammad (SAAS)

A few years ago while I was giving a lecture at the Faculty of Medicine at Cardiff University, in Wales, a Muslim asked me a question about the verses at the beginning of Surat al-Qamar (the moon), about the splitting of the moon, and whether it is considered as one of the scientific signs which are mentioned in the Qur'an and whether there is any scientific evidence discovered to explain this incident.

My answer was that this incident is considered one of the most tangible miracles, which took place to support the Prophet (PBUH) when he was challenged by the polytheists and disbelievers of Quraish, showing them this miracle to prove that he is

a Messenger of Allah. Anyway, miracles take place as unusual incidents that break all regular laws of nature. Therefore, conventional science is unable to explain how miracles take place, and if they were not mentioned in the Qur'an and in the Sunnah of the Prophet (PBUH), we would not have been obliged to believe in them. Therefore, we believe that the incident of the splitting of the moon took place exactly as the words of Allah Glorified be Who says:

{ The Hour has drawn near , and the moon has been cleft asunder . And if they see a sign, they turn away, and say: (This is continuous magic). They belied (this Qur'an), and followed their own lusts. And every matter will be settled [according to the kind of deeds (for the doer of good deeds, his deeds will take him to Paradise, and similarly evil deeds will take their doers to Hell)]. And indeed there has come to them news (in this Qur'an) wherein there is (enough warning) to check (them from evil), Perfect wisdom (this Qur'an), but (the preaching of) warners benefit them not. } (Surat Al-Qamar (The Moon): 1-5)

When I finished my speech, a British man from the audience named Dawud Musa Pidcock, leader of the British Muslim Party, asked to add something to my answer. He said: "It is these verses, at the beginning of surat al-Qamar that made me embrace Islam in the late seventies." This occurred while he was doing extensive research in comparative religion, and one of the Muslims gave him a copy of translation of the meanings of the Qur'an. When he opened this copy for the first time, he came across Surat al-Qamar, and he read the verses at the beginning of the surah, and could not believe that the moon had split into two distinct parts and they were rejoined, so he closed the copy of the translation and kept it aside.

In 1978 Mr. Pidcock was destined by Allah's Will to watch a program about space journeys, in which the well-known British announcer James Burke, received three of the American space scientists. During the debate, the announcer kept criticizing the immoderate spending by NASA (millions of Dollars) on space projects, while there are millions of people on earth suffering from starvation, diseases and ignorance. The answer of the space experts came to assert that it was these journeys that made it feasible to develop important technology applied in medical diagnosis and treatment, industry, agriculture, and many other fields. During this debate, they referred to the first time that a human being landed on the surface of the moon, and how this trip cost more than \$100 million dollars. The scientists went on to say that this journey proved a scientific fact, that if they had spent several times as much as they did to convince people with it, no body would have believed them. This fact was that the moon had been split a long time ago and rejoined, and there is a lot of concrete evidence on the surface of the moon to prove this.



This oblique view of the Moon's surface was photographed by the Apollo 10 astronauts in May of 1969. Center point coordinates are located at 13 degrees, 3 minutes east longitude and 7 degrees, 1 minute north latitude. One of the Apollo 10 astronauts attached a 250mm lens and aimed a handheld 70mm camera at the surface from lunar orbit for a series of pictures in this area.

Mr. Pidcock went on to say : " When I heard this , I jumped off my chair , and said this is a miracle which took place fourteen hundred years ago to support

Muhammad , and the Qur'an narrates it in such a detailed way . After this long period and during the age of science and technology, Allah employs people (non-Muslims) who spent all this money for nothing but to prove that this miracle had actually happened. Then, I said to myself, this must be the true religion, and I went back to the translation of the meanings of the Qur'an, reading it eagerly. It was these verses at the opening of surat al-Qamar that lie behind my reversion to Islam."



)The Hour has drawn near , and the moon has been cleft asunder ( )  
)surat Al-Qamar (The Moon): 1-2(

This happens at a time when some Muslims claim that the splitting of the moon has not yet taken place, and that it is one of the signs of the Hereafter as the opening of the surah says: { The Hour has drawn near. } They are oblivious to the fact that the Prophet (PBUH) said in a hadith narrated by Imam Muslim , on the authority of Sahl ibn Sa'd that Sahl said : "I heard the Messenger of Allah (PBUH) say :

"I and the Last Hour are (close to each other) like this (and he pointed by joining his forefinger, (one) next to the thumb and the middle finger (together)."

Those who deny the incident of the splitting of the moon, use incorrect evidence to support their opinion as they use the verse in surat al-Isra:

{And nothing stops Us from sending the evidences (proofs , signs) but that the people of old denied them. }

(Surat Al-Isrâ' (The Journey by Night): 59)

This verse is not used in the right context since many perceptible signs and miracles took place during the noble life of the Prophet (PBUH).

Peace and blessings of Allah be upon the seal of Prophets (PBUH) , for whom Allah made the moon split into two parts , twice , as an honor for him and to raise his rank and support his message (among his people) , and left for us a concrete evidence to prove that this splitting did actually take place .

## Grave of Muhammad

Muhammad is buried in the Al-Masjid al-Nabawi ("Mosque of the Prophet") in the city of Medina in Saudi Arabia. It should be noted that while non-Muslims regard Muhammad as the founder of Islam, Muslims see him as the final prophet of a pre-existing religion.<sup>[1]</sup>

Muhammad's grave lies within the confines of what used to be his wife Aisha's and his house. During his lifetime it adjoined the mosque, which was expanded during the reign of Caliph al-Walid I to include his tomb.<sup>[2]</sup> Muhammad is buried next to the first two *caliphs*, Abu Bakr and Umar. Umar was gifted a spot next to Muhammad by his wife Aisha, which she had intended for herself.

Muhammad's grave itself cannot be seen as the area is cordoned off by a gold mesh and black curtains. As per Islamic tradition, the grave itself is not embellished or decorated and is two cubits high. The grave is marked by an austere green dome above it, built by the Ottoman Turks, and was earlier white in colour. This dome has become universally emblematic of both Muhammad himself, as well as the city of Medina.

Muhammad's grave is an important reason for the particularly high sanctity of the mosque.

### MUHAMMAD'S CHARACTER AND HIGH MORALITY PROVE HIS PROPHETHOOD

Muhammad was the humblest at the zenith of his achievements

If a man's world-admired accomplishments or the wealth and fame he has gained do not change him, if he can remain as humble as he was at the beginning of his career, this shows that person's strength of character, morality and virtue. Despite his unparalleled achievements, which force even his enemies to place him at the top of the greatest men of human history, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, was poorer and more humble when he entered Makka victoriously than he was at the beginning of his mission.

Those who saw the Messenger would say: 'One with such a face cannot lie.'

One's face reveals one's inner world and character. Those who saw the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, could not help but admire his appearance and, if they were unprejudiced, acknowledge his truthfulness. For example, 'Adbullah ibn Salam, the most renowned Jewish scholar of the time, believed in him at his first sight of him, saying: 'One with such a face cannot lie.'

If a fire-fly claimed that it is the sun, its lie could last only until the sun rises. Turkish people say that a liar's candle only burns till bedtime, meaning that a lie has only a very short life. So, a deceitful one pretending Prophethood will soon be discovered and no one will accept him as a true Prophet.

Muhammad's utmost conviction of his cause, together with his sincerity and solemnity prove his Prophethood. Even an insignificant man of small standing, in a small group in a disputed matter of little importance, cannot tell a small but shameful lie openly and comfortably without displaying such anxiety and uneasiness as will make his enemies aware of his deception. Since the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, challenged everybody to come until the Last Day and uttered many important speeches in a large community concerning a great cause, with great ease and freedom, without hesitation or anxiety, with pure sincerity and great solemnity, and in an intense and elevated manner that provoked his enemies, it means that he was certainly a Prophet speaking whatever God revealed to him.

Despite being unlettered, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, spoke on every issue and has not been contradicted ever since.

It is impossible for an unlettered one to speak on a matter requiring expert knowledge, especially before those with specialized knowledge of that matter. However, despite being unlettered, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, spoke on every issue from theology and metaphysics to medicine, history, physics and biology and has not been contradicted ever since. Besides, when he was raised up as a Prophet, the arts of literature, eloquence and oratory were at their peak and the Qur'an he received from God challenged all of its opponents to bring the like of a single chapter of it but no one has ever been able to do that. This, again, clearly shows that Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, is a Prophet of God.

Muhammad had to confront all kinds of hardships and persecutions after Prophethood and spent for his cause whatever he had.

For the sake of a deception no one risks his life, wealth and reputation and bears great hardships and persecutions unless he has great aspirations to more wealth and great worldly positions. Before claiming Prophethood, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, was well off and had a respected place among his community. However, he had to confront all kinds of hardships and persecutions after Prophethood and spent for his cause whatever he had. His enemies slandered him, mocked him, beat him, expelled him from his homeland and waged war on him. He bore all such cruel treatments and hostilities without complaint and asked God Almighty for the forgiveness of even his enemies. The only

cause he pursued was to see everybody believing in and worshipping the One God exclusively and thereby prosperous in both worlds and saved from the torments of Hell.

Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, practiced with utmost sincerity and honesty what he communicated to others.

History has witnessed many leading persons who, since they themselves did not practice what they preached or propagated, did not have a large devoted following. Their ideas did not have an enduring effect on people and the systems they established did not last long. However, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, practiced with utmost sincerity and honesty what he communicated to others and was always the first and foremost in obedience to the religion he brought, in worship to the Creator and in avoidance of the religious prohibitions. This shows his full conviction of his cause and that he is a Messenger of God, Who sent him to humanity to guide them to the True Path.

For what reason other than conveying God's Message to people must he have endured all kinds of hardships and persecutions, such as sleeping on earth, suffering hunger for several consecutive days, spending a considerable part of his life on battlefields and military campaigns, being expelled from his homeland, becoming subject to mockeries and insults, etc? Man acquires an established character until he is thirty and especially after thirty a man's character does not change. Particularly, it is very difficult for one to change his temper and disposition after he is forty. If-God forbid such a thought!- there had been any imperfection and blemish in the character of Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, it would certainly have appeared before his Prophethood. Therefore, no one with a bit of intelligence and fairness, unless he is prejudiced, can accept that one who was never heard tell a lie and witnessed deceive until one was forty, would appear as the worst, meanest trickster of human history after forty.

A lying, deceitful one cannot have a large, dedicated following who are ready to sacrifice themselves for him. Despite being among the five greatest Prophets, Moses and Jesus did not have followers as devoted as Muhammad's Companions.

A lying, deceitful one cannot have a large, dedicated following who are ready to sacrifice themselves for him. Despite being among the five greatest Prophets, Moses and Jesus did not have followers as devoted as Muhammad's Companions. The followers of Moses, upon him be peace, betrayed him when he left them for forty days to receive the Torah on Mount Sinai, and began to worship a golden calf which Samiri made for them. Even after so many years of intellectual and spiritual training in the desert, except for two God-fearing men, they did not obey his order to fight against the Amalekites, the people of Goliath. As for Jesus, upon him be peace, one of his most devoted twelve followers betrayed him and attempted to submit him to his enemies. But the followers of Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, known as the Companions, were so devoted to him that they sacrificed for him their lives and properties and their families and tribes. Although brought up among a primitive people and in a climate of ignorance, devoid of any positive notions of social life and administration, without a Scripture and immersed in the darkness of the uncivilized era after the Prophets, in a very short period, they became in the footsteps of their exalted leader, the Prophet Muhammad, the masters, guides and just rulers of the most civilized and socially and politically advanced peoples and states, and ruled the world from east to west in a world-admired fashion.

Also, innumerable exacting and profound scholars and world-famous scientists and pure, spiritual masters were brought up among the succeeding generations following the Companions. The civilization they established was the most magnificent one history has ever known. Is it conceivable, then, that all those most shining stars of human history followed a lying, deceitful one? God forbid such a thought!

The Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, was the most famous of humanity for high moral conduct and virtue.

The Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, was the most famous of humanity for high moral conduct and virtue. He appeared in the heart of a desert which was almost the most uncivilized part of the then inhabited world and where people were immersed in the worst kinds of immorality. Then, who do you think brought him up as the most virtuous one with the highest morality and best conduct? He had lost his father while he was yet in the womb of his mother. When his mother died, he was only six years old. It was impossible for his grandfather and uncle to bring him up as the most virtuous of all times, as they themselves did not have all of the good moral qualities Muhammad had and in the same degree as he had. His teacher was God, as he himself said: My Lord educated me and taught me good manners, and how well he educated me and how beautifully He taught me good manners!

No one in human history has ever been able to combine in himself all of the virtues and good qualities as perfectly as the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings.

Human history has seen many virtuous persons. However, no one has ever been able to combine in himself all of the virtues and good qualities as perfectly as the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings. There have been many generous people but they have not been able to show enough courage when and where necessary. Likewise, there have been many courageous people, who have not been able to be lenient and generous at the same degree. But the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, combined in his person all the virtues and laudable qualities at the highest level.

Virtue and good morality also require balance. For example, if generosity exceeds its limits, it changes into extravagance. Similarly, if thrift cannot be kept within moderate limits, it changes into miserliness. Courage is usually confused with rashness and dialectics or demagogy is sometimes taken for being intelligent. In addition, virtue also requires knowing how to act in certain conditions. For instance, the self-respect which a weak man should wear before a powerful one becomes, if the powerful one assumes it, self-conceit. The humility which a powerful man should wear before a weak one becomes, if assumed by a weak man, self-abasement. Forbearance and sacrifice (of one's rights) on one's own account is good and a virtue; but when done on behalf of others, it is bad and a treason. An individual may bear patiently with whatever is done to him personally; but it is impermissible for him to, on behalf of the nation, bear patiently what is being done to the nation. Whereas pride and indignation on behalf of the nation are commendable, on one's own behalf they are not.

The Prophet Muhammad was perfectly balanced in his virtues and good moral qualities.

The Prophet Muhammad was perfectly balanced in his virtues and good moral qualities. He was perfectly courageous where to show courage was necessary, while he was perfectly mild, forgiving and humble among people. He was perfectly dignified but also very gracious. There was no one more generous than him but he was also thrifty and condemned extravagance. In short, all virtues and good qualities existed in him in a well-balanced combination.

Prophet Muhammad had all of the essential attributes pertaining to Prophets

According to theologians, there are six essentials of Prophethood common to all of the Prophets. They are truthfulness, trustworthiness, communication of God's commands, intelligence, infallibility and being free from all kinds of bodily and mental defects. History is a witness that the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, had all of these six essential attributes in a most perfect fashion.

Muhammad's achievements are unparalleled in history

A man encounters in his life many situations where he must make decisions with no delay and hesitation. Many decisions made in such situations may cause him great difficulties. The Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, made so great achievements in so short a time as 23 years that they are unparalleled in human history. He never faltered and all of his decisions proved to be true.

More than that, whatever he did and whatever he said did not concern only his own time but he addressed all times and places and all peoples and levels throughout the world to come until the Last Day. As none of his sayings have not been contradicted so far, no one has ever been able to criticize him for any of his actions, sayings and decisions. Is it possible for one who is not a Prophet taught by God, the All-Knowing, to have such intelligence, foresight, sagacity, insight, sound reasoning and prudence?

#### HIS ACHIEVEMENTS PROVE MUHAMMAD'S PROPHEHOOD

Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, was peerless in educating people

A man, whoever he is and whatever he does, may regard his own occupation as more important, more necessary, more beneficial to social life and more difficult than others. However, although every occupation has some difficulty of its own and is of some degree of use for social life, educating people must be much more difficult than others and more necessary for a healthy social life.

To bring up distinguished persons require distinguished educators. Only an educator who has established his aim in educating people and practices what he will teach and advise to his students, only one who knows the character, potentialities, desires, and ambitions of his students with the shortcomings and strong and weak spots and the level of learning and understanding of each, can be successful in educating people. Of course, this is not all that a good, successful educator must have. Furthermore, he must know how to treat his students in all circumstances, how to approach their problems and how to purify them of bad qualities and morals and, in place of them, inculcate laudable and good ones.

A man may have strong belief in what he must believe but he may not be practicing his belief in his daily life. He may have some good moral qualities but they might have not been an ingrained part of his character. Moreover, he may have certain weak spots such as taking bribery and insensitivity to making use of common property or hoarding up wealth. Therefore, if an educator can change his students completely and, purifying them of all bad habits and morals and all bad qualities which have long been ingrained in them and, in their place, establishing laudable ones, can form a community which will be a good example for future generations in all fields of life and good moral qualities, if an educator can transform the 'rock, copper, iron and coal' in his hand into 'silver, gold, brilliant and diamond', without doubt, you will conclude that that educator is an extraordinary one. What the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, achieved in educating people within so short a time as 23 years is much more than what that educator does.

Prophet Muhammad was matchless in knowing people each with his character

It is another important dimension of a good education is not to resort to force. Penal sanctions, coercion and military and police forces can have some effect on directing people but only to a slight degree and for a short time only. Therefore, convincing people of the truth of what we teach to them and making it approved by them wholeheartedly is of vital importance in a good education.

No one in world history has so far been able to know man with all the dimensions of his character as well as the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, and there has never appeared a second one next to him who has made pitiless, crude, war-mongering, ignorant and unyielding individuals into a community which sets a perfect example for all the future generations in all aspects of life and good moral qualities.

Prophet Muhammad guided people in every aspect of life

No one can guide people in every field of life. It is very difficult for one, however able and clever, to be both an able statesman and commander and a brilliant scientist and successful educator at the same time. However, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, was the most perfect spiritual and intellectual master, the most able statesman and commander, the most efficient educator, and the greatest scholar history has ever seen.

Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, is the foremost in practicing all the forms of worship prescribed by his religion and the most God-fearing of people.

The Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, is the foremost in practicing all the forms of worship prescribed by his religion and the most God-fearing of people. He observed the duties of worship with the utmost care and attention down to their minutest details even in most perilous circumstances of his life which passed in constant struggle and activity. He never imitated anyone in his worship and combined in a perfect fashion the beginning and the end of spiritual evolution.

He is also unparalleled in prayer and gnosis, for in his supplications and prayers he describes his Lord with such a degree of gnosis that all the gnostics and saints since his time have never been able, although those coming after have made use of the heritage of the preceding ones, to attain a similar degree of gnosis and description of God.

Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, was absolutely convinced of the truth of his message. He had in his faith so extraordinary a strength, so wonderful a certainty, so miraculous an evolution, and such elevated and world-enlightening conviction that none of the prevailing ideas and beliefs of that time, and none of the philosophies of the sages and teachings of the spiritual leaders, although they were all opposed and even hostile to him, was ever able to cause in him any doubt, hesitation or anxiety concerning his certainty, conviction, and assurance. Moreover, all saintly men of all times, his Companions primarily included, have all benefited from his faith which they admit to be of the highest degree. This fact proves that his faith too is matchless.

All the sacred attributes, miracles and functions that indicate the truthfulness and Messengership of the Prophets, peace be upon them all, were all to be found in Muhammad in the utmost degree.

Just as the consensus of the Prophets is a very strong proof of the existence and Oneness of God, so, too, it is a firm testimony to the truthfulness and Messengership of Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings. For history confirms that all the sacred attributes, miracles and functions that indicate the truthfulness and Messengership of the Prophets, peace be upon them all, were all to be found in Muhammad in the utmost degree. The Prophets verbally predicted his coming, that is, they gave the good tidings of him in the Torah, the Gospels, the Psalms, and other Scriptures which are called 'Pages' in the Qur'an; likewise through their missions and miracles they affirmed and 'sealed' the mission of Muhammad, who is the foremost and most perfect in Prophethood.

Thousands of saints unanimously bear witness to the truthfulness and Messengership of Muhammad

Also, having attained the truth and perfection, and the rank of working wonders, and gained insight into the reality of things, and spiritual discovery through following the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, in all his deeds and principles, thousands of saints unanimously bear witness not only to the Oneness of God but also to the truthfulness and Messengership of that being, upon him be peace and blessings. It is as bright a proof as the sun for the truthfulness of Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, that, those saints believe in and affirm all of the truths that being proclaimed through the light of faith to the degree of either certainty coming from knowledge or certainty by sight, or of certainty by experience.

Thousands of exacting scholars of purity, meticulous scholars of truthfulness and believing sages have reached the highest station of learning through the teaching contained in the sacred truths brought by the Prophet Muhammad

Again, thousands of exacting scholars of purity, meticulous scholars of truthfulness and believing sages, who have reached the highest station of learning through the teaching contained in the sacred truths brought by the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, despite his being unlettered, the sublime sciences to which he gave birth, and the Divine knowledge he discovered, not only prove unanimously with their strongest proofs and affirm the Oneness of God, the foundation of his mission, but also bear unanimous witness to the truthfulness of that greatest teacher and supreme master, and to the veracity of his words.

First and foremost of all, the family and the Companions of the Prophet, upon him be peace and blessings, who with their insight, wisdom and spiritual accomplishments, are the most renowned, the most respected, the most



celebrated, the most pious, the most keen-sighted of mankind after the Prophets, after having examined and scrutinized all the thoughts and states of that being, whether hidden or open, with the utmost attention and exactitude, unanimously concluded that he was the most truthful, the most elevated, and the most honest being in the world.

In his preaching of the message and calling people to the truth, Muhammad displayed extraordinary steadfastness, firmness and courage

In his preaching of the message and in his calling people to the truth, he displayed such steadfastness, firmness and courage that, in spite of the antagonism of big powers and great religions, and of his own people and tribe, even of his uncle, he never showed even the slightest trace of hesitation, anxiety or fear, and he successfully challenged the world, and, as a result, made Islam superior to all other religions and systems. This proves that there is not and cannot be anyone like him also in his preaching of and calling to the message of Truth.

Muhammad solved social, political and economic problems so easily and established such perfect rules in all these fields that they left permanent and unerasable imprints on all centuries and in the corners of the world.

Let us go to the Arabian peninsula in the Time of Happiness. That unlettered man who had not attended any military academy, nor a school for civil servants or a school of law, nor a school of sciences, presented such a religion and law that they contain all the principles to secure happiness in both worlds. His speech is so effective and penetrating that human beings in all times listen to him and his voice is echoed in every century. He solves all social, political and economic problems so easily and establishes such perfect rules in all these fields that they leave permanent and unerasable imprints on all centuries and in the corners of the world. He spends a considerable part of his life on battlefields and proves to be the most able commander of all times. He also shows himself as the best of husbands, the most eminent, yet most compassionate of fathers and the most amiable and loyal of friends. He does all this in so short a time as 23 years.

Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, is also beyond all compare in knowing his people and educating them to mould their characters in the crucible of his message

A leader must know his people very well in order to educate them and urge them to the realization of a cause.

Alexis Carrel, a great French scientist and philosopher of this century, still describes man as unknown. Man is the most complex and intricate of creatures. However, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, is also beyond all compare in knowing his people and educating them to mould their characters in the crucible of his message. He knew everyone to whom he would convey his message with all the details of his character, with his abilities, shortcomings, feelings, disposition and level of understanding. Besides, he also knew very well how to act in certain conditions and was able to give the best decision in all crises. To every position he appointed the one most qualified for and deserving of it and did not have to change the appointment later. He succeeded in bringing the most refined, well-mannered and civilized society out of an extremely backward, uncivilized and rough people.

Muhammad equipped and adorned the desperate, wild and unyielding peoples of the seventh-century Arabian peninsula with all the praiseworthy virtues, and made them teachers of all the world and masters, especially, to the civilized nations

Consider how, eradicating their evil and savage customs and immoral qualities to which they were so fanatically attached, he equipped and adorned the desperate, wild and unyielding peoples of the seventh-century Arabian peninsula with all the praiseworthy virtues, and made them teachers of all the world and masters, especially, to the civilized nations. His was not an outward domination; rather, he conquered their minds, spirits, hearts, and souls. He became the beloved of hearts, the teacher of minds, the trainer of souls, and the ruler of spirits.

Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, removed numerous ingrained habits from large obsessed communities with a little effort over a very short period of time, and in their place implanted and inculcated exalted qualities in such a way that they became inherent in their being.

You know that despite all the advanced techniques and methods, modern communities are unable to remove permanently so small a vice as cigarette smoking. However, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, removed numerous ingrained habits from large obsessed communities with a little effort over a very short period of time, and in their place implanted and inculcated exalted qualities in such a way that they became inherent in their being. To those who refuse to see the testimony of the blessed age of the Prophet, upon him be peace and blessings, we present as a challenge any part of today's civilized world. Let them go there with hundreds of philosophers, sociologists, psychologists and pedagogues and educators, and strive for a hundred years, I wonder whether they will be able to achieve in that period a hundredth part of what the Prophet Muhammad achieved in a year.

When the Prophet began preaching his Message, he had to face severe opposition, but he confronted all the opposition with a smile on his lips.

When the Prophet began preaching his Message, he had to face severe opposition, but he confronted all the opposition with a smile on his lips. Once, the leaders of the Quraysh warned Abu Talib, the Prophet's uncle, to persuade his nephew to abandon preaching his mission. The Prophet answered:

O uncle! Should they place the sun in my right hand and the moon in my left, so as to make me renounce this mission, I shall not do so. I will never give it up; either it will please God to make it triumph or I shall perish in the attempt.

The faith, perseverance and resolution, with which Prophet Muhammad carried his mission to ultimate success, is an eloquent proof of the supreme truth of his cause

On another occasion, a deputation of the leading Quraysh called on him and offered him all the worldly glory they could imagine in return for his abandoning his mission. They said:

- If you want to possess wealth, we will amass for you as much as you wish; if you aspire to win honor and power, we are prepared to swear allegiance to you as our overlord and king; if you have a fancy for beauty, you shall have the hand of the most beautiful maiden of your own choice.

The terms were extremely tempting for any ordinary mortal, but they had no significance in the eyes of the Prophet, upon him be peace and blessings. He responded:

- I want neither wealth nor power. God has commissioned me as a warner to humanity. I deliver His Message to you. Should you accept it, you shall have felicity in this life and eternal bliss in the life Hereafter. Should you reject the Word of God, surely God will decide between you and me.

The faith, perseverance and resolution, with which he carried his mission to ultimate success, is an eloquent proof of the supreme truth of his cause. Had there been the slightest doubt or uncertainty in his heart, he would never have been able to brave the storm that continued in all its fury for twenty-one long years.

None of the world leaders have been able to bring about among the members of their followers so strong a unity of belief, thought and ideal as that which the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, realized among the desert men of the seventh-century Arabia

Great leaders have appeared on the horizon of humanity. They have changed the course of history through either the states or empires they have established or the revolutions they have made. Nevertheless, almost none of them have been able to bring about among the members of their followers so strong a unity of belief, thought and ideal as that which the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, realized among the desert men of the seventh-century Arabia. Although Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, had never given any indication of political interest or activity for full forty years until Prophethood, he appeared all of a sudden on the stage of the world as such a great political reformer and statesman that, without the aid of press or of any modern tele-communicative means, he brought together the scattered inhabitants of a desert of twelve hundred thousand square miles-a people who were warlike, ignorant, unruly, uncultured, and plunged in tribal warfare-under one banner, one law, one religion, one culture, one civilization and one form of government.

Prophet Muhammad conquered minds and hearts and promised his followers nothing other than God's approval and Paradise

A leader must know men very well in order to urge them to the realization of a cause. In order to gain a following, most leaders make alluring promises to people, like power, wealth, position or a bright future.

However, the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, made no such promises to his followers. Nor did he resort to any force to realize his aim. He conquered minds and hearts and promised his followers only God's good pleasure and Paradise. His followers sacrificed themselves in his way willingly and preferred to live a poor life in return for gaining God's good pleasure and Paradise. Especially his own family lived as the poorest of his community. He always sought to prepare them, as well as his Companions, for the eternal peace and permanent bliss while himself setting for them a good example of that peace and bliss. His daughter Fatima, the most beloved to him among his family, once came to him with a necklace around her neck or a bracelet around her wrist. The Prophet said to her:

- Do you want people-inhabitants of the earth and the inhabitants of heavens-to say that the daughter of the Prophet is wearing a chain from Hell?

These words were enough for Fatima, for they were coming from the mouth of one whose throne was established in people's hearts and who had conquered their minds. Fatima

narrates the rest of the story as follows:

- I immediately sold the necklace, bought a slave and emancipated him, and then went to the Messenger of God. When I told him what I had done, he rejoiced. He opened his hands and thanked God, saying: *All thanks to God, Who protected (my daughter) Fatima from Hell.*

Despite all the most pitiless cruelties, Prophet Muhammad used to pray: 'O God! Forgive them and guide them to truth, for they do not know.' Through his limitless love, compassion, forgiveness and tolerance, he made extremely cruel, war-mongering people into the best community in human history.

Supposing you are a teacher at a school or a director in an institution. In order to bring up your students or the people under your command according to the ideal you pursue, you are determined to bear all hardships that may appear before you. Now, if they spit in your face when they are passing by you, if they put an animal abdomen over your head while you are in prostration before God, if they sometimes slap you in face, if they sometimes throw stones at you and scatter thorny plants along the roads you pass, if they ambush you in corners with daggers in their hands, if they mock you in front of others, if they slander your wife, if they kill your relatives and cut their bodies into pieces, if they attack you many times and injure you, and if they expel you from your native land, still can you bear all such cruelties and continue your way without the least hesitation? More than that, can you forgive them, pity them and pray to God for them, saying: *O God! Forgive them and guide them to truth, for they do not know.* If you are taken to a Paradise-like place and left free to choose between living there and going back to serve your cause amid hardships, do you choose to go back among the people to continue your mission?

Is it not the worst form of 'blindness' and ignorance to reject the Prophethood of that pride of humanity who, through his limitless love, compassion, forgiveness and tolerance, made extremely cruel, war-mongering people into the best community in human history?

In human history there has been no one as much loved as his followers from the first day up to now love the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings.

The Prophet, upon him be peace and blessings, sent a group of envoys to the Adal and al-Qarah tribes to teach them Islam. However, a group from the Hudhayl tribe attacked the envoys half-way and, killing some of them, submitted the remaining three to the Quraysh. Zayd ibn Dasina was among the envoys. Before the Qurayshi polytheists executed Zayd, Abu Sufyan, who had not yet embraced Islam, said to him:

- I adjure you by God, Zayd, don't you wish that Muhammad was with us now in your place so that we might cut off his head, and that you were with your family?

- 'By God', said Zayd, 'let alone wishing that Muhammad were here in my place so that I were with my family, I do not wish that even a thorn should hurt his feet in Madina.'

Abu Sufyan had to remark: 'I swear by God that I have never seen a man who was so loved as Muhammad's Companions loved him.'

In human history there has been no one as much loved, as his followers from the first day up to now love the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings.

Prophet Muhammad answered all of the questions asked him without faltering and he has not been contradicted ever since

The Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, had to answer innumerable questions put to him by both the desert men of Arabia and the Jews and Christians of his time, concerning not only religion but also many other subjects such as history, metaphysics, astronomy, medicine and so on. He answered all of them without faltering and he has not been contradicted ever since.

Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, brought into history such a law, a religion, a way of life, a code of worship, a way of prayer, a message, and faith that the like of them has never existed, nor will or could exist.

The Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings, brought into history such a law, a religion, a way of life, a code of worship, a way of prayer, a message, and faith that the like of them has never existed, nor will or could exist. For the law brought by that unlettered being is matchless in that it has administered one fifth of mankind for fourteen centuries, in a just and precise manner through its rules and injunctions. The religion of Islam, which originated in the Qur'an he received from God and his own sayings, precepts and example, is also peerless, for in each century it has been for hundreds of millions of people a guide and a competent authority or source for whatever matter is referred to it. It has also trained their minds, illumined and purified their hearts, trained and refined their souls, and perfected their spirits.

After the Companions, hundreds of thousands of saints and purified, meticulous scholars, thousands of scientists, and hundreds of thousands of literary geniuses, commanders and statesmen have been brought up in the footsteps of the Prophet Muhammad

After the Companions, who gave the lead to all mankind in all fields of life including the scientific, political, social, administrative and economic, hundreds of thousands of saints and purified, meticulous scholars such as Abu Hanifa, Shafi'i, Bayazid al-Bistami, 'Abd al-Qadir al-Jilani, Imam Ghazali, Imam Rabbani, Bediuzzaman Said Nursi and many others, and thousands of scientists like al-Biruni, al-Zahrawi, Ibn Sina (Avicenna), Ibn Haytham and others, and hundreds of thousands of literary geniuses, commanders and statesmen, and other stars of mankind, have all followed in the footsteps of the Prophet Muhammad, upon him be peace and blessings. Besides those persons, many intellectuals and statesmen of the West such as Lamartine, William Muir, Edward Gibbon, John Davenport, L. A. Sedillot, Goethe, P. Bayle, Stanley Lane-Poole, A. J. Arberry, Thomas Carlyle, Rosenthal, Elisee Reclus, Andrew Miller, Bismarck, Leopold Weis, Marmaduke Pickthall, Martin Lings and Roger

Garaudy have had to confess his greatness, even that he is the greatest of mankind, and some of them have embraced Islam. This is another proof of his Prophethood.

## Twelve Proofs that Muhammad is a True Prophet

By Shaykh `Abdul Rahman `Abdul Khaliq

My brothers and sisters everywhere! With this essay, I am not singling out the adherents of Islam - to which I ascribe - but rather I am writing this essay to every man and woman throughout the whole world.

I ask Allah that He facilitates that this essay reaches every ear, falls under the sight of every eye, and is understood by every heart...

Muhammad the son of `Abdullah is Allah's Prophet and the Final Messenger Sent by Allah to the Inhabitants of Earth.

My brothers and sisters everywhere! You should know that the Messenger, Muhammad the son of `Abdullah (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) is Allah's Messenger in reality and truth. The evidences that show his veracity are abundant. None but an infidel, who out of arrogance alone, could deny these signs.

Among these proofs:

1. Muhammad (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) was raised illiterate, unable to read or write, and remained like that till his death. Among all his people, he was known as being truthful and trustworthy. Before receiving revelation, he had no prior knowledge of Religion or any previously sent Message. He remained like that for his first forty years. Revelation then came to Muhammad with the Koran that we now have between our hands. This Koran mentioned most of the accounts found in the previous scriptures, telling us about these events in the greatest detail as if he witnessed them. These accounts came precisely as they were found in the Torah sent down to Moses and in the Gospel sent down to Jesus. Neither the Jews or Christians were able to belie him regarding anything that he said.

2. Muhammad (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) also foretold of everything that would occur to him and his community after him, pertaining to victory, the removal of the tyrannical kingdoms of Chosroes [the royal title for the Zoroastrian kings of Persia] and Caesar, and the establishment of the religion of Islam throughout the earth. These events occurred exactly as Muhammad foretold, as if he was reading the future from an open book.

3. Muhammad (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) also brought an Arabic Koran that is the peak of eloquence and clarity. The Koran challenged those eloquent and fluent Arabs of his time, who initially belied him, to bring forth a single chapter like the Koran. The eloquent Arabs of his day were unable to contest this Koran.

Indeed, till our day, none has ever dared to claim that he has been able to compose words that equal-or even approach-the order, grace, beauty, and splendor of this Glorious Koran.

4. The life history of this Noble Prophet was a perfect example of being upright, merciful, compassionate, truthful, brave, generous, distant from all evil character, and ascetic in all worldly matters, while striving solely for the reward of the Hereafter. Moreover, in all his actions and dealings, he was ever mindful and fearful of Allah.

5. Allah instilled great love for Muhammad (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) in the hearts of all who believed in and met him. This love reached such a degree that any of his companions would willingly sacrifice his (or her) self, mother or father for him.

Till today, those who believe in Muhammad honor and love him. Anyone of those who believe in him would ransom his own family and wealth to see him, even if but once.

6. All of history has not preserved the biography of any person in the manner it has preserved the life of Muhammad, who is the most influential human in history.

Nor has the entire earth known of anyone whom every morning and evening, and many times thereafter throughout the day, is thought of by those who believe in him. Upon remembering Muhammad, the believers in him will greet him and ask Allah to bless him. They do such with full hearts and true love for him.

7. Nor has there every been a man on earth whom is still followed in all his doings by those who believe in him.

Those who believe in Muhammad, sleep in the manner he slept; purify themselves (through ablution and ritual washing) in the manner he purified himself; and adhere to his practice in the way they eat, drink, and clothe themselves.

Indeed in all aspects of their lives, the believers in Muhammad adhere to the teachings he spread among them and the path that he traveled upon during his life.

During every generation, from his day till our time, the believers in this Noble Prophet have fully adhered to his teachings. With some, this has reached the degree that they desire to follow and adhere to the Prophet's way in his personal matters regarding which Allah has not sought of them to adhere to in worship. For example, some will only eat those specific foods or only wear those specific garments that the Messenger liked.

Let alone all that, all those who believe in Muhammad repeat those praises of Allah, special prayers, and invocations that he would say during each of his actions during day and night, like: what he would say when he greeted people, upon entering and leaving the house, entering and leaving the mosque, entering and leaving the bathroom, going to sleep and awaking from sleep, observing the new crescent, observing the new fruit on trees, eating, drinking, dressing, riding, traveling and returning from travel, etc.

Let alone all that, all those who believe in Muhammad fully perform-even to the minute detail-every act of worship-like prayer, fasting, charity, and pilgrimage-as this Noble Messenger (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) taught and as he himself performed.

All of this allows those who believe in him, to live their lives in all aspects with this Noble Messenger as their example, as if he was standing before them, for them to follow in all their doings.

8. There has never been nor will there ever be a man anywhere upon this earth who has received such love, respect, honor, and obedience in all matters-small and large alike-as has this Noble Prophet.

9. Since his day, in every region of the earth and during every period, this Noble Prophet has been followed by individuals from all races, colors and peoples. Many of those who followed him were previously Christians, Jews, pagans, idolaters, or without any religion. Among those who chose to follow him, were those who were known for their sound judgment, wisdom, reflection, and foresight. They chose to follow this Noble Prophet after they witnessed the signs of his truthfulness and the evidences of his miracles. They did not choose to follow Muhammad out of compulsion or coercion or because they had adopted the ways of their fathers and mothers.

Indeed many of the followers of this Prophet (may Allah's blessings peace be upon him), chose to follow him during the time when Islam was weak, when there were few Muslims, and when there was severe persecution of his followers on earth.

Most people who have followed this Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) have done so not to acquire some material benefits. Indeed many of his followers have suffered the greatest forms of harm and persecution as a result of following this Prophet. Despite all this harm and persecution, this did not turn them back from his religion.

My brethren! All of this clearly indicates to anyone possessing any sense, that this Prophet was truly and really Allah's messenger and that he was not just a man who claimed prophethood or spoke about Allah without knowledge.

10. With all this, Muhammad came with a great religion in its credal and legal make-up.

Muhammad described Allah with qualities of complete perfection, and at the same time in a manner that is free of ascribing to Him any imperfection. Neither the philosophers or the wise could ever describe Allah like such. Indeed it is impossible to imagine that any human mind could conceive of an existing being that possesses such complete ability, knowledge, and greatness; Who has subdued the creation; Who has encompassed everything in the universe, small or large; and Who possesses such perfect mercy.

Nor is it in the ability of any human being to place a perfect law based upon justice, equality, mercy and objectivity for all human activity on earth like the laws that Muhammad brought for all spheres of human activity - like buying and selling, marriage and divorce, renting, testimony, custody, and all other contracts that are necessary to uphold life and civilization on earth.

11. It is impossible that any person conceive wisdom,, morals, good manners, nobleness of characters as what this honorable Prophet (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) brought.

In a full and complete manner, Muhammad spread a teaching regarding character and manners toward one' parents, relatives, fiends, family, humanity, animals, plants and inanimate objects. It is impossible for the human mind alone to grasp all of that teaching or come with a similar teaching.

All of that unequivocally indicates that this Messenger did not bring an) of this religion from his own accord, but that it was rather a teaching and inspiration that he received from the One Who created the earth and the high heavens above and created this universe in its miraculous architecture and perfection.

12. The legal and credal make-up of the religion that the Messenger, Muhammad, (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him) brought resembles the engineering of the heavens and the earth. All of that indicates that He who created the heavens and the earth is the One Who sent down this great law and upright religion.

The degree of inimitability of the Divine law that was sent down upon Muhammad is to the same degree of inimitability of the Divine creation of the heavens and earth. For just as humanity cannot create this universe, in the same manner humanity cannot bring forth a law like Allah's law that He sent down upon His servant and messenger Muhammad (may Allah's blessings and peace be upon him).

#### Conclusion:

Many people knew him since he was born but he wasn't too famous yet. And his famous two nick names before becoming a prophet is "Al-sadek (the honest) , and Al-Amien (the trust)".

His house is still there in Saudi Arabia& his Grave in Saudi Arabia. No doubt he existed

for someone to leave huge remarks like these he is for sure existed. For those who read the Quran in its original language know that this book is a miracle and it's not a human language. Many nations during Muhammad time have heard of Him, and heard of his prophecy message. He was sending letters and messengers to many countries/trips calling them toward Islam. Some of his letters still exists. Physical evidence that I can think of his existence is his beard hair in turkey. Also he has a grave. There are plenty of historical records that indicate the prophet was a real person.In fact one of their sects only recognizes his descendants as persons of religious authority. Remember this is an illiterate man. And one of the proofs is that the moon was cut in half and science approves this. The people who didn't believe in Muhammad asked him to give them a

miracle and they will believe and they asked him to cut the moon in the half and Muhammad asked god to do what they want and god did it but some people still didn't believe that he was a prophet of God but instead called him a magician. So, yes Muhammad did exist & he performed miracles with the help of God just like Jesus . And there are many evidences that not only prove Muhammad existed but also prove he was a prophet of God . So, Moses, Jesus & Muhammad were all prophets of 1 God.

112. Surah Al-Ikhlâs or At-Tauhid (The Purity)



1. Say (O Muhammad ﷺ): "He is Allah, (the) One.
2. "Allah-us-Samad (The Self-Sufficient Master, Whom all creatures need, He neither eats nor drinks).
3. "He begets not, nor was He begotten;
4. "And there is none co-equal or comparable unto Him."

Conclusion of the entire book : He said: "I am indeed a servant of God: He hath given me revelation and made me a prophet; 019.031 "And He hath made me blessed wheresoever I be, and hath enjoined on me Prayer and Charity as long as I live; 019.032 "(He) hath made me kind to my mother, and not overbearing or miserable; 019.033 "So peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die, and the day that I shall be raised up to life (again)"! 019.034 Such (was) Jesus the son of Mary: (it is) a statement of truth, about which they (vainly) dispute. 019.035 It is not befitting to (the majesty of) God that He should beget a son. Glory be to Him! when He determines a matter, He only says to it, "Be", and it is. Al-Quran.

There is no God but Allah & Adam, Abraham, Noah, Moses, Jesus, Muhammad were all messengers & prophets of 1 God. The Quran is the final testament book of God's words only. The Quran proves God exists .Jesus was born without a father. There is no doubt in the evidences of history that Muhammad & Jesus existed & they were prophets of 1 true God Allah.

21. Had We sent down this Qur'an on a mountain, verily, thou wouldst have seen it humble itself and cleave asunder for fear of Allah. Such are the similitudes which We propound to men, that they may reflect. 22. Allah is He, than Whom there is no other god;- Who knows (all things) both secret and open; He, Most Gracious, Most Merciful. 23 .Allah is He, than Whom there is no other god;- the Sovereign, the Holy One, the Source of Peace (and Perfection), the Guardian of Faith, the Preserver of Safety, the Exalted in Might, the Irresistible, the Supreme: Glory to Allah! (High is He) above the partners they attribute to Him. 24 .He is Allah, the Creator, the Evolver, the Bestower of Forms (or Colours). To Him belong the Most Beautiful Names: whatever is in the heavens and on earth, doth declare His Praises and Glory: and He is the Exalted in Might, the Wise. {Al-Hashr- Al Quran}1. Praise be to Allah, to Whom belong all things in the heavens and on earth: to Him be Praise in the Hereafter: and He is Full of Wisdom, acquainted with all things. 2. He knows all that goes into the earth, and all that comes out thereof; all that comes down from the sky and all that ascends thereto and He is the Most Merciful, the Oft-Forgiving. 3 .The Unbelievers say, "Never to us will come the Hour": Say, "Nay! but most surely, by my Lord, it will come upon you;- by Him Who knows the unseen,- from Whom is not hidden the least little atom in the heavens or on earth: Nor is there anything less than that, or greater, but is in the Record Perspicuous:

4. That He may reward those who believe and work deeds of righteousness: for such is Forgiveness and a Sustenance Most Generous." 5 .But those who strive against Our Signs, to frustrate them,- for such will be a Penalty,- a Punishment most humiliating. 6 .And those to whom knowledge has come see that the (Revelation) sent down to thee from thy Lord - that is the Truth, and that it guides to the Path of the Exalted (in might), Worthy of all praise. (Saba 34 Al-Quran)

Surah 3. The Family Of 'Imran, The House Of 'Imran(Quran) 1. A. L. M. 2. Allah. There is no god but He,-the Living, the Self-Subsisting, Eternal. 3. It is He Who sent down to thee (step by step), in truth, the Book, confirming what went before it; and He sent down the Law (of Moses) and the Gospel (of Jesus) before this, as a guide to mankind, and He sent down the criterion (of judgment between right and wrong). 4. Then those who reject Faith in the Signs of Allah will suffer the severest penalty, and Allah is Exalted in Might, Lord of Retribution. 5. From Allah, verily nothing is hidden on earth or in the heavens. 6. He it is Who shapes you in the wombs as He pleases. There is no god but He, the Exalted in Might, the Wise. 7. He it is Who has sent down to thee the Book: In it are verses basic or fundamental (of established meaning); they are the foundation of the Book: others are allegorical. But those in whose hearts is perversity follow the part thereof that is allegorical, seeking discord, and searching for its hidden meanings, but no one knows its hidden meanings except Allah. And those who are firmly grounded in knowledge say: "We believe in the Book; the whole of it is from our Lord:" and none will grasp the Message except men of understanding. 8. "Our Lord!" (they say), "Let not our hearts deviate now after Thou hast guided us, but grant us mercy from Thine own Presence; for Thou art the Grantor of bounties without measure. 9. "Our Lord! Thou art He that will gather mankind Together against a day about which there is no doubt; for Allah never fails in His promise." 10. Those who reject Faith,- neither their possessions nor their (numerous) progeny will avail them aught against Allah. They are themselves but fuel for the Fire.

{Surah Baqarah Quran}284. To Allah belongeth all that is in the heavens and on earth. Whether ye show what is in your minds or conceal it, Allah Calleth you to account for it. He forgiveth whom He pleaseth, and punisheth whom He pleaseth,

for Allah hath power over all things. 285. The Messenger believeth in what hath been revealed to him from his Lord, as do the men of faith. Each one (of them) believeth in Allah, His angels, His books, and His apostles. "We make no distinction (they say) between one and another of His apostles." And they say: "We hear, and we obey: (We seek) Thy forgiveness, our Lord, and to Thee is the end of all journeys." 286. On no soul doth Allah Place a burden greater than it can bear. It gets every good that it earns, and it suffers every ill that it earns. (Pray:) "Our Lord! Condemn us not if we forget or fall into error; our Lord! Lay not on us a burden Like that which Thou didst lay on those before us; Our Lord! Lay not on us a burden greater than we have strength to bear. Blot out our sins, and grant us forgiveness. Have mercy on us. Thou art our Protector; Help us against those who stand against faith."

**(ONLY GOD IS ALL KNOWN & SATAN,HUMANS,ANGELS,JINNS ARE NOT ALL KNOWN.THE QURAN'S INFORMATION IS ACCURATE BECAUSE IT'S THE FINAL, LAST BOOK OF THE TRUE1GOD LORD ALLAH.)**

Allah (swt) Says : "Invite to the Way of your Lord (i.e. Islam) with wisdom (i.e. with the Divine Revelation and the Qur'an) and fair preaching, and argue with them in a way that is better. Truly, your Lord knows best who has gone astray from His Path, and He is the Best Aware of those who are guided." [Quran 16:125]

Allah also says ""Who is better in speech than one who calls to Allah, works righteousness, and says: I am of those who bow in submission?" (Quran 41:33)

Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) said:"If Allah guides a person through you, it is better for you than all that is on the earth." (Bukhari No. 2783 & Muslim No. 2406).Convey (my teachings) to the people even if it were a single sentence" (Sahih Bukhari, Vol.4, Hadith 667)

"Therefore listen not to the Unbelievers, but strive against them with the utmost strenuousness, with the (Qur'an)". 25.52 Quran

Yet do they worship, besides Allah, things that can neither profit them nor harm them: and the disbeliever is a helper (of Evil), against his own Lord! 25.55 Quran And I have sent you only as a giver of good news and as a warner. 25.56 Say: "No reward do I ask of you for it but this: that each one who will may take a (straight) Path to his Allah." 25.57 Al-Quran

"Verily, those who conceal the clear proofs, evidences and the guidance, which We have sent down, after We have made it clear for the people in the Book, they are the ones cursed by Allah and cursed by the cursers."(Quran, al-Baqarah:

159) Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) said: "For Allah to guide one man through you is better for you than all that the sun has shined over".

The Prophet (PBUH) has said: "Whoever guides [another] to a good deed will get a reward similar to the one who performs it."

[Saheeh Muslim]